

# A Guide to Contemporary College English

## 现代大学英语全程辅导

### 精读 6

王黛青

主 编:陈 莺

副主编:马艳红 李 静 张绚丽

编 委:王 蕾 林雪皎 邱 畅

陈 洁 刘 辉

辽宁师范大学出版社

· 大连 ·

©陈 莺 2006

图书在版编目(CIP)数据

现代大学英语(精读)全程辅导 6. /陈莺主编. 修订本—大连:  
辽宁师范大学出版社, 2006. 6  
ISBN 7-81103-105-1

I. 现... II. 陈... III. 英语—高等学校—教学参考资料  
IV. H31

中国版本图书馆 CIP 数据核字(2006)第 042702 号

版权所有,侵权必究。

举报电话:0411—84206854 84258695

---

出 版 人: 程培杰  
责任编辑: 徐华东 朱宇光  
封面设计: 张 博  
版式设计: 张 环  
责任校对: 文 清

---

出 版 者: 辽宁师范大学出版社  
地 址: 大连市黄河路 850 号  
邮 编: 116029  
电 话: 0411—84206854  
印 刷 厂: 大连海事大学印刷厂  
发 行 者: 辽宁师范大学出版社

---

幅面尺寸: 178mm×230mm  
印 张: 14  
字 数: 360 千字

---

出版时间: 2006 年 12 月修订版  
印刷时间: 2006 年 12 月第 3 次印刷  
印 数: 10001—16000 册  
定 价: 18.90 元

---

## 前言

《现代大学英语(精读)》(外语教学与研究出版社)是由北京外国语大学英语系编写的一套供大学英语专业学生使用的精读教材。在使用过程中,广大师生普遍反映起点高、难度大。为了帮助广大师生及英语自学者更好地学习和理解这套教材,我们组织了6所高校具有丰富教学经验的教师精心编写了这套《现代大学英语(精读)全程辅导》(1~6册)。

本套书的编写是在透彻理解和准确把握国家教育部最新颁布的《高校英语专业教学大纲》和《高校英语专业四、八级考试大纲》精神的基础上进行的,全书力求全方位、多角度、大容量地诠释《现代大学英语》教材的词汇、句型、课文、练习等内容。本套书讲解细致、透彻、准确,设计科学、合理,使用方便,助考得力。

本套辅导与教材同步,每课包括以下五部分:

### 一、课文导读

(一) 内容梗概:从全局的角度简洁概述 Text A 的课文大意,剖析作者的观点和写作目的,以帮助学生学习和理解课文。

(二) 背景知识:介绍与课文相关的典型背景知识,帮助学生透过语言材料了解与课文有关的人物、事件、地理、文化、政治、社会等知识,拓展知识面。

### 二、词汇与短语

(一) 词汇:注有音标、词性、英汉释义、重要词语的同义词、反义词、派生词,以帮助学生更好地理解词义。对于重要词汇列出其常用的词义,并在每个义项后配以例句及译文。

(二) 短语:对课文中出现的重要短语给以英汉释义及例句,以帮助学生加深对短语要点的理解。

### 三、课文注释

对课文中出现的语言要点加以英汉解释;对典型语言点加以归纳总结;对语言理论加以简洁、实效的介绍;对难句加以结构分析,解决对语言背景、修辞手段、写作意图、写作风格等理解的问题。

### 四、课文译文

给出课文的参考译文,便于学生理解文章、认清结构、明确主题,从中学到语言知识,提高理解与运用的能力。

## 五、练习答案及详解

对阅读、理解、词汇、语法等进行准确的详解、总结及示例,帮助学生准确掌握知识,突破难点。

在本套书的编写中,我们得到了有关专家的热情指导和大力帮助,美国专家 Bob. M. Livingston 审阅了书中的英文部分,在此我们深表谢意。

我们相信,本套书对学生准确把握教材内容,提高自身英语素养并顺利通过英语专业四、六级考试会大有裨益,希望本套书能成为广大师生的良师益友,也希望广大读者提出宝贵的意见和建议。

编者  
2004. 12

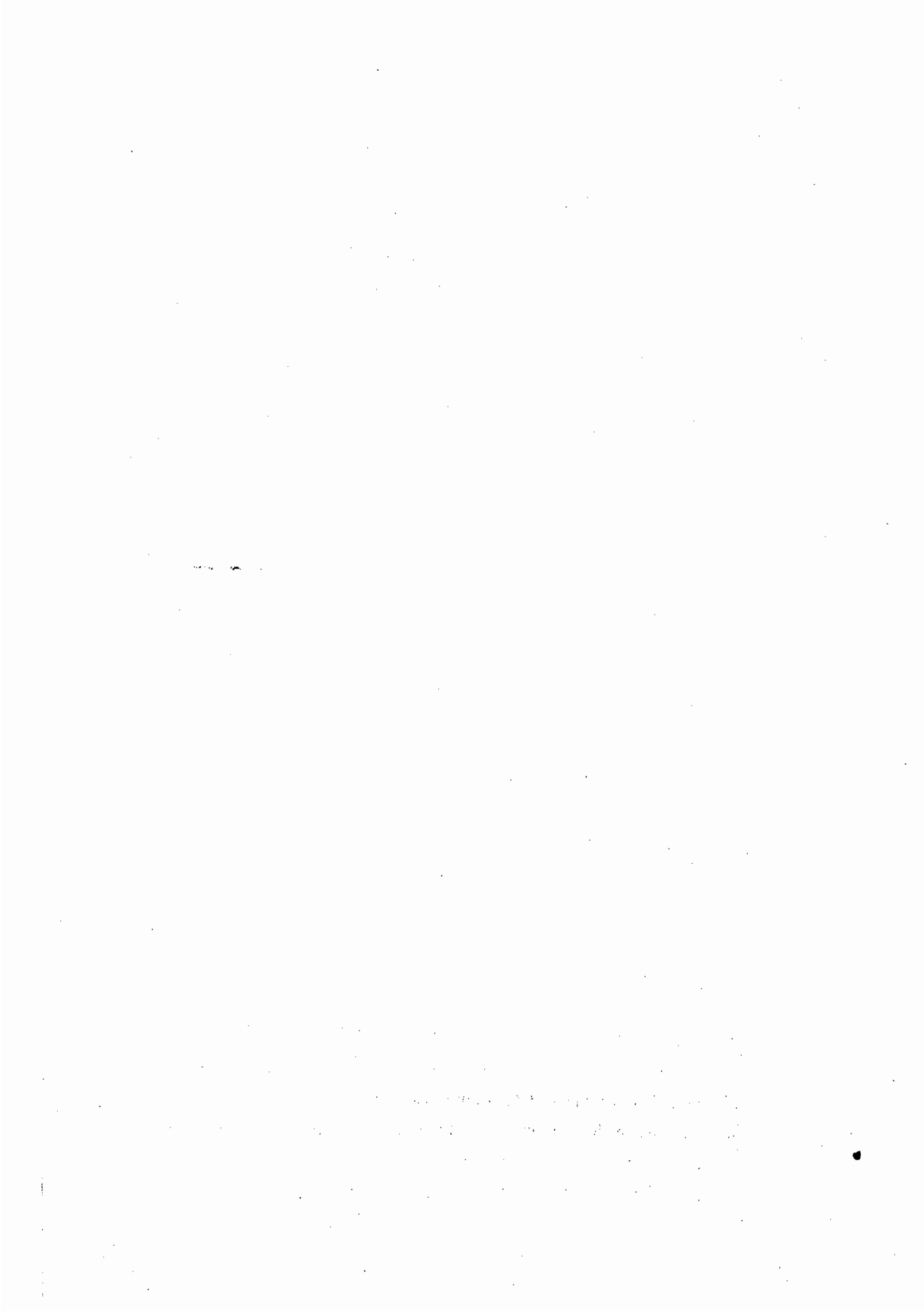
15 18 10

# Contents

<b>Lesson One</b> .....	1
<b>How to Get the Poor off Our Conscience</b> .....	1
一、课文导读 .....	1
二、词汇与短语 .....	2
三、课文注释 .....	7
四、课文译文 .....	12
五、练习答案及详解 .....	15
<b>Lesson Two</b> .....	19
<b>The Woods Were Tossing with Jewels</b> .....	19
一、课文导读 .....	19
二、词汇与短语 .....	20
三、课文注释 .....	24
四、课文译文 .....	29
五、练习答案及详解 .....	32
<b>Lesson Three</b> .....	36
<b>At War with the Planet</b> .....	36
一、课文导读 .....	36
二、词汇与短语 .....	37
三、课文注释 .....	41
四、课文译文 .....	44
五、练习答案及详解 .....	47
<b>Lesson Four</b> .....	50
<b>Nettles</b> .....	50
一、课文导读 .....	50
二、词汇与短语 .....	51
三、课文注释 .....	55
四、课文译文 .....	59
五、练习答案及详解 .....	65
<b>Lesson Five</b> .....	69
<b>The One Against the Many</b> .....	69
一、课文导读 .....	69

二、词汇与短语 .....	69
三、课文注释 .....	73
四、课文译文 .....	76
五、练习答案及详解 .....	79
<b>Lesson Six</b> .....	82
<b>Death of a Pig</b> .....	82
一、课文导读 .....	82
二、词汇与短语 .....	83
三、课文注释 .....	88
四、课文译文 .....	92
五、练习答案及详解 .....	97
<b>Lesson Seven</b> .....	100
<b>Inaugural Address</b> .....	100
一、课文导读 .....	100
二、词汇与短语 .....	101
三、课文注释 .....	104
四、课文译文 .....	107
五、练习答案与详解 .....	109
<b>Lesson Eight</b> .....	113
<b>A Rose for Emily</b> .....	113
一、课文导读 .....	113
二、词汇与短语 .....	114
三、课文注释 .....	118
四、课文译文 .....	124
五、练习答案及详解 .....	129
<b>Lesson Nine</b> .....	136
<b>The Bluest Eye (Excerpts)</b> .....	136
一、课文导读 .....	136
二、词汇与短语 .....	137
三、课文注释 .....	140
四、课文译文 .....	143
五、练习答案及详解 .....	147
<b>Lesson Ten</b> .....	150
<b>Notes on the English Character</b> .....	150
一、课文导读 .....	150
二、词汇与短语 .....	151

三、课文注释 .....	151
四、课文译文 .....	157
五、练习答案及详解 .....	162
<b>Lesson Eleven</b> .....	165
<b>Beauty</b> .....	165
一、课文导读 .....	165
二、词汇与短语 .....	166
三、课文注释 .....	170
四、课文译文 .....	172
五、练习答案及详解 .....	177
<b>Lesson Twelve</b> .....	181
<b>The Hot Gates</b> .....	181
一、课文导读 .....	181
二、词汇与短语 .....	182
三、课文注释 .....	185
四、课文译文 .....	187
五、练习答案及详解 .....	191
<b>Optional Reading</b> .....	194
<b>Lesson One</b> .....	194
<b>On Going Home</b> .....	194
一、课文译文 .....	194
二、同步测试 .....	195
<b>Lesson Two</b> .....	197
<b>Stranger in the Village</b> .....	197
一、课文译文 .....	197
二、同步测试 .....	200
<b>Lesson Three</b> .....	202
<b>A Visit to Camelot</b> .....	202
一、课文译文 .....	202
二、同步测试 .....	208
<b>Lesson Four</b> .....	209
<b>The Pharmageddon Riddle: Did Monsanto just want</b> <b>more profits, or did it want to save the world?</b> .....	209
一、课文译文 .....	209
二、同步测试 .....	213





# Lesson One

## How to Get the Poor off Our Conscience



### 一、课文导读

#### (一) 内容梗概

约翰·肯尼斯·高伯瑞是美国哈佛大学经济学保罗·萨缪尔森荣誉教授。他以凯恩斯主义和后凯恩斯主义经济学家及写作和积极参与政治而闻名世界。1958年发表《富裕社会》。

本文标题似乎在暗示高伯瑞正试图与哲学家和经济学家们寻找一种理论,借助它来使那些上层社会的人不为穷人的存在而内疚。如果我们不了解他善于运用反讽的写作风格,这一印象将会一直持续到文章结尾。

作者在这篇文章中提到历史上5种如何不为穷人的存在而内疚的方案,并暗示了对它们的批判。然后他集中于5种最新的解决方案。然而,对于里根的经济政策及“星球大战计划”高伯瑞却并未持否定观点。在文章最后高伯瑞警告说:对文明的不满及其所带来的结果并不来自那些满足的人,使穷人满意才是未来事业的关键。他的警告在当今看来既中肯又有洞察力,对布什的统治也至关重要。

高伯瑞的文章以独具洞察力和说服力而著称,这在文中很好地体现出来。他运用反讽技巧娴熟,从讽刺到辛辣的挖苦,很值得我们借鉴学习。

#### (二) 背景知识

##### 1. John Kenneth Galbraith 制度学派 Institutional

Born in Canada but later naturalized as a United States citizen, John Kenneth Galbraith wrote about emerging trends in the economy of the United States. His eloquent books sparked public interest in economic issues. Galbraith's 1958 work entitled *The Affluent Society* argued that the expanding United States economy needed more public services such as highways and educational institutions. The economy, according to Galbraith, had finally reached a point at which less time and energy had to be spent on consumer goods.

##### 2. Adam Smith

Adam Smith (1723—1790) was a Scottish political economist and philosopher. He was the son of the comptroller of the customs at Kirkcaldy, Fife, Scotland. In his

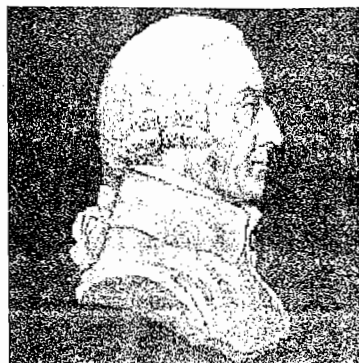


John Kenneth Galbraith

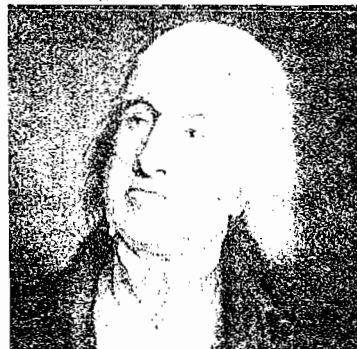
famous treatise, *The Wealth of Nations*, Adam Smith argued that private competition free from regulation produces and distributes wealth better than government-regulated markets. Since 1776, when Smith produced his work, his argument has been used to justify capitalism and discourage government intervention in trade and exchange. Smith believed that private businesses seeking their own interests organize the economy most efficiently, "as if by an invisible hand."

### 3. Jeremy Bentham

In the 18th century British philosopher Jeremy Bentham (1748—1832) founded the ethical, legal, and political doctrine of *utilitarianism*, which states that correct actions are those that result in the greatest happiness for the greatest number of people. For Bentham, happiness is precisely quantifiable and reducible to units of pleasure, less units of pain. Bentham was strongly opposed to then-dominant theories of *natural rights*, in which human beings are believed to possess certain inherent and unalterable social requirements.



Adam Smith



Jeremy Bentham



## 二、词汇与短语

### (一) 词汇

#### ① admirable /'ædmərəbl/ adj.

deserving or causing admiration; excellent 令人钦佩的; 极好的

—an admirable performance 优美的表演

—His handling of the situation was admirable. 他对这情况的处理令人钦佩。

#### ② ailment /'eilmənt/ n.

illness, esp. a slight one 疾病

—He's prone to minor ailments. 他动不动就生点小病。

#### ③ allegation /æli'geɪʃən/ n.

act of alleging, statement, esp. one made without proof 宣称; 声称; 供述; 辩解

—You have made serious allegations, but can you substantiate them? 你已作郑重的供述, 但你能证实吗?

/səb'stænsieɪt/ (v) 证实, 证明。

#### ④ amelioration /ə'mi:liə'reɪʃən/ n.

improvement 改善; 改良; 改进

—This plan really needs some amelioration. 这个计划真需要一些改进。

#### ⑤ bureaucracy /bjʊə'roʊkrəsi/ n.

1) system of government through departments managed by State officials, not by elected representatives 官僚制度; 官僚体制

2) country having such a system 实行官僚制度的国家

3) officials appointed to manage such a system, as a group 官僚(总称)

⑥ case /keɪs/ *n.*

1) instance or example of the occurrence of sth. 事例; 实例; 情形

2) question to be decided in a court of law; lawsuit 诉讼案

—When does your case come before the court? 你的案子什么时候开庭审讯?

⑦ celebrated /ˈselɪbreɪtɪd/ *adj.*

(for sth.) famous 著名的; 驰名的

—Burgundy is celebrated for its fine wines. 勃艮第以盛产美酒而驰名。

⑧ compassion /kəmˈpæʃən/ *n.*

pity for the sufferings of others, making one want to help them 同情; 怜悯 【同义】 mercy

【反义】 cruelty; inference /ˈɪnf(ə)ˈrɛns/ *n.* 推断, 推论.

—a girl of great compassion 极富同情心的女子

⑨ condemnation /ˌkɒndemˈneɪʃən/ *n.*

instance of being condemned 谴责; 判罪; 注定

⑩ conscience /ˈkɒnʃəns/ *n.*

[C, U] person's awareness of right and wrong with regard to his own thoughts and actions 良心; 是非感

—After she had committed the crime, her conscience was troubled, i. e. she felt very guilty. 她犯罪后, 良心上感到很不安。

⑪ convenience /kənˈviːniəns/ *n.*

1) [U] quality of being convenient or suitable; freedom from trouble or difficulty 方便; 便利; 适宜

2) [C] arrangement, appliance or device that is useful, helpful or suitable 有用、有益或适宜的安排、用具或设施

⑫ design /dɪˈzaɪn/ *n.*

1) [U, C] purpose; intention 目的; 打算; 意向

—We don't know if it was done by accident or by design, i. e. deliberately. 我们不知道那是偶然的还是故意的。

2) [C] drawing or outline from which sth. may be made 图样; 设计图

⑬ diligent /ˈdɪlɪdʒənt/ *adj.*

showing care and effort (in what one does); hard-working 认真刻苦的; 勤勉的; 勤奋的

⑭ diminish /dɪˈmɪnɪʃ/ *v.*

1) (to cause sth.) to become smaller or less; to decrease 变小; 降低

—His strength has diminished over the years. 经过许多年, 他的体力不如从前了。

2) to make (sb. /sth.) seem less important than it really is; to devalue 减低(某人/某物)的重要性; 贬低

—The opposition are trying to diminish our achievements. 反对党企图贬低我们的成就。

⑮ discrimination /dɪˌskrɪmɪˈneɪʃən/ *n.*

1) good judgement and perception 辨别力; 识别力

—to show discrimination in one's choice of friends, clothes, hobbies, etc. 在选择交友对象、服装、消遣形式等方面有鉴别力

2) treating a person or group differently (usu. worse) than others 歧视/偏袒(某人)

—This is a clear case of discrimination (against foreign imports). 这显然是(对进口货的)排斥。

16 elimination /iˌlɪmɪˈneɪʃən/ n.

removal 除去; 消灭

—the elimination of slang words from an essay 从一篇文章中删除的俚语

17 enterprise /ˈentəpraɪz/ n.

1) [C] project or undertaking; esp. one that is difficult or needs courage 事业; 计划(尤指困难的或需要勇气的) 【同义】 business; adventure

2) [U] courage and willingness to be involved in such projects 事业心; 进取心; 勇气

—He got the job because he showed the spirit of enterprise. 他因为表现出进取精神, 所以得到了这份工作。

【派生】 enterprising *adj.* 有企业心的; 有创业精神的

18 envy /ˈenvi/ n.

1) feeling of discontent caused by sb. else's good fortune or success, esp. when one wishes this for oneself 忌妒; 羡慕

2) thing that causes sb. to feel envious 令人忌妒或羡慕的事物

—Her many talents were the envy of all her friends. 她多才多艺, 所有的朋友都很羡慕她。

19 feckless /ˈfekləs/ *adj.*

irresponsible; inefficient 不负责任的; 无能力的 【同义】 futile

—He is feckless for this matter. 他对此事不负责任。

20 fecundity /fɪˈkʌndəti/ n.

fertility; productiveness 丰饶; 多产

—This field (with fecundity) will be given out in this autumn. 今秋这块多产的土地就要交出去了。

21 formula /ˈfɒmjulə/ n.

1) set of statements or plans that can be agreed on by two or more persons or groups (双方或各方同意的) 方案, 计划

—Managers and workers are still working out a peace formula. 劳资双方仍在商谈制订和解方案。

2) method, plan, or set of principles worked out to achieve a desired result (为达到预期目的而制订的) 方法, 计划, 原则

—There is no sure formula for success. 成功并无一定之规。

22 fragrance /ˈfreɪgrəns/ n.

pleasant or sweet smell; scent or perfume 好闻的或芳香的气味; 香; 香料

—Lavender has a delicate fragrance. 薰衣草有淡淡的香味。

23 gain /ɡeɪn/ n.

1) [U] increase in wealth; profit; advantage 财富的增加; 利润; 利益 【同义】 benefit; earning  
【反义】 loss

—One man's loss is another man's gain. 一人之失即是他人之得。

2) [C] increase in amount or power; improvement 数量或力量的增加; 增进

—Heavy gains were recorded on the Stock Exchange today. 今日股票价格大幅上升。

【派生】 gainful *adj.* 有报酬的; 赚钱的

24 handicap /ˈhændɪkæp/ n.

1) thing that makes progress or success difficult 不利的因素; 障碍

2) physical or mental disability 生理或智力上的缺陷; 残疾; 智力低下

—Deafness can be a serious handicap. 耳聋有时算是严重的缺陷。

25 incompetent /ɪn'kɒmpɪtənt/ *adj.*

not having or showing the necessary skills to do sth. successfully 不胜任的; 不称职的

【同义】inadequate 【反义】competent

—I suppose my application has been lost by some incompetent bureaucrat. 我估计我的申请书不知道让哪个无能的官僚给弄丢了。

26 inherit /ɪn'hɛrɪt/ *v.*

1) to receive (property, a title, etc.) as a result of the death of the previous owner 继承(财产、头衔等)

—She inherited a little money from her grandfather. 她从祖父那儿继承了一小笔财产。

2) to derive (qualities, etc.) from an ancestor 因遗传而获(特性等)

—She inherited her mother's good looks and her father's bad temper. 她生来就有母亲的美貌和父亲的坏脾气。

27 intellectual /ɪntə'lektʃuəl/ *adj.*

1) of the intellect 智力的; 理智的

—the intellectual faculties 智能

2) of, interested in or able to deal with things of the mind (e. g. the arts, ideas for their own sake) rather than practical matters 善思考的; 能运用聪明才智的

28 override /ˌəʊvə'raɪd/ *v.*

1) to disregard or set aside (sb.'s opinions, etc.) 不顾, 不理睬(某人意见等)

—They overrode my protest and continued with the meeting. 他们不顾我的抗议仍继续开会。

2) to be more important than (sth.) 比(某事物)更重要

—Considerations of safety override all other concerns. 对安全的考虑重于一切。

29 perilous /'perələs/ *adj.*

full of risk; dangerous 多险的; 危险的

—a perilous journey across the mountains 横越重山的艰险征途

30 propose /prə'pəʊz/ *v.*

to offer or put forward (sth.) for consideration; to suggest 提议; 建议(某事物); 意欲

31 republic /rɪ'pʌblɪk/ *n.*

(country with a) system of government in which supreme power is held not by a monarch but by the (elected representatives of the) people, with an elected President. 共和国; 共和政体

—a constitutional republic, e. g. the US, Canada 立宪共和国(如美国、加拿大)

32 seduce /sɪ'dju:s/ *v.*

1) to tempt (esp. sb. younger or less experienced) to have sexual intercourse 引诱(尤指年轻或无经验的人)性交 【同义】entice; lure

2) to persuade sb. to do sth. wrong, or sth. he would not normally do, esp. by offering sth. desirable as a reward, etc. 诱骗; 唆使

【派生】seducer *n.* 引诱者; 好色者

33 subsidize /'sʌbsɪdaɪz/ *v.*

to give a subsidy to (sth./sb.) 给(某物/某人)津贴或补贴; 资助或补助

34 substantial /səb'stæʃəl/ *adj.*

1) large in amount; considerable 数目大的; 可观的 【同义】affluent

—Her contribution to the discussion was substantial. 她在讨论中做了很多工作。

2) solidly or strongly built or made 坚固的; 结实的 【同义】solid; firm

35 succor /'sʌkə/

1) *n.* help given in time of need 及时的援助; 需要时的救助

—He always gives her succor, no matter how busy he is. 无论多忙, 他都会给她及时的援助。

2) *v.* to give help to (sb. in danger or difficulty) 援助(处于危险和困境中的人)

—We should succor him, though he is not our team member. 我们应该帮助他, 尽管他不是我们的队员。

36 suspend /sə'spend/ *v.*

1) to hang sth. up 悬挂或吊起某物

2) to prevent (sth.) from being in effect for a time; to stop (sth.) temporarily 暂不实行(某事物); 使(某事物)暂停 【同义】delay

/ɪn'defɪnɪtli/ (adv) 无限制地, 不明确地

—Rail services are suspended indefinitely because of the strike. 铁路运输因罢工而无限期停运。

37 tranquility /træŋ'kwɪlɪti/ *n.*

quietness 宁静

—the tranquility in the country 乡村的宁静

38 undertake /ˌʌndə'teɪk/ *v.*

1) to make oneself responsible for (sth.) 承担(某事物); 负起(某事物)的责任

—She undertook the organization of the whole scheme. 她负责整个计划的组织工作。

2) to agree or promise to do sth. 同意或答应做某事

—He undertook to finish the job by Friday. 他答应在星期五以前完成那工作。

39 undue /ʌn'dju:/ *adj.*

more than is right or proper; excessive 不当的; 过分的; 过度的

(二) 短语

① to take on

1) to assume; to put on (a quality, appearance) 装出; 表现(某种性质、外表)

—The chameleon can take on the colors of its background. 变色龙可现出与其背景相同的颜色。

2) to undertake; to charge oneself with 从事; 担任; 担当

—You've taken on too much. 你承担的工作太多了。

② to idle away

to spend in an idle manner 虚度

—Don't idle away your time. 不要虚度光阴。

③ to compare with

to be compared with; to bear comparison with 与...比较; 相提并论

—He cannot compare with Shakespeare as a writer of tragedies. 作为一个悲剧作家, 他无法与莎士比亚相提并论。

④ to be consistent with

to be in agreement with 与...一致; 符合

—What you say now is not consistent with what you said last week. 你现在所说的话与你上星期所说的话不相符合。

→ /rɪˈplɪt/(adj) 充足的, 填满的, 满足的.

⑥ to be replete with

to be filled with; to be full of 装满; 充满; 充盈

—a home replete with every modern convenience 有各种现代设备的家庭

⑦ as regards

regarding 关于

—as regards the second point in your letter 关于你信中的第二点

⑧ on behalf of

for, in the interest of, on account of; as the representative of 为了...的缘故; 为了...的利益; 代表

—on behalf of my colleagues and myself 兹代表我的同事和我自己

⑨ to interfere with

to come into opposition; to hinder or prevent 妨碍; 干扰

—She never allows her personal feelings to interfere with her work. 她从不让她的个人感情妨碍工作。

⑩ to resort to

to make use of sth. for help or to gain one's purpose, etc. 求助; 凭借; 诉诸

—If other means fail, we shall resort to force. 如果其他手段均失败, 我们将诉诸武力。

目的, 意图, 决心. (v) 打算 (v2), 试图 (v2)



三、课文注释

on purpose 有意地  
to no purpose 无结果地, 无成效地.  
to the purpose 有关的, 有用的(地)

① I would like to reflect on one of the oldest of human exercises... (Para 1)

I want to think seriously about one of the oldest practices of human beings...

to reflect on/upon: to consider; to think on; to bring discredit upon

② ... we have undertaken to get the poor off our conscience. (Para 1)

... we have managed to feel comfortable when we see the existence of the poor around us.

conscience: a sense of right and wrong, with an urge to do right 良心; 本性

③ Plutarch was led to say: "An imbalance between the rich and poor is the oldest and most fatal ailment of republics." (Para 2)

The gap between the rich and the poor has caused many fatal problems all the time for the society, and no way has found to resolve them.

④ And the problems that arise from the continuing coexistence of affluence and poverty—and particularly the process by which good fortune is justified in the presence of the ill fortune of others—have been an intellectual preoccupation for centuries. (Para 2)

For centuries those with high intellect have been searching for explanations to justify the coexistence of the rich and the poor.

intellectual: appealing to the intellect 智力的; 需要思考的

intellectual preoccupation: 有思想有学问的人孜孜不倦地思考探索的问题

⑤ ... the poor suffer in this world but are wonderfully rewarded in the next. (Para 3)

... the poor suffer the poverty without complaints in this world would live a wonderful life in the next.

in the next: after they die; when they go to the next world

⑥ Their poverty is a temporary misfortune. If they are poor and also meek, they eventually will inherit the

earth. (Para 3)

Though in this world the poor suffer a poor life, they should keep patient and mild so that they will become rich and the leader of the world in the next.

⑦ **Jeremy Bentham, a near contemporary of Adam Smith, came up with the formula. . . (Para 4)**

Jeremy Bentham, with Adam Smith was born in the same century, who raised a plan. . .

⑧ **Virtue is, indeed must be, self-centered. (Para 4)**

By right action, we mean it must help promote personal interest.

⑨ **... influential in no slight degree to this day. . . (Para 5)**

(Its) influence has not diminished so far. / (Its) influence continues today to a remarkable degree.

⑩ **This is associated with the names of David Ricardo, a stockbroker, and Thomas Robert Malthus, a divine. (Para 5)**

This formula is proposed by two famous people, David Ricardo and Thomas Robert Malthus, with such different background yet with such similarity of thing.

✱ 这里说这个方案是由两个背景完全不同的人提出来的,而观点却又极为相似,不同的是运用的领域有所不同,这本身就是一个讽刺。

⑪ **The essentials are familiar: The poverty of the poor was the fault of the poor. And it was so because it was a product of their excessive fecundity. . . (Para 5)**

They have the same meaning: the poverty of the poor was caused by their having too many children. . .

⑫ **Their grievously uncontrolled lust caused them to breed up to the full limits of the available subsistence. (Para 5)**

Because the poor couldn't control their lust of sex, they produced too many children to the world, which made the earth nearly have no ability to bear them.

⑬ **Poverty being caused in the bed meant that the rich were not responsible for either its creation or its amelioration. (Para 6)**

Since poverty was caused by overproduction of children, the rich were not to blame for the existence of poverty so they should not be asked to undertake the task of solving the problem.

to be responsible for: to be the cause or source of

⑭ **However, Malthus was himself not without a certain feeling of responsibility: He urged that the marriage ceremony contain a warning against undue and irresponsible sexual intercourse—a warning, it is fair to say, that has not been accepted as a fully effective method of birth control. (Para 6)**

Malthus meant that sexual intercourse should not be conducted out of lust, without thinking of consequences. He urged that the marriage ceremony should contain a warning to people not to have excessive sexual intercourse and too many children. Since this idea has been accepted by the people, it was only a warning.

很显然,尽管马尔萨斯的设想很好,但是并不会被人们所接受,所以这里也具有讽刺意义。

⑮ **Couples in love should repair to R. H. Macy's, not their bedrooms. (Para 6)**

Couples in new marriage should go to market to spend their first night, seeing how much their income can get, and they would not produce more children to be too poor.

to repair to: to go to (a place, esp. go in large numbers to)

在这句中,作者的讽刺意味更浓,矛头暗指资本主义非人道的自私行径。

⑯ **Malthus, it must be said, was at least as relevant. (Para 6)**



In some points, what Malthus said was relevant to the theme.

这完全是一句反语,因为马尔萨斯的建议根本不被接受也不符合实际,作者却说“马尔萨斯至少沾点边”,也对其他人的建议进行了绝妙的讽刺。

⑮ **The elimination of the poor is nature's way of improving the race. (Para 7)**

Nature makes the human race better by weeding out the poor.

⑯ **The weak and unfortunate being extruded, the quality of the human family is thus strengthened. (Para 7)**

Because the poor were extruded, the quality of the rich family is strengthened.

⑰ **The American Beauty Rose can be produced in the splendor and fragrance which bring cheer to its beholder only by sacrificing the early buds which grow up around it. And so is it in economic life. It is merely the working out of a law of nature and a law of God. (Para 8)**

Other countries have been weakened; America has a good chance to become a strongest capitalistic country, which owns wealth and splendor. This course happens in the same way in the economic life. It is only the result or effect of the law of the survival of the fittest applied to nature or to human society.

这里 rose 是一种比喻,作者用玫瑰花和花蕾来比喻当时并存的多个资本主义大国,其实此处的 splendor and fragrance 也暗含讽刺。

to have a chance to do/of doing: to happen to do

⑱ **It declined in popularity, and references to it acquired a condemnatory tone. (Para 9)**

People began to reject Social Darwinism because it seemed to glorify brutal force and oppose treasured values of sympathy, love and friendship. There, when it was mentioned, it was usually the target of criticism.

in popularity: general; universal

⑲ **We passed on to the more amorphous denial of poverty associated with Calvin Coolidge and Herbert Hoover.**

They held that the public assistance to the poor interfered with the effective operation of the economic system—that such assistance was inconsistent with the economic design that had come to serve most people very well. (Para 9)

Calvin Coolidge and Herbert Hoover had helped us to oppose public assistance to the poor because they held that such assistance was incompatible with the function and operation of the current laissez-faire economic system. Public assistance meant government intervention and such intervention would hinder or even damage the efficient working of the economic system.

⑳ **Roosevelt and the presidents who followed him accepted a substantial measure of responsibility for the old through Social Security, for the unemployment through unemployment insurance, for the unemployable and the handicapped through direct relief, and for the sick through Medicare and Medicaid. (Para 10)**

Roosevelt, with other presidents after him, took a series of measure to realize the responsibility of the government, including unemployment assurance and direct relief Medicare and Medicaid to help the unemployable, the handicapped and the sick.

substantial measure of responsibility: 在很大程度上负有责任

unemployment insurance: 失业保险

the unemployable and the handicapped: 无法就业者和残疾人

㉑ **In recent years, however, it has become clear that the search for a way of getting the poor off our conscience was not at the end; it was only suspended ... It has again become a major philosophical,**

literary, and rhetorical preoccupation, and an economically not unrewarding enterprise. (Para 11)

In recent years, it is clear that we fail in finding a good way to solve the problem, which caused by the gap between the rich and the poor. We have to try another way, and this search has become a good profession in philosophical, literary, and rhetorical fields; the people who research it all get a good reward.

②④ It is then argued that the government is inherently incompetent, except as regards weapons design and procurement and the overall management of the Pentagon. (Para 12)

They pointed out the government is incapable except on designing and purchasing of weapons and on the overall management of the Pentagon.

这里仍然是一种讽刺,因为设计和采购武器是为了战争和掠夺,五角大楼又是贪官污吏的滋生处。

②⑤ Being incompetent and ineffective, it must not be asked to succor the poor; it will only louse things up or make things worse. (Para 12)

Since the government is incapable and inefficient, it should not be asked to undertake the task of aiding the poor. Otherwise, it will make a mess of the job or make the situation worse.

②⑥ The allegation of government incompetence is associated in our time with the general condemnation of the bureaucrat—again excluding those concerned with national defense. (Para 13)

We censure the incompetent government because most of the bureaucrat are ineffective, but those contribute to national defense are respectable.

②⑦ In fact, we have in the United States an extraordinarily good public service—one made up of talented and dedicated people who are overwhelmingly honest and only rarely given to overpaying for monkey wrenches, flashlights, coffee makers, and toilet seats. (Para 13)

Actually, the United States has a good public service group, in which they have lots of able men and they are almost all honest to the nation. Though they are paid not too much, none of them strive for interest for themselves by putting public money into their own pockets.

这里作者用 rarely given to overpaying for monkey wrenches, flashlights, coffee makers, and toilet seats 来说明美国政体的一般政府工作人员既能干又廉洁,恰好句中提到的类似渎职行为却发生在五角大楼,两种情况似乎不经意间形成鲜明对比,实际正是作者用意所在。

②⑧ We have nearly abolished poverty among the old, greatly democratized health care, assured minorities of their civil rights, and vastly enhanced educational opportunity. (Para 13)

We have always managed to make the poor enjoy a better life and be equal with the rich, by offering minorities the equal civil rights and enhancing educational chances for them.

这里是作者私下乐观的描述,虽然美国政府一直在试图消除社会不平等和种族歧视,但是实际上这些严肃的问题一直没得到根本解决,直到今天依然存在。

②⑨ Still, the case is made—and believed... (Para 15)

In spite of the fact that there is no proof to such argument, the argument has been put forth and accepted by many.

③⑩ This is perhaps our most highly influential piece of fiction. (Para 15)

It is a very popular story and has been accepted by many but it is not true.

这里用 perhaps 这样看似不确定的语气来加强讽刺事实的效果。

③⑪ Belief can be the servant of truth—but even more of convenience. (Para 16)

Belief can be useful in the search for truth, but more often than not it is accepted because it is convenient.

ient and self-serving.

作者在此以“信仰可以改变”的荒谬论调来讽刺上层社会的人唯利是图的本性。

- ③② The forth design... is to point to the presumed adverse effect on freedom of taking responsibility for them. (Para 17)

The forth formula... points that if the government takes the responsibility for the poor, it will produce negative effect on the freedom.

- ③③ This is possibly the most transparent of all the designs: No mention is ordinarily made of the relation of income to the freedom of the poor. (Para 18)

It is obvious that when these people talk about freedom they only have in mind the freedom of the rich.

- ③④ There is, we can surely agree, no form of oppression that is quite so great, no constriction on thought and effort quite so comprehensive, as that which comes from having no money at all. (Para 18)

We all agree that having no money at all is the worst for a person in all forms of oppression and constriction. So, for the poor, it is the fatal fight to have no money, because anyone can not live without money.

此处作者不再使用暗示的语气,旗帜鲜明地指出“没有哪种形式比身无分文更厉害,也没有哪种对思想和行动的束缚比一无所有更全面彻底”。到此文章气势达到高潮,我们也终于可以看出作者的真正用意所在。

- ③⑤ Freedom we rightly cherish. Cherishing it, we should not use it as a cover for denying freedom to those in need. (Para 18)

It's correct for us to cherish freedom, but just for this reason, we should not ignore the freedom of the poor.

- ③⑥ Finally, when all else fails, we resort to simple psychological denial. (Para 19)

When all the formulas are in vain, we just simply give a blind eye to the poverty.

- ③⑦ This is a psychic tendency that in various manifestations is common to us all. (Para 19)

We all have the tendency to close our eyes to unpleasant things or refuse to think about them. This tendency may take different forms.

- ③⑧ It causes a great many people to avoid thought of the arms race and the consequent rush toward a highly probable extinction. (Para 19)

Many people refuse to acknowledge the seriousness of the nuclear arms race which may in the end lead to a nuclear war and the destruction of the world.

- ③⑨ Whether they be in Ethiopia, the South Bronx, or even in such an Elysium as Los Angeles, we resolve to keep them off our minds. (Para 19)

We decide to ignore the life of the poor, no matter whether they live in as far as in Ethiopia, or as near as our own city, and as poor as in South Bronx or as rich as in Los Angeles.

这里 South Bronx 是纽约市最差的贫民区,与像天堂一样的 Los Angeles 形成对比,而 Elysium 这个比喻本身就蕴涵着反语和讽刺。

to keep sb./sth. off; to refrain from; to cause to remain at a distance

- ④① All, save perhaps the last, are great inventive descent from Bentham, Malthus, and Spencer. (Para 20)

The first four designs are merely modern, clever versions of the theories put forward by Bentham, Malthus, and Spencer.

- ④② George Gilder, a greatly favored figure of the recent past, who tells to much applause that the poor must

have the cruel spur of their own suffering to ensure effort... Murray is the voice of Spencer in our time; he is enjoying, as indicated, unparalleled popularity in high Washington circles. (Para 20)

George Gilder advances the view that only when the poor suffer from great misery will they be stimulated to make great efforts to change the situation; in other words, suffering is necessary to force the poor to work hard.

这里 greatly favored 和 to much applause 都是反语,很明显, George Gilder 的主张完全不顾穷人的死活,作者对此深感厌恶。

⑫ By a triage, the worthy would be selected to survive; the loss of the rest is the penalty we should pay. (Para 20)

By the rule of selection used primarily in medical or military context, badly injured or wounded individuals who seem likely to survive are left aside in order to treat those more likely to survive.

这里更显出资本主义社会的残酷,他们认为穷人理所当然应该为富人的幸福生活做铺垫和牺牲。

⑬ ... he is enjoying, as indicated, unparalleled popularity in high Washington circles. (Para 20)

... as indicated above, he established the highest prestige in the Washington circles.

⑭ Compassion, along with the associated public effort, is the least comfortable, the least convenient course of behavior and action in our time. (Para 21)

The compassion and the public help for the poor are regarded the worst way and designs in this world, which will make the rich disagree and will damage the whole nation.

毫无疑问,此处作者仍然使用的是反讽手法,更为辛辣尖锐。



#### 四、课文译文

### 如何使我们不为穷人的存在而内疚

约翰·肯尼思·高伯瑞

1. 我想认真地思考人类最古老的一种活动,这项活动持续了多年,实际上已经超过了几个世纪:那就是尝试怎样使我们不为穷人的存在而内疚。

2. 贫穷和富有从一开始就共生在一起,彼此很不愉快有时还充满危险。普鲁塔克曾说:“贫富失衡乃共和政体最致命的宿疾。”富有和贫穷持续共存产生的问题,特别是如何证明在其他人还贫穷时我们富有是有道理的这一问题,成为有思想有学问的人几百年来孜孜不倦地思考探索的问题。

3. 《圣经》提出了最初的解决之道:在现世遭受贫穷的人来世会得到更好的回报。他们的贫穷是暂时的灾难;如果贫穷但却能顺从,他们将来就会成为世界的主人。在某种程度上这就是最理想的解决办法。这样一来,富人就可以一边嫉妒穷人的美好前途一边享受他们的财富。

4. 很长时间之后,即在 1776 年《国富论》发表二三十年之后——在英国工业革命开始之后——贫富不均的问题及其解决办法开始具有了现代的形式。杰里米·本瑟姆,这位与亚当·斯密几乎是同时代的人,提出了这样一种准则,在某种程度上,美国人认为这一准则在英国几乎 50 年来一直影响显著。这就是实用主义学说。“通过采用的原则,”本瑟姆在 1789 年指出,“也就是在每次行动中,依照政党各方利益受影响的好坏趋势,来赞同或否决该项行动的原则。”实用,实际上一定是以自我为中心的。然而,社会中只有少数人拥有大量财富,却有更多人没有财富。只要遵循本瑟姆的话——“最大的利益给

最多的人”，就能够解决社会问题。社会尽力满足更多人的利益，然而对于那些利益没有被满足的人来说，这个结果是悲哀的。

5. 在19世纪30年代，一种新的准则成为使我们不为穷人的存在感到内疚的有效办法，迄今为止它的影响也丝毫没有减弱。这是与股票家戴维·里卡多和托马斯·罗伯特·马尔萨斯神父联系在一起的。它的本质很为人们所熟悉：穷人的贫穷是他们自己的错误。贫穷是他们过度生育的结果。很遗憾，他们不能控制性欲，过度生育把地球具有的养活人口的能力推向极限。

6. 这就是人口论。生育引起的贫穷意味着富人不应该为贫穷的产生和解决承担责任。然而，马尔萨斯本人并不是缺乏责任感的人：他极力主张婚姻的仪式应该包括对过度或不负责的性生活的警告——说老实话，这是一种完全有效的控制生育的方法，却未被人们接受。在近代，罗纳德·里根曾说过控制人口的最佳形式存在于市场。（热恋中的夫妇应该上梅西百货公司，而不是回到新房。）应该说，马尔萨斯的建议至少沾点儿边。

7. 19世纪中叶，一种新的解决这一问题的方案产生了很大影响，在美国影响尤其强烈。这一学说与赫伯特·斯宾塞的名字联系在一起，就是社会学中的进化论。在经济生活中如同在生物进化过程中一样，主导的规律是适者生存。“适者生存”这个短语实际上并不出自查尔斯·达尔文，而是出自斯宾塞，后者表达了对经济生活的看法。穷人被淘汰是大自然种族进化的方式。只有弱者和不幸的人灭亡了，人类家庭的质量才会提高。

8. 最著名的美国达尔文社会进化论的发言人之一约翰·D·洛克菲勒——第一个洛克菲勒——在一次著名的演讲中说：“美国这朵玫瑰花以其华贵与芳香让观众倾倒，赞不绝口。而她之所以能被培植出来，就是因为在其早期周围的花蕾被掐掉了。在经济生活中情况亦是如此。这是自然规律和上帝意志在起作用。”

9. 然而在本世纪中，人们认为社会学中的达尔文进化论遭到了普遍的抵制，得到的是带有责难腔调的评论。更多解决贫穷的方法都与卡尔文·库利奇和赫伯特·胡佛有关。他们认为公众对穷人的支持会干预经济系统的运行效能，这种支持和那些能拯救更多人的经济计划相矛盾。直到今天，人们仍然持有一种观念，帮助穷人会对经济造成巨大损失，借此理由，我们才能不为穷人的存在而内疚。

10. 罗斯福的改革使政府被想象为对共和政体里不幸的人负责的形象。罗斯福及随后的几任总统都采取了有效措施，比如为老人提供社会保障，为失业者提供失业保险，给无法就业者和残疾人直接救济，并给病人提供医疗照顾和医疗补助。这在很长一段时期内确实极大地改变了旧观念，人们开始认为我们的确不只是尝试，实际上我们的确一直在做许多帮助穷人的事。

11. 然而，最近几年，我们又在试图寻找不为穷人的存在而内疚的办法，虽然这种需要日益明显，但结果却是无功而返，解决之道尚属未知。于是现在我们重新尝试寻找新的有效方法，这种探索又一次成为哲学家、文学家、演说家们收入不菲的一个重要行业。

12. 在以上四五种现行的解决方法中，从不可避免的事实中得出的最首要的结论就是政府必须采取各种措施帮助穷人。接着指出除了武器的设计和采购以及五角大楼的整体管理之外，政府就是无能的。由于政府无能又缺乏有效措施，就无法指望它来援助穷人，它只会无中生非或使事情变得更糟。

13. 在我们这个时代，对政府无能的指责是与对官僚的笼统谴责联系在一起的——与国防有关的人士又并不在此列。唯一的区别对待形式还是允许的——也是如今在美国仍受官方鼓励的——区别对待那些为联邦政府工作的人特别是致力于社会福利事业的人。我们有庞大的企业官僚机构，充斥着企业官僚，但他们是好的；只有公众官僚和政府官员不好。实际上，美国有非常好的公职力量——一支由富有才干和献身精神的人组成的队伍，他们非常诚实，以至像出高价购买活动扳手、手电筒、咖啡壶以及马桶坐圈以获取回扣的情况极为罕见。（奇怪的是，这些事情如果发生，全都发生在五角大楼。）我们几乎杜绝了老人的贫穷状况，使医疗照顾更为民主，保证少数人种的政治权利，并极大地增加受教育的机会。

这些对那些没有生活能力的人所做的一切看来应该是相当大的成就。我们必须承认眼下对政府和政府管理部门的责难其实也算是试图逃避对穷人负责的一部分。

14. 有几个世纪传统的第二种方案也存在争议,它认为任何一种对穷人的公众援助都会伤害穷人本身。它摧毁斗志,诱惑人们不再工作,破坏婚姻,因为一旦妇女离开自己的丈夫也能为自己和孩子寻得保障。

15. 这里没有这种伤害的证据,因此也无法把这种伤害和缺乏社会援助所受的伤害进行比较。不过我们相信事实是,这种做法确实对给予穷人的援助造成严重的影响。这种说法也许是我们编造的神话中最有影响力的一篇。

16. 紧接着的第三种,唤醒我们对穷人的责任感的方案涉及社会援助措施对工作动机的不利影响。他们用勤奋的人们的收入给那些懒惰和无能的人,这会打消勤劳者的工作积极性,也会鼓励懒散的人继续懒惰。目前的示威运动就是针对这种单方援助的经济。这种经济认为美国的富人不再坚持工作是因为他们的收入太少。所以,我们费力地通过把穷人的钱给富人的办法来刺激经济。难道我们真的认为大多数穷人宁愿要福利而不愿要一个好的工作?或者认为那些商人——公司执行官们,那些时代的重要角色真的因为工资不当而游手好闲,虚度光阴?这简直是对美国商人、一个显而易见的勤劳工作者的难以置信的可耻的指控。信念可以是真理的仆人——但更多的情况下,只是一时之需。

17. 第四种使我们不为穷人的存在而内疚的方案是指明如果政府替穷人承担责任,可能会对自由产生不利的影响。自由包括人们自己选择花钱的最大量的权利以及允许政府拿走并花掉自己钱最少量的权利。(强调一下,花在国防上的钱除外。)正如弥尔顿·弗里德曼教授那句广为流传的名言,人们应该“自由选择”。

18. 这一方案中有一点是最明显的:穷人的自由和收入之间的关系没有人关注。(弗里德曼教授这里提出了反驳,他认为可以通过一些消极的税收来保证每个人的最低收入。)我们完全可以同意,没有哪一种形式比身无分文更厉害,也没有哪种对思想和行动的束缚比一无所有更全面彻底。尽管我们听到很多关于税收造成的收入减少给富人的自由权利带来种种限制,却从没听说穷人多交出钱来能增加一些自由的权利。实际上富人税收失去的自由与穷人交出收入所应该得到却没有得到的自由相比实在是件微不足道的小事。我们珍惜自由是对的,正因为珍惜自由,我们才不能以此为借口,不给最需要自由的人自由。

19. 最终,当一切办法都无济于事的时候,我们就干脆装聋作哑。对于不愉快的事情视而不见或不去想是我们普遍存在的心理倾向。正因为如此,我们才能对死亡视而不见;我们也才能不去考虑武器的种类及其将带来可能导致全部灭亡的混乱。由于同样的心理倾向我们也拒绝去考虑穷人的存在,不管他们生活在埃塞俄比亚,还是在纽约市的南布朗克斯区,甚至是洛杉矶这样的天堂,我们都决心不去为这些人操心。我们总是被建议去想愉快的事情。

20. 这是几种躲避关心穷人的方案。除了最后一种,所有这些卓越的传统都是用来结束我们探索如何不对我们的穷人同胞内疚的历程,都来自本瑟姆、马尔萨斯、斯宾塞、罗纳德·里根及他们的后继者们的发明。所以心理学家聚集在华盛顿宣告:乔治·吉尔德,近代最有特权的人物,他极力赞许穷人应该承受一定的痛苦。只有如此他们才能受到激励而努力改变现状;他的极力拥护者查尔斯·默里也声称:“废除一切工人阶级和老人的政府福利和收入保障措施,包括对有未成年子女家庭的补助、医疗照顾、食品券、失业保险、工人失业保障金、住房补贴及伤残保险和所有其他的一切。这是一堆解不开的疙瘩,只能快刀斩乱麻,统统取消。”按照救济的先后原则,生存者应该是经过挑选的有价值的人,其他人的灭亡是我们必须付出的代价。默里是斯宾塞在我们这一时代的代言人,如上所说,他在华盛顿高层中享有无比的威望。

21. 同情心,加上与之相关的社会努力是我们这个时代最麻烦、最令人不快的行为和行动方针。但

是它仍然是与我们整个文明生活相符的唯一方针。而且最终,这无疑是最保守的路线。这并不是自相矛盾。对文明的不满和所带来的结果并不来自那些满足的人——这点很明显。为了能达到我们尽可能广泛地满足的程度,我们将保持并扩大社会和政治的平静,这是保守者最渴望的。



## 五、练习答案及详解

### I. Vocabulary

A. Look up the following words and phrases. Select the meaning that best suits the sentence in which each appears.

1. a sense of right and wrong, with an urge to do right
2. a state or nation in which the supreme power rests in all the citizens entitled to vote and is exercised by representations elected, directly or indirectly, by them and responsible to them
3. appealing to the intellect
4. efficacy
5. to go to (a place, esp. go in large numbers to)
6. plan
7. fact
8. faith, conviction
9. benefit, profit
10. the high class of the rich

### IV. Questions on Appreciation

#### A. Organization

1. The title makes a suggestion that the author will try to find a way to "get the poor off our conscience". In fact, it's an irony when we finish reading the whole article.  
Here "our" implicitly includes "all people who are not poor—the rich", so it's not precise if it is changed to "people's conscience".
2. The writing of this article is lucid and persuasive. Using a suggestion, its beginning is really a good one. Because it arouses the reader's interest on first reading at the beginning, and we are absorbed to find the answer to the question, and "how to get the poor off our conscience".
3. This article can be divided into five parts.  
The first part (Paras 1—2) is the opening. The author gives us an indication that he is included in search of ways of "getting the poor off our conscience" and he points out that the search has been "an intellectual preoccupation for centuries" and "continues to be so in our own time".  
The second part (Paras 3—9) deals with the five solutions that had been offered in history. These solutions are arranged chronologically.  
The third part (Paras 10—11) is a transition. Roosevelt's New Deal and the social welfare policies of the presidents after WW II seemed to indicate that the government was assuming responsibility for aiding the poor. But recent developments as of the election of Ronald Reagan in 1980 showed that the attempt to get the poor off our conscience was not at an end. It was only suspended temporarily.  
The fourth part (Paras 12—20), in which the author makes a critical analysis of the five current

designs to get the poor off our conscience and points out the first four are inventive descendants from Bentham, Malthus, and Spencer. The author further shows that these designs are very popular in Washington D. C. at the time he writes the article in the 1980's.

The fifth part (Para 21) is the concluding part. In this part, the author points out that public assistance to the poor is in the interest of the conservatives. The ending seems undramatic but it is in line with the mild irony of the whole piece.

4. The author deals with the five solutions that had been offered in history chronologically. In another word, he uses different time transition when he goes on with from one to another. So the author begins with the solution proposed in the *Bible*. Then he introduces Utilitarianism, which became dominant "much, much later" at the turn of the 19th century. Then in the 1830's "a new formula... became available". This is followed by Social Darwinism "later in the nineteenth century". Finally, with "in the course of the present century", he introduces the last solution.
5. Para 10 is a transition. The author introduces Roosevelt's New Deal and the social welfare policies of the presidents after World War II which seemed to indicate that the government was assuming responsibility for aiding the poor. But it was only suspended temporarily.
6. By pointing out that public assistance to the poor is in the interest of the conservatives, the author ends the article. The ending seems undramatic but it is in line with the mild irony of the whole piece.
7. The most striking characteristic of this article is that lots of irony used, which forms a humorous irony, even a bitter satire. In addition, the writing is very lucid and persuasive.

**B. Irony and satire are frequently used in this article. Comment on the following statements, pointing out the effectiveness of the irony or satire.**

1. This sentence is an irony, by which we see clearly the rich's character of selfishness, since it's apparently not a wise solution. So the author calls it "an admirable solution" because the rich can "get the poor off their conscience".
2. This is a satire, which arouses the reader's thinking that a stocker is one who buys and sells shares for those with money to invest; usually stockbrokers themselves make a lot of money. It reminds people of the saying: It is easier for a camel to go through the eye of a needle than for a rich man to enter into the Kingdom of the God.
3. This is highly ironical. This statement ridicules Reagan's view that the best form of population control comes from the market. The author thinks that such an idea is wide of the mark. It also shows the true character of inhuman sympathy of the capitalist society.
4. Here "a bit" is an irony, which makes an effect of emphasis that Social Darwinism is really too cruel.
5. Here "not unrewarding" is double negative, for a strong emphasis, used in an ironical sense, that is, money can be made by contributing to the process of ignoring the poor.
6. Here "only", "still", and "officially" are worthy of notice. The implication is that most forms of discrimination in the United States are legally impermissible today. This shows the progress made in the United States. But there is still one form which is not only permissible but officially encouraged. The readers' curiosity is aroused and they are eager to know this form of discrimination. At the same time the author's critical attitude is also revealed.
7. The phrase "free to choose" is used ironically, which makes an effect of satire. Because the freedom is always that of the rich, and it never belongs to the poor.



8. It is also an irony. Because we are clear that all the solution in the history concerned by the author are the same that is served for the interest of the rich.
9. Here is a satire tone, Murray is the voice of Spencer, and both of them are the bodyguards of the rich, not of the poor. Because they find a reasonable way to keep them off guilty, they get an unparalleled popularity.

**C. What is the author's attitude towards arms race and the Pentagon? How do you know? What tone does he use to show his attitude?**

The author's attitude towards the arms race and the Pentagon is disapproval. The author holds the point that "civil discontent and its consequences do not come from contented people—an obvious point", and the author points out that we have a psychic tendency that in various manifestations is common to us all. For this reason, we "avoid thought of the arms race and consequent rush toward a highly probable extinction"; from all of these it's not difficult to master the author's opinion.

**V. Explain the following in your own words, bringing out any implied meanings.**

1. By right action, we mean it must help promote personal interest.
2. The poverty of the poor was caused by their having too many children.
3. The rich were not to blame for the existence of poverty so they should not be asked to undertake the task of solving the problem.
4. It is only the result or effect of the law of the survival of the fittest applied to nature or to human society.
5. People began to reject Social Darwinism because it seemed to glorify brutal force and oppose treasured values of sympathy, love and friendship. Therefore, when it was mentioned, it was usually the target of criticism.
6. The desire to find a way to justify the unconcern for the poor had not been abandoned; it had only been put off.
7. Government officials, on the whole, are good; it is very rare that some would pay high prices for office equipment to get kickbacks.
8. It is a very popular story and has been accepted by many but it is not true.
9. Belief can be useful in the search for truth. But more often than not it is accepted because it is convenient and self-serving.
10. George Gilder advances the view that only when the poor suffer from great misery will they be stimulated to make great efforts to change the situation; in other words, suffering is necessary to force the poor to work hard.

**VI. Translate the following into Chinese.**

**A. Phrases**

- |                        |               |
|------------------------|---------------|
| 1. 严肃考虑一个问题            | 9. 武器采购       |
| 2. 有思想有学问的人孜孜不倦思考探索的问题 | 10. 供应学派经济学   |
| 3. 具有现代形式              | 11. 企业经理人员    |
| 4. 提出了这样一种准则           | 12. 食品券       |
| 5. 适者生存                | 13. 工人(失业)补助金 |
| 6. 在很大程度上负有责任          | 14. 住房补贴      |
| 7. 失业保险                | 15. 伤残保险      |
| 8. 医疗照顾和医疗补助           | 16. 社会安定      |

## B. Sentences

1. 贫富不均乃共和政体最致命的宿疾。
2. 他们的贫困只是一种暂时的不幸:如果他们穷困但却温顺,他们最终将成为这个世界的主人。
3. 一对对儿热恋的新婚夫妇应该在梅西百货公司过夜,而不是回到他们的新房。
4. 美国这朵玫瑰花以其华贵与芳香让观众倾倒、赞不绝口。而她之所以能被培植出来,就是因为早期其周围的花蕾被掐掉了。在经济生活中情况亦是如此。这是自然规律和上帝的意志在起作用。
5. (它已成为)经济上收入不菲的一个行业。
6. 没有哪种压迫形式比身无分文更厉害,也没有哪种对思想和行动的束缚比一无所有更全面彻底。
7. 我们珍惜自由是对的。正因为我们珍惜自由,我们就不能以此为借口,不给最需要自由的人自由。
8. 不管他们生活在埃塞俄比亚,还是在纽约市的南布朗克斯区,甚至是在洛杉矶这样的天堂,人们都决心不去为这些人操心。
9. 如上所说,他在华盛顿高层当中有无比的威望。
10. 同情心,加上与之相关的社会努力是人们这个年代最麻烦、最令人不快的行为和行动方针。

# Lesson Two

## The Woods Were Tossing with Jewels



### 一、课文导读

#### (一) 内容梗概

这篇文章描写 20 世纪初荒野农家的家庭生活。作者的父亲喜欢冒险和独立,这使他带领全家旅行到佛罗里达州的一片湿地。本文以一个 5 岁小女孩的口吻向我们细致地描述了这次旅行,以及后来在小岛上建房子和开垦新家园的过程。她充满深情地向我们描述了美丽的树林、一簇簇鲜花和许许多多鸟、钓鱼时的惊喜、家里奢华的“餐桌”和新生儿的出生等等趣事;由此我们也明白为什么在 70 多年以后她仍对这段艰难朴素的生活充满怀念。更重要的是作者的父亲是一个意志坚强、富有勇气的人,这在旅行中和与不法之徒沃森的对抗中体现得淋漓尽致。华特生的种种行为和人格在文中也有细致描述。最后作者表达了对父亲的怀念和崇敬,以及对家的无限热爱和怀念。

#### (二) 背景知识

##### 1. Everglades National Park

These lilies and pine trees grow in Everglades National Park, located at the southern end of the Everglades marsh region in southern Florida. Most of the marsh is covered with dense vegetation, giving rise to the region's nickname, “River of Grass”. Established in 1947, the park provides a refuge for a diversity of plants and wildlife.



Everglades National Park

##### 2. Ten Thousand Islands



Ten Thousand Islands

Dotting the coastal waters off southwestern Florida, many of the Ten Thousand Islands lie within Everglades National Park. The Everglades cover 13,000 sq. km. (5,000 sq. mi.) and comprise a vast freshwater marsh, swamp, savanna, and virgin forest. The extensive marsh lies in a large basin of limestone and was formed by centuries of surplus water from Lake Okeechobee.

##### 3. William Tecumseh Sherman

One of the Union's best generals during the American Civil War (1861—1865), William T. Sherman marched an army through the South, destroying the last of its economic resources. Because he waged an economic war against civilians, he has been called the first modern general.

#### 4. The Sirens

In Greek mythology sirens were sea nymphs who lured sailors with their sweet singing, causing their ships to founder. Odysseus overcame the temptation by tying himself to his ship's mast as shown in this painting by Leon Belly in the Musée del'Hotel Sandelin in Saint Omer, France.



William Tecumseh Sherman



The Sirens



## 二、词汇与短语

### (一) 词汇

#### ① adjoin /ə'dʒɔɪn/ v.

to be next, or nearest to and joined with (sth.) 临近; 邻近 【同义】connect 【反义】disjoin  
—We heard laughter in the adjoining room. 我们听到了邻屋的笑声。

【派生】adjoining *adj.* 临近的; 毗邻的

#### ② adore /ə'dɔ:/ v.

to love deeply and respect (sb.) highly 爱慕; 敬仰; 非常喜爱 【同义】admire 【反义】abominate  
—He adores his wife and children. 他深爱妻儿。

#### ③ brittle /'brɪtl/ *adj.*

1) hard but easily broken; fragile 硬而易碎的; 脆弱的 【同义】breakable; crisp  
—Constant stress has made our nerves brittle. 我们长期处于紧张状态, 神经已吃不消了。  
2) (of a sound) unpleasantly hard and sharp (指声音) 尖利的  
—The orchestra was brittle in tone. 管弦乐队演奏的曲调尖利刺耳。

#### ④ crook /kru:k/ n.

person who is habitually dishonest 一贯耍花招的人; 行骗或行窃的老手

#### ⑤ exaggerate /ɪg'zædʒəreɪt/ v.

to make (sth.) seem larger, better, worse, etc. than it really is; to stretch (a description) beyond the truth 夸张; 夸大; 言过其实 【同义】amplify; enlarge  
—He always exaggerates to make his stories more amusing. 他总爱添枝加叶, 把故事讲得更有趣。

#### ⑥ execute /'eksɪkjʊt/ v.

1) to carry out, perform (what one is asked or told to do) 执行; 完成  
—to execute a plan, a piece of work, a purpose 实行一计划、完成一工作、达到一目的  
2) to put (sth.) into effect 使(某事)生效; 实施  
—to execute a will 依照遗嘱行事

#### ⑦ expansive /ɪk'spænsɪv/ *adj.*

1) able or tending to expand 可扩大或伸展的; 有扩大或伸展性的  
—He greeted us with an expansive gesture and a wide smile. 他手舞足蹈笑逐颜开地迎接我们。

2) friendly and willing to talk a lot 友善健谈的; 开朗的

—to be in an expansive mood after a few drinks 喝了几杯酒以后情绪高涨

8 flatten /'flætən/ *v.*

to become or make (sth.) flat 变平; 使(某物)变平

9 haul /hɔ:l/ *v.*

1) to pull; to tug 拉; 拽

2) to influence over other people 影响他人

10 implement /'implɪmənt/

1) *n.* tool or instrument for working with 工具; 器具

【同义】appliance

2) *v.* to put (sth.) into effect; to carry out 使(某事物)生效; 实施; 贯彻

【同义】perform; fulfill 【派生】implementation *n.* 履行

11 intrigue /ɪn'trɪg/ *v.*

1) (against sb.) to make and carry out secret plans or plots to do sth. bad 搞阴谋诡计

【同义】conspire

—She was intriguing with her sister against her mother. 她和妹妹串通捣鬼跟母亲作对。

2) to arouse sb.'s interest or curiosity 激起某人的兴趣或好奇心

12 invalid /ɪn'vælɪd/ *adj.*

1) not properly based or able to be upheld by reasoning 无适当根据的; 无道理的; 站不住脚的

—an invalid argument, assumption, claim, etc. 站不住脚的论据、没有根据的假定、没有道理的要求

2) not usable; not officially acceptable (because of an incorrect detail or details); not legally recognized 无用的; 法律上不承认的

—A passport that is out of date is invalid. 护照过期是无效的。

【派生】invalidism *n.* 久病虚弱; 慢性虚弱病

13 lush /lʌʃ/ *adj.*

growing thickly and strongly; luxuriant 繁密的; 茂盛的 【同义】luxuriant

14 manipulation /mə'nɪpjʊ'leɪʃn/ *n.*

[C, U] (act of) manipulating or being manipulated 操作; 操纵; 控制

—His clever manipulation of the stock markets makes him earn lots of money. 他在股票交易中买卖精明, 赚了很多钱。

15 metropolis /mə'trɒpəlɪs/ *n.*

(pl-lises) chief city of a region or country; capital 大城市; 首都; 首府

—a great metropolis like Paris 像巴黎一样的大城市

16 mishap /'mɪʃəp/ *n.*

unlucky accident (usu. not serious); bad luck 不幸事故(通常不严重); 坏运气 【同义】accident; disaster

—Our journey ended without (further) mishap. 我们的旅程(后来)一路平安。

17 nonchalant /'nɒnʃələnt/ *adj.*

not feeling or showing interest or enthusiasm; calm and casual 不感兴趣的; 不激动的; 漠不关心的

【同义】indifferent

—She defeated all her rivals for the job with nonchalant ease. 她从容不迫地击败求职的所有竞争者。

18 overlap /'əʊvə'læp/ *v.*

to partly cover (sth.) by extending over its edge (与某物)部分重叠

—The tiles on the roof overlap one another. 房上的瓦是一块搭着一块的。

19 outlaw /'aʊtlɔ:/

1) *n.* person who has broken the law and is hiding to avoid being caught (尤指旧时)犯法后躲藏起来的人

—Bands of outlaws lived in the forest. 成群的歹徒犯法后栖身于森林中。

2) *v.* to declare (sth.) to be illegal 宣布(某事物)非法

—to outlaw certain addictive drugs 宣布某些致瘾药物为禁品

20 plantation /plæn'teɪʃən/ *n.*

1) large piece of land, esp. in a tropical country, where tea, cotton, sugar, tobacco, etc. are grown (茶、棉、甘蔗、烟草等的)大种植园;大农场(尤指热带国家的)

2) area of land planted with trees 造林地

21 precious /'preʃəs/ *adj.*

of great value and beauty 贵重的;宝贵的

22 provision /prə'vɪʒən/ *n.*

[U] giving, lending, supplying or making sth. available; providing sth. 供应; 供给; 提供

—The government is responsible for the provision of medical services. 政府负责提供医疗服务。

23 replenish /rɪ'plenɪʃ/ *v.*

1) to fill sth. again 再将某物充满

—Let me replenish your glass, e. g. with more wine. 我给你把杯子再斟满吧。

2) to get a further supply of (sth.) 补充某物 【同义】supply

—to replenish one's stocks of pet food, timber, notepaper, light bulbs 添置宠物的食物、木材、信纸、灯泡

【派生】replenishment *n.* 补充; 补给

24 resume /rɪ'zju:m/ *v.*

1) to begin (sth.) again or continue (sth.) after stopping for a time 重新开始(某事物); (停顿后)继续进行(某事物)

—Hostilities resumed after the cease-fire. 停火过后, 战事再度爆发。

2) to take or occupy (sth.) again 重新得到或占有(某事物) 【同义】continue

—She resumed her maiden name after the divorce. 她离婚后重新使用娘家的姓。

25 roomy /'ru:mi/ *adj.*

having plenty of space to contain things or people 宽敞的

—a surprisingly roomy car 极其宽敞的汽车

26 roost /ru:st/ *n.*

place where birds perch or settle for sleep 禽鸟栖息处

27 seclude /sr'klud/ *v.*

to keep sb./oneself apart (from others) 使某人/自己(与他人)隔离

—She secludes herself in her study to work. 她把自己关在书房里埋头研究。

【派生】seclusion *n.* 隔离; 幽僻之地

⑳ straggle /'strægl/ *v.*

to grow, spread, in an irregular or untidy manner 蔓延;蔓生 【同义】ramble

—a straggling village 房舍散漫的村落

【派生】straggler *n.* 落伍者;掉队者

㉑ strident /'straɪdnt/ *adj.*

(of a sound, esp. a voice) loud and harsh; shrill (指声音, 尤指嗓音)尖锐刺耳的

㉒ sumptuous /'sʌmptʃuəs/ *adj.*

looking expensive and splendid 华贵的; 豪华的; 奢华的

—a sumptuous feast 盛宴

㉓ susceptible /sə'septɪbl/ *adj.*

1) easily influenced or harmed by sth. 易受某事物影响或损害 【同义】impressionable

【反义】resistant

—highly susceptible to flattery 听几句好话就忘乎所以

2) easily influenced by feelings; impressionable 易受感情影响的; 易受影响的 【同义】pliable

【反义】impregnable

—He's so susceptible that she easily gained his affection. 他易受感情影响, 所以她很轻易就得到了他的爱。

㉔ trepidation /,treprɪ'deɪʃən/ *n.*

[U] great worry or fear about sth. unpleasant that may happen (担心可能出事的)惊恐, 恐慌

—The threat of an epidemic caused great alarm and trepidation. 流行病猖獗因而人心惶惶。

㉕ unrelenting /ˌʌnrɪ'lentɪŋ/ *adj.*

not becoming less in intensity, etc. 强度等未减弱的 【反义】forbearing

—unrelenting pressure/attacks 未减弱的压力(攻击)

㉖ unscrupulous /ʌn'skru:pjələs/ *adj.*

1) not reducing in intensity, etc.; continuous; relentless (强度等)未降低的; 持续的; 不间断的

【同义】unprincipled

—unscrupulous pressure 持续的压力

2) (of a person) merciless; unwilling to relent (指人)冷酷的, 不愿宽容的

—a cruel and unrelenting master 残酷无情的主人

## (二) 短语

### ① to stake a claim

to risk (money, one's hopes) 赌; 以(金钱、希望)等下注

—I'd like to stake my life on it, and I'm very confident about it. 我愿意用我的生命下赌注, 我极有把握。

### ② to turn (sth. /sb.) over

1) to fall over; to upset; to change the position of (使) 跌落, 打翻

—The car (was) turned right over. 那辆大汽车来了一个大翻身。

2) to give the control or conduct of sth. /sb. to 移交

—He's turned over his business to his successors. 他已经把他的事业移交给他的继承人了。

### ③ to key up

to make tense or excited; to stimulate or raise the standard of (a person) 激动; 鼓舞

—The crowd was keyed up for the football match. 群众为该足球比赛所鼓舞。

**④ to pull out**

to move or row out 驶出; 划出

—The boat pulled out into midstream. 该船划出而进入中流。

**⑤ what with**

(used to list various reasons) considering; because of (列举多个原因) 由于; 因为

—What with six of us fishing and the fish so plentiful, we had a catch in a matter of minutes. 由于我们6个在钓鱼, 鱼也很多, 大约几分钟就钓到了很多鱼。

**⑥ to stock with**

to supply or equip with; to keep in stock 供应; 采办; 储存

—to stock a shop with goods 供应商店货物

**⑦ a matter of**

approximately; only 大约; 仅有

—within a matter of hours 大约几小时

**⑧ to be susceptible to**

to be sensitive to 对...敏感

—to be susceptible to pain 对痛苦敏感

**⑨ to settle an account**

to have some unpleasant business, a quarrel, etc. to discuss 与某人有不欢之事; 和某人算账

—He will settle an account with that guy. 他会和那人算账的。

**⑩ in no time**

at once; immediately 立即; 马上

—You will be all right in no time. 你会马上康复的。

**⑪ to draw (sth. /sb.) up**

1) to prepare; to compose 预备; 草拟

—to draw up a contract 草拟一个合同

2) to come to a stop 停住

—The taxi drew up in front of the station. 计程车驶至车站前面停下。



### 三、课文注释

**①** In 1899 when I was five years old and living in Palmetto, Florida, my father decided to take his family through the wilds of the Everglades and stake a claim on an offshore island. (Para 1)

In 1899 when I was five years old and my family lived in Palmetto, Florida, my father made his mind move us to the wilds of the Everglades and prepare to change it into my home.  
**wild:** an uninhabited or uncultivated region

**②** His father's carriage house in Charleston, South Carolina, and his nearby plantation were in the line of Sherman's march. (Para 2)

My grandfather had a carriage house in Charleston, South Carolina, which was just in the course of the way of Sherman's march.



in the line of: in the direction or course of

- ③ When papa finished school at the academy there, he worked as a cowboy on a ranch in Myakka for a friend of his dead father's. (Para 2)

When my father graduated from the academy there, he became a cowboy on the farm in Myakka for a friend of my grandfather's to make a living.

academy: in this case a private secondary school

ranch: a large farm esp. in the west U. S., with its buildings, lands, etc., for the raising of the cattle, horses, or sheep in great numbers

- ④ By age thirty, he was a country sheriff, no mean job in those days, and his territory was wide ranging. The country he served was later split into six or eight countries. (Para 2)

When father was in his thirties, he worked as a country sheriff, at that time, which is a good job. He charged a large territory. After that, it was divided into six or eight countries.

mean: low in quality, value, or importance; poor; inferior

- ⑤ But these marks of wild country called to my father like the legendary siren song. (Para 3)

Though the place was not pleasant or disagreeable, my father was deeply attracted to it precisely because of its unexplored, uncultivated natural state, and the challenge.

the legendary siren song 是希腊神话里的典故,意思是说,海上有一群美丽的女妖,用优美的歌声来诱惑海员和水手,使他们撞到礁石上送命。

- ⑥ My grandfather was the town doctor. He doctored the entire country and was paid in eggs and ham and vegetables when they were in season. (Para 4)

My mother's father was a doctor. He cured the patients in the whole country, and was respected by them. The villagers gave parts of the harvest to us as a reward.

to doctor: to cure or treat a person or an illness

- ⑦ It was an idyllic life, and we lived close to our family and to the comforts and safety a small town could afford. (Para 4)

It was such a comfortable life as in any small town, where my relationships live together nearly, and we lived a happy life without any wants.

- ⑧ But papa was a man of enterprise; he realized that the untouched Ten Thousand Islands off the southwest coast of the state were rich in soil for crops and in game for food. (Para 4)

But my father had a strong willingness to undertake new or risky projects. He believed that Ten Thousand Islands off the southwest coast of the state was worthy of cultivation, where we could live a life with enough crops and animals as food.

to be of enterprise: to have enough courage and will to engage in sth.

- ⑨ My stomach turned over; I was that excited. (Para 5)

I was very excited about the trip, and the feeling turned into a sensation of nausea.

- ⑩ I explained, wondering what great disaster might befall us if it did. (Para 5)

As a little girl, I believed my father's words, and was genuinely afraid of the possible disaster—if we didn't hurry up, the day would catch us and terrible things might happen.

to befall: to happen to

- ⑪ We had been keyed up for this adventure by weeks of planning. (Para 6)

Because we had prepared this trip for many weeks, we had become excited about it.

- ⑫ In this deep and roomy box were packed our camping equipment and food supplies. (Para 7)

We used this deep and spacious box to deal with our camping equipment and food supplies.

- ⑬ One big kettle stood up on three long legs to sit over a fire. (Para 7)

We had a kettle with three legs, by which we boiled water and food on the fire.

这里以一个5岁小女孩的视角来描述一只水壶,使人觉得烧饭做菜那一情景仿佛就在眼前,生动有趣。

- ⑭ We looked forward to plentiful game and wild fruit on the road, but took ample provisions—fifty-pound lard cans full of flour, oiled sausage, coffee, lard, molasses, grits, rice, sugar and salt. And there were two hams, a wheel of cheese, jars of fruit and jelly, and sacks of oats for the horse. (Para 8)

Even though we thought there would be a lot of food and wild fruit on the road, we made a full preparation for the trip, shown by the list of food. The horse which was regarded as a member of the family, was also taken care of.

- ⑮ Papa's box of tools was most impressive to look at. He had every kind of implement for land farming, plus guns and ammunition for hunting, and fishing tackle for each member of the family. (Para 8)

Father's box of tools was filled with every kind of implement for farming, hunting and fishing tools, and it would make you surprised and impressive.

- ⑯ This third-day out, and the days to come, found us in the unsettled wilds of Florida. (Para 10)

We were in the unsettled wilds of Florida the third day out, and the days to come.

- ⑰ Sometimes we would strike camp early enough for papa and the boys to shoot fox squirrels or quail for supper. (Para 10)

Because we had to hunt small animals such as fox squirrels and quail to prepare our dinner, we must always remove all the tents early in the morning.

- ⑱ Its underwater grasses looked like green ribbons constantly unrolling, and the trees held thick sprays of wild orchids. (Para 10)

The underwater grasses were as beautiful as green ribbons, stretching out in all their best, and there were lots of wild orchids on the sprays.

- ⑲ Papa had given each of us a pole, and what with six of us fishing and the fish so plentiful, we usually had a catch in a matter of minutes. (Para 10)

Because each of our six had a pole to fish, and there were too much fish, we usually caught a lot in a few minutes.

- ⑳ We were near Arcadia but still too far to drive on. (Para 11)

We were on the line of Arcadia, but there was also a long distance to reach for our whole family.

- ㉑ So papa pitched camp and went on into town on horseback and brought a doctor back with him. (Para 11)

So father set up the camp for us and he rode the horse to the town to find a doctor to treat me.  
to pitch camp: to make camp or a tent ready to use

- ㉒ As we drove off, Arcadia with its dirt streets and free-roaming cattle, its barns and outhouses, looked like a metropolis. (Para 12)

At the turn of the last century, compared with the unsettled areas the author's family later lived in, Arcadia seemed almost like a major city.

- ㉓ The burly arms of the oaks were huge with ferns and blooming bromeliads. Redbirds, tanagers, and painted buntings flew back and forth across the trail, leaving a child with the impression that the woods

were tossing with jewels... (Para 12)

Lots of ferns and blooming bromeliads covered through the branches of the oaks, and made them lush and huge. With red plumage, and the different, brightly colors, the birds looked like jewels tossing in the woods to a child.

这是一个出自小孩之口的比喻,因为红雀有鲜红的羽毛,唐那雀颜色鲜艳,鸫鸟色彩斑斓,它们在林中飞来飞去,的确像树林里闪烁着宝石。作者借这个比喻来表达对淳朴自然美景的热爱。

back and forth: to and fro

24 Every lawman in southern Florida was acquainted with his treachery and cunning. (Para 14)

Watson was an infamous outlaw, whose treachery and cunning made him known to every police there.

25 He had secluded himself in this remote area of the Everglades because he was not welcome elsewhere; from time to time he was halfheartedly sought for trial, though few crimes seemed to lead directly to his door. (Para 14)

He knew clearly that there was no place he could live, so he went to the most remote area of the Everglades. In this place, though the police would make some effort without real earnest to investigate Watson and to bring him to court, there seemed to be little concrete evidence to prove that he was responsible for certain illegal activities.

这里作者通过警察试图抓住这个亡命之徒,却几次以证据不足告终来暗示这个地方霸王罪行不少却极为狡猾,为后来没人敢和他争论,而爸爸却要单枪匹马去要账埋下了伏笔。

to seclude sb./oneself (from): to keep (oneself, a person) apart from the company of others

26 The legend persisted, however. (Para 15)

The legend continued to exist.

此句是一个过渡句,连接上下两段,之后读者将对沃森的贪婪和狡猾有进一步的了解。

27 The native whites feared him as you would a rattlesnake, but the Indians and black people were susceptible to his manipulations. (Para 15)

He was such an infamous outlaw that the native feared him very much, and he controled and exploited the Indian and black people.

28 He rarely paid the money agreed upon, and if a worker rebelled, Watson was said to execute him on the spot. (Para 15)

Even though he made an agreement with the workers, he never gave them the whole money. If anyone wanted to rebel, he would kill that man as a punishment.

这里一方面介绍了沃森的残忍,另一方面也为下文中发生在父亲身上的事情作铺垫。

29 This merciless man had an invalid wife whom he adored. He kept fifty cats for her to pet; of course, I was intrigued with them the day we docked at the sugar plantation. (Para 16)

Watson was a merciless person, but he was very kind to his sick wife. He kept many cats for her to play with. As a child, I liked them very much when we stayed at his territory.

30 Like other people in this lost place, we were dependent on Watson's big boat, which made regular runs to and fro. (Para 17)

The people here all depended on Watson, of course, we needed his help of boating materials to build our own house.

to make regular runs to and fro: 定期往来运输

31 The stranglehold Watson had over this section of Florida was not dissimilar to the unscrupulous activities

of certain lawmen, other legal crooks, and even governors that our state was to suffer through its history. (Para 17)

The control Watson had over this part of Florida was much similar to the dishonest or illegal activities of the law-enforcing officials and governors which Florida witnessed in the twentieth century.

- ③② There was the little shack, not the most gracious of living quarters, and there was a murderer for our nearest and only neighbor, about thirty miles away. (Para 19)

Before the family built their own house, they lived in a shabby cabin at Gopher Key, close to the merciless Watson.

这里 not the most gracious of living quarters 是一种轻描淡写的手法,修辞上叫做“降格陈述”,来描述他们目前的状况,表现一种辛苦却乐观的精神。a murderer 指代上文提到的 Watson。

- ③③ There sprung to life, in no time it seems, a splendid garden under the care and interest of our entire family. (Para 20)

Because our family took good care of this fertile field, it soon became a place with life, and it seemed like a wonderful garden.

to spring: to appear or come into being quickly

- ③④ My big brothers, aged eight and eleven, were crack shots with a rifle and always accompanied him. (Para 22)

My big brothers were eight and eleven years old, and two good shooters, who accompanied my father.

- ③⑤ King Richard in his gluttony never sat at a table more sumptuous than ours was three times a day ... (Para 22)

We had abundant food on the island, and even the meals enjoyed by King Richard, who was famous for his love of food, couldn't possibly compare with ours.

文中提到作者的妈妈每天教他们读书,由此更可了解作者深谙历史。5岁女孩做如此对比让人觉得可爱亲切,同时恰到好处地表达出一家人对简单生活的热爱和对充足食物的满意。

- ③⑥ Once as we entered the long creek that led to the old place through a tunnel of mangroves, we were hit by a flock of ducks flying through. (Para 24)

In the creek, which led to the old place through a tunnel of mangroves, were always groups of ducks. When we went through it, they were hitting our bodies all the time.

- ③⑦ Our new home was indeed a haven of pleasure. But there was work too, as always. (Para 26)

We enjoyed our lives in the new house, even though there was lots of hard work to do, we were eventually happy.

- ③⑧ Despite the unrelenting heat, we were happy to be let off from our hours of school indoors, sessions which our mother kept every day, rain or shine. (Para 27)

Although it was very hot outside in the sun, we were happy to be dismissed from my mother's sessions indoors. We would have to read and write with her every day no matter what the weather was like.

虽然作者家人喜欢这种荒原的简单生活,但是他们的妈妈每天都要教他们读书。说明这是一个很有教养的家庭。

- ③⑨ My father and grandmother had delivered her without mishap. (Para 29)

My little sister was cared by my father and grandmother so well that she got no illness.

- ④⑩ When they drew up to the dock in their boats, papa told the boys to sit tight while he went in the house. (Para 31)

Father and the two boys made a plan in their boats, papa asked his sons to stay at the ship quietly and await the next move.

④ It was an armory; the walls were lined with guns. Papa did not carry a gun. (Para 31)

Watson's room was full of so many guns that it looked like an armory. while papa entered into without a gun.

这是从两个儿子的视角进行描述的,沃森有许许多多的枪,而父亲却一支也没有。一方面体现儿子们的担心,另一方面体现父亲正直而勇敢。注意叙事视角的转换。

⑤ Today I can see in my grandsons and great-grandson some of those qualities of courage and caring that my father had in such abundance. (Para 37)

My father is a man of courage and caring, which influence me deeply, and my descendants inherit those qualities from me. That is to say, good qualities in a family can be inherited for many centuries.

作者在此表达了对父亲的怀念,也为他骄傲。其实来自家庭的良好品格可以影响和流传几代。读到这里,读者会产生一种对生活、对未来更美好的想象和憧憬。

in abundance; great; plenty



#### 四、课文译文

### 林中宝石闪烁

玛丽·圣·约翰

1. 1899年,我5岁,住在佛罗里达的棕榈村,当时爸爸决定带领全家穿过艾沃格拉德那片蛮荒的湿地,决计在靠海边的岛上开始新生活。他表面上是想开垦那个荒岛没错,但他的真实意图是想让我们体会他成长的那种方式。他15岁时是玛亚卡一带的牛仔。大牧场就在艾沃格拉德湿地北端,那时还尚未被开垦。爸爸一生都喜欢吃那种用篝火烤制的玉米面包,或只加点开水和盐和面,擀平的又脆又可口的咸饼干。

2. 他一生都在冒险。内战中他失去了父亲和一个兄弟。祖父的小木屋建在卡罗莱娜南部的查里斯敦,他的农场恰好位于谢尔曼将军的行军路线上。祖母只好孤身一人带着爸爸逃到佛罗里达的昆西。爸爸念完初中后就在祖父一个朋友的农场里当起了牛仔。爸爸30岁左右当上了本郡的行政长官,当时这是个不错的差事,他手下的辖区很大。后来,这个郡分裂成了六到八个县。

3. 对许多人来说南佛罗里达不是一个吸引人的地方,因为那儿有很多蚊子、豹子、鳄鱼和许多沼泽地。可是这里却像希腊神话里海妖那动听的歌声一样诱惑着爸爸。

4. 决心已定,爸爸着手做一辆带篷的四轮马车。那年秋天,就是7月4日,我们来到了这片荒地。其实我们在棕榈村住了已有一年多,我的外祖父哈里森一家就住在那儿。他们在战后就住在那儿,都是受人爱戴的好人。在麦那提河边,我们有一座二层的房子,种了栎树、番石榴,还有长叶松。它们的树枝伸出来形成树荫,牛在那儿遮阳,矮枝叶成了一个个鸡窝。外祖父是一个乡村医生,他为全郡的人治病,人们总是给他应季的鸡蛋、火腿和蔬菜作为回报。这是一种田园式的生活,我们和亲戚住得很近,享受着小镇生活所能给予我们的舒服和安全。但父亲是一个很有进取心的人,他知道佛罗里达州西南海岸的万岛群岛还没有被开发,那儿土壤肥沃,适于耕种,而且猎物充足,不必担心食物来源。

5. 我永远不会忘记我们起程的那天。由于我们要赶路,因此很早起床。爸爸催促我们说:“我们可

不能等到天黑。”我告别了我的玩具娃娃,却没料到以后再也见不到它们了。最后我们都坐到了四轮马车里,爸爸、妈妈和更小的孩子坐在前面,帕伯、哈尔和我坐在后面。爸爸拉动缰绳,我们就出发了。我的胃翻江倒海,因此更为激动。尽管实际上有很多让人高兴的理由,我还是开始哭泣。“她怎么啦?”爸爸问,以为帕伯在戏弄我。“我怕天就要黑了,”我解释,心里想天真黑了时会有什么样更大的灾难降临到我们面前。

6. 几个星期来对这次冒险的计划使大家很受鼓舞。爸爸在吃晚饭时或是晚上在门廊里总给我们描述这次旅行将多么精彩有趣。甚至在上床睡觉时,爸爸的描述也会从开着的门传到我们的耳朵里。他的描述果真和事实一致。那次旅行的记忆使我的生活光彩起来。

7. 马车下部有一个可以滑动的抽屉,所以能在后面拉来拉去;在这个深盒子里装满了我们宿营的装备和吃的东西。宿营的装备包括一个大帐篷、每人一张轻便的折叠床、折叠椅和一张桌子。我们的野外炊具是用厚重的黑铁做的。一个带三条腿的大水壶,可以坐在火上。还有荷兰烤箱、锡杯、锡刀、锡碗等。羊毛毯、床单、枕头,还有其他寝具及被褥都被卷到一张帆布里用绳子扎起来;这堆软乎乎的东西就放在马车上成了我们三个坐在后面的小家伙的大座椅。

8. 我们料想路上会有充足的食物和野果,但是还是做了充分的准备——50磅带猪油罐装的面粉、涂了油的香肠、咖啡、猪油、糖蜜、谷麦面、大米、糖和盐,另外还有两个火腿、一大盘奶酪、几坛水果和果酱,甚至给马也准备了好几袋燕麦。爸爸的工具箱最让人激动,除了各种各样耕作的工具,还有几杆打猎用的枪和火药,还为家里每个成员准备了捕鱼用具。

9. 我私底下真希望让你看看那荒远地区的小商店,我们不时地在那里停下补充食物储备。小店里备有各种各样所需之物,从犁刀到缠棉线用的线轴。偶尔有一个铁匠棚挨着小商店,所以戴夫,我们的马,也能一直穿双好鞋。

10. 出发后的第三天以及以后的日子里,我们都在佛罗里达无人居住的荒野中穿行。有时我们很早就收了帐篷,为了爸爸和男孩子们能捕到狡猾的松鼠或鹌鹑来做晚饭。一旦找到能钓鱼的好地方,当天我们就在那里停留。往往这样的地方都是一条从一片巨大的柏树丛沼泽地流出来的清澈的小河。水里的水草就像绿色的丝带,不断地伸展开来,野兰花一簇一簇地挂满了枝头。爸爸给我们每人一根鱼竿,由于我们6个在钓鱼,鱼也很多,大约几分钟就钓到很多鱼。作为特别的款待,爸爸总是切出卷心菜的菜心,妈妈则用一个小黑铁壶慢慢地煮。路上并没有菜园、果园,可我们总觉得离可以种卷心菜的菜园不远了。

11. 一天,我病了还发高烧。当时我们在阿卡狄亚附近,但要到达那里还很远。于是爸爸搭起帐篷,然后骑马赶到小镇请来了医生。我们不得不待在帐篷里直到我痊愈。后来我们赶到一个十字路口的旅店,一个像房子一样大的二层木屋,直到我恢复体力可以继续旅行才离开。

12. 我们到达阿卡狄亚,那里不太平整的街道、自由放牧的牛群、牛房和外面的厕所使它看起来简直就是一个城市。我们快有一年没再看到这样的“城市”了。我们惊异于眼前的景象:一丛丛硕大的乔叶栎布满在以前经常发水的河岸,大片地面上铺着层层绿蕨;乔叶栎粗壮的枝干上也覆盖着蕨类植物,附生的凤梨科植物正在盛开。红雀、唐那雀和色彩斑斓的鸫鸟沿着小路飞来飞去,在孩子们看来就像是宝石在树林中跳动。

13. 在那不勒斯,我们卖掉了马和车,买了一条小船,一条带船舱的单桅船。我们在马卡观光了几天,之后向南驶向湿地城和楚克奇海,一个是着陆的码头,另一个是泥泞的河岸。最后我们来到埃德加·沃森的地盘,一个位于占丹河的大蔗糖园。

14. 沃森是一个臭名昭著的亡命徒。佛罗里达的每一位警官都熟悉他的叛逆和狡猾。他把自己隔绝在这遥远的湿地,因为除此之外没有哪个地方欢迎他。警察们时不时地试图逮捕他,但往往都是他的犯罪证据不足,其实警察也似乎没有诚心。

15. 然而,这个传奇还在继续。本地的白人像惧怕响尾蛇一样怕他,而印第安人和黑人则不得不受

他的控制和剥削。由于经常挨饿,他们就为他工作,替他砍甘蔗。但是他从不按规定付钱,如果有工人反抗,他就用枪打死他。我听说一旦他的海湾刮起飓风,就会把海水卷起露出无数白骨。第二天海滩又被水淹没,一切又一如既往。

16. 这个残酷的人有一个生病的妻子,他非常爱她,给她养 50 只猫作为宠物。当然,我们在甘蔗园的那几天我对这些猫很感兴趣。我记得沃森把我抱在膝盖上让我挑一个送给我。他看起来倒像是一位最好的绅士。

17. 于是爸爸还是有点恐慌地跟沃森商量从伏特麦尔弄来一些木材、盖屋顶的材料和其他盖房子需要的东西来盖一个我们自己的房子,这不仅需要我们自己动手,还需要朋友们的帮忙。像其他住在这偏僻的地方的人们一样,我们依靠沃森的大船定期往来运输些材料。在我们定居下来并开始耕作之后,还能感觉到这种依赖。这里没有其他办法把我们的收成运到市场里去。沃森在佛罗里达州这一地区的恶霸行为与我州所遭受的某些执法者、地头蛇,甚至官员们的无耻压榨没什么两样。

18. 我们离开沃森地盘的那天到达了目的地。我们的第一个家是叫做高坡口的小岛上由隔板搭成的简陋小屋,距离海湾有 20 多里路,小河后来进到一个广阔的海湾,穿过像隧道一样的一条小溪到达海边的数百个小岛。这些小岛大部分挨得很近,以至于那条小溪经常被红树林遮住。

19. 我们在日落之时到达高坡口,在那里要一直待到岛上我们的房子建好。我们有一个简陋的木屋,算不上最大的居住场所,近邻就是那个大刽子手沃森,大约只隔 30 里地。尽管如此,我们还是搬进折叠床,用帆布包当椅子。我记得有一个粗糙的桌子,还有一条长凳。最重要的是我们有做饭的炉子。

20. 这小岛实际上是一个吊床,覆盖着厚厚的植物。这里很快就有了生命,在我们全家人的悉心照管下,它看起来像个茂盛的花园。每天我们的餐桌上都有各种各样的蔬菜。新鲜的鹿肉和野火鸡随时想吃都能吃上。我们划船到离家不远的地方钓红鲈和甲鱼。爸爸在房前右边河边建了打猎的隐蔽处所,每天他都在那儿放几次枪。每天清晨当我们被成千的鸭子吵醒时,爸爸都带回 10 多只在洋苏叶中闷死的鸭子。那年冬天妈妈保存的我们从鸭子身上撕下的绒毛足够做一床鸭绒被。

21. 那年冬天我们游泳去远处的小岛,收集海蚌留着做饼馅和杂烩汤;沿着退潮的小溪拾到的牡蛎都像人脚那么大。

22. 爸爸去哪儿都带着全家人,除了去猎鹿。这时我就哭,因为我不是男孩儿。我 8 岁和 11 岁的哥哥们总是拿着步枪跟着爸爸。他们三个从未空手而归。暴殄如国王理查德也未能像我们一样一日三餐吃新鲜的野味。

23. 那年春天我们的二层房子建好了。爸爸把它建在著名的希瓦利埃这样古老的家宅之地上。它最早的主人是叫那个名字的法国人。那人种过番石榴和鳄梨,现在它们已经长成大树了。这里还有一个从海里伸出的坡道,房子坐落在树丛中看起来安全又稳固。

24. 我们的新家不仅安全稳固,还给我们带来了无尽的乐趣。我们有床睡,有椅子坐,又分别几次从高坡口运回我们所有的东西。我得到了去搬运的允许。每次我们穿过通往湿地的红树林时总被一群群扑腾而过的鸭子撞到。男孩儿们用桨自卫时把它们击落,这些就成了我们的晚餐。

25. 当我们完全住进去之后,爸爸和 7 个孩子在我们肥沃、宽敞的小岛上种了大片的西红柿。西红柿越长越大,我们的家庭也越来越大。祖母搬来和我们一起住,还有爸爸的弟弟,我的叔叔约翰,也移居过来住在我家和沃森的地盘之间。

26. 我们的新家真是一个快乐的天堂。但是这里也总是有活儿要干。清晨早些时候和下午的晚些时候奥尔和我跟妈妈去菜园。新鲜的蔬菜吃起来多香呀!我们用关爱的双手照料它们,定时为它们除草。我们抽水,用桶装满,搬来给新种的植物浇水。我们的回报是大包的甜菜、小萝卜、大头菜等等,把它们带回家做午饭和晚饭。加上野生食物做成的饭菜更是令人难忘。我们的吊床周围长着野生的棉豆。它们的藤蔓高高地爬到了树上,我们得把它们拽下来才能摘到豆子(因为知道它们在之后一周内还

会爬回去)。饭后甜点是长在后院的野生香蕉做的脆饼。

27. 那年夏天的某个时候,突然有一天所有的活儿都没了。我最大的哥哥和爸爸都为我忙碌起来,把我带到外面,还做了高跷,教我如何使用。绑在上面像走在崎岖的路上。下雨了,水停留在硬泥壳的盆地里。我们就开始了在水池里走路的游戏,踩在高跷上我和爸爸一样高。哈尔出来了,很快两个哥哥也踩在自己的高跷上出来了。奥尔太小了不会使用高跷,但他跟在我们后面很羡慕。除了白天到处都是讨厌的蚊子,于是我们4个孩子整天在白天的阳光下踩着高跷走来走去。我们不去顾及炎热,很高兴能从室内解放出来,因为妈妈无论晴天、下雨都要每天定时教孩子们学习。

28. 下午晚些时候祖母叫我们进屋。她告诉我们有了小妹妹。当爸爸把这个小东西带到我们所在的厨房时,我以为它是个躺在枕头上带着假发的玩具娃娃。我用手摸摸它的脸颊看它是不是个玩具,她居然动了!

29. “爸爸,我想要她,我一定要她,请让我抱抱,行吗?”当时爸爸把她交给了我。我们一起住了很长时间,妹妹和我,有时会有一些羁绊,其实也很珍贵。当我手中抱着这个小小的漂亮的婴儿时,感到从未有过的骄傲。爸爸和奶奶把她照看得无病无灾。我们叫她珍妮。

30. 很快妈妈又回到了菜园,我们种的东西连同爸爸的西红柿也都迅速被运到市场。按照和沃森的协定我们用船运。麻烦立即来了。甘蔗园的信使带给爸爸的钱很少。爸爸告诉那人转告沃森他欠我们多少,爸爸将亲自去要。那个可怜的信使吓坏了,劝爸爸别把这事说出去。“他会杀了你,马丁先生。他就是这样算账本的。没人敢和埃德加·沃森争论,也没人能活着讨论这事。”

31. 第二天爸爸去找沃森,哈尔和帕伯陪同。当他们的船停在船坞时,爸爸告诉他俩在船里坐稳,他自己进了沃森的房子。穿过一片绿色的屏障可以看见沃森的整个起居室。那是一个军械库,墙边立满了枪。爸爸没带枪。

32. 接下来的争论男孩们看得一清二楚。当沃森的声音越来越刺耳时,他们也许想到了船底下的骨骸。终于沃森背过去去取枪,爸爸仍毫不让步,他坚持要自己的钱;沃森的手伸向一支枪。在这千钧一发之际,沃森的脸上露出了笑容。因为在那儿,他看见船里的两个小鬼每人手里都有一支米福枪,正准备好子弹瞄准这个威胁着他们爸爸的人。

33. “看,”沃森告诉爸爸,爸爸以为他在使诈想让自己转身。沃森明白了,拿开自己的枪指向船。爸爸为儿子的举动咧嘴笑了,沃森也笑了。

34. “你认为他们在想我会杀了你,是吗,吉姆?”沃森问爸爸。

35. “你认为你有机会吗?”爸爸回敬他。

36. 这个从未还过债的人把钱还给了爸爸,随着爸爸走到船坞看个究竟。他看到的是两个无动于衷的男孩儿正在打蚊子,旁边放着枪。

37. 那天晚上睡觉时爸爸给两个男孩一人一个拥抱,还吻了他们。在那个年代,在南方,男人中亲吻是很普遍的,可我很高兴这个习惯和其他的许多习惯在我家也保留着。今天在我的子孙身上,我仍能看到我父亲所拥有的无尽的勇气和爱心。是他和妈妈养育我们的方式使我们彼此关爱。也许正是这种关爱,才使我们在世纪轮流的那个年代在万岛群岛上度过那美好的时光。



## 五、练习答案及详解

### I. Vocabulary

#### A. Look up the following words and phrases before class.

1. to say or show clearly that you consider sth. is or should be yours



2. in this case a private secondary school
3. low in quality, value, or importance; poor; inferior
4. people of high social standing
5. to make tense or excited, as in anticipation
6. to remove all the tents
7. someone who is sick or injured, esp. permanently
8. a small shelter where you can watch birds or animals without being seen by them
9. merciless; unwilling to relent
10. to come into being or emerge

#### IV. Questions on Appreciation

1. We can find the true meaning of "jewels" in the sentence "The burly arms of the oaks were huge with ferns and blooming bromeliads. Redbirds, tanagers, and painted buntings flew back and forth across the trail, leaving a child with the impression that the woods were tossing with jewels" Here, "jewels" means "diamond, ruby, and precious stone". From the last paragraph, we understand that the "jewels" in the author's heart not only refers to the birds in the woods, but also the precious experience of living in the remote island and woods.
2. The topic sentence is "His life was a series of adventures". Then the author sketches what happened to her father's family in the Civil War and how her father managed to finish school and find a job.
3. The sentence "It was an idyllic life, and we lived close to our family and to the comforts and safety a small town could afford." summarizes their life in Palmetto. It is placed after the detailed account. Putting the sentence after the detailed is better than before it. Because it is clearly a recollection as a trip going, and the details are the interesting memory of the author's, followed with a summary which is a consequence of recalling.
4. In Paras 5—9, the author doesn't follow the chronological order strictly. She first writes about the day they started (Para 5), then with a flashback describing how excited they had felt about the trip (Para 6) and what preparation they had done for the trip (the wagon in Para 7 and provision in Para 8), and finally switches back to the trip itself by describing the little stores along their way (Para 9). At the beginning of each paragraph is a topic sentence, indicating the main idea.  
The author arranges this part in this order, because she is recalling the trip. Some preparation was thought of on the way of the trip, so it seems that this way of thinking is even more like the way of a little girl.
5. The author includes Edgar Watson in her account because, in fact, there was not without danger on the unsettled islands. Apart from the natural elements, there was also lawlessness, which is personified in Watson. She used suggestions to foreshadow what happened later. Such as "He had secluded himself in this remote area of the Everglades because he was not welcome elsewhere; from time to time he was halfheartedly sought for trial, though few crimes seemed to lead directly to his door", "The native whites feared him as you would a rattlesnake, but the Indians and black people were susceptible to his manipulations", and "I heard that countless human skeletons were left bare in his bay once when a hurricane blew the water out. The bayou was filled the next day, and it was business as usual."
6. In Paras 23—29, the author describes their new home step by step, its physical condition, the joy and

the work, her little sister's birth. The following sentences serve as the topic sentence for their respective paragraph, and make transition between paragraphs smooth and natural. "... the big house in the trees looked safe and sturdy." (Para 23) "... our new home was more than safe; it was a joy." (Para 24) In Para 27, the author describes the joy of walking in the stilts and being set off from mother's sessions, by "suddenly, sometime that summer, a day came when all work ceased". In Para 28, the author tells us how she first "met" her little sister. Next paragraph shows the love and the trust within the family. "Our new home was indeed a haven of pleasure. But there was work too, as always, the love and trust within the family."

7. Father is a man of courage, justice, and love for his family, even though no one "argues with Edgar Watson and lives to talk about it", papa insisted on asking the debt from him, and he was not alone, he was accompanied by his two sons. This also shows the love and care in the family, the children had inherited papa's good qualities. In the author's memory, this matter is an important one at that time, because it shows his father's good qualities, and his love for the family. Those good qualities make the author proud of her father and her family, and in fact, "Today I can see in my grandsons and great-grandson some of those qualities of courage and caring that my father had in such abundance."
8. The life in American frontiers is hard and simple for all of the settlers. They have to face many difficulties, such as meeting wild animals, shortage of food, even outlaw's exploitation. But, in this article, the family is brave, optimistic, hard-working, and caring each other. Those qualities make their life much happier than others'.
9. The father is a leader of the family; it is his purpose that causes the family's journey and settlement. He has courage, wit, deep plan, responsibility and love for the family. We can see it from many details in the article; he made a wagon with a big drawer, used for bedding as well as chair, and prepared enough food and implement for future living. He also made stilts for his children to play with in the remote island with joy. The most excellent matter is that he dared to ask Watson to pay his money, though no one dared to do it before. He was the model for all his children and was beloved by them. Mother was a good helper of father. She not only cared the living of the family by making "memorable meals", but also gave the children a good education, by "sessions which our mother kept every day, rain and shine". With the couple's common efforts, their family was full of happiness and love.
10. In this article, the author uses a variety to describe things in abundance, such as simile, comparison, understatement, foreshadowing, suggestion, and so on. These are some examples:
  - 1) Simile is used in the sentence "Its underwater grasses looked like green ribbons constantly unrolling, and the trees held thick sprays of wild orchids."
  - 2) Simile is used in "The burly arms of the oaks were huge with ferns and blooming bromeliads. Redbirds, tanagers, and painted buntings flew back and forth across the trail, leaving a child with the impression that the woods were tossing with jewels."
  - 3) Comparison is used in "King Richard in his gluttony never sat at a table more sumptuous than ours was three times a day."
  - 4) Understatement is used in "There was the little shack, not the most gracious of living quarters, and there was a murderer for our nearest and only neighbor, about thirty miles away."
  - 5) Foreshadowing is used in "I heard that countless human skeletons were left bare in his bay once

when a hurricane blew the water out. The bayou was filled the next day, and it was business as usual."

- 6) Suggestion is used in "He had secluded himself in this remote area of the Everglades because he was not welcome elsewhere; from time to time he was halfheartedly sought for trial, though few crimes seemed to lead directly to his door."

**V. Explain the following in your own words, bringing out any implied meanings.**

1. Though the place was not pleasant or disagreeable, my father was deeply attracted to it precisely because of its unexplored, uncultivated natural state, and the challenge.
2. As a little girl, I believed my father's words, and was genuinely afraid of the possible disaster—if we didn't hurry up, the day would catch us and terrible things might happen.
3. In this place, though the police would make some effort without real earnest to investigate Watson and bring him to court, there seemed to be little concrete evidence to prove that he was responsible for certain illegal activities.
4. The control Watson had over this part of Florida was much similar to the dishonest or illegal activities of the law-enforcing officials and governors which Florida witnessed in the twentieth century.
5. Before the family built their own house, they lived in a shabby cabin at Gopher Key, close to the merciless Watson.
6. We had abundant food on the island, and even the meals enjoyed by King Richard, who was famous for his love of food, couldn't possibly compare with ours.
7. Although it was very hot outside in the sun, we were happy to be dismissed from my mother's sessions indoors. We would have to read and write with her every day no matter what the weather was like.

**VI. Translate the following into Chinese.**

**A. Phrases**

- |                 |                  |
|-----------------|------------------|
| 1. 在谢尔曼将军的行军路线上 | 6. 一个臭名昭著的亡命之徒   |
| 2. 每人一张轻便的折叠床   | 7. 一切照常          |
| 3. 补充我们的食品      | 8. 定期往来运输        |
| 4. 作为特别的款待      | 9. 由搁板搭成的简陋的小屋   |
| 5. 自由放牧的牛群      | 10. 在我们全家人的悉心照管下 |

**B. Sentences**

1. 这是一种田园式的生活, 我们和亲戚住得很近, 享受着小镇生活所能给予我们的舒服和安全。
2. 但父亲是一个很有进取心的人, 他知道佛罗里达州西南海岸的万岛群岛还没有被开发, 那儿土壤肥沃、适于耕种, 而且猎物充足, 不必担心食物来源。
3. 出发后的第三天及以后的日子里, 我们都在佛罗里达无人居住的荒野中穿行。
4. 水里的水草就像绿色的丝带, 不断地伸展开来, 野兰花一簇一簇地挂满了枝头。
5. 以前这里经常发水的河滩岸边一丛丛地长满了乔叶栎, 那些地面上铺着一层绿色的蕨类植物; 乔叶栎粗壮的枝干上也覆盖着蕨类植物, 附生的凤梨科植物正在盛开。红雀、唐那雀和色彩斑斓的鸚鵡沿着小路飞来飞去, 在孩子们看来就像是宝石在树林里跳动。
6. 本地的白人像惧怕响尾蛇一样怕他, 而印第安人和黑人则不得不受他的控制和剥削。
7. 我们的新家不仅安全稳固, 它还给我们带来了无尽的乐趣。
8. 今天在我的子孙身上, 我仍能看到我父亲所拥有的无尽的勇气和爱心。

# Lesson Three

## At War with the Planet



### 一、课文导读

#### (一) 内容梗概

这是一篇环保科技文。作者开篇就指出人类生存的两大世界——生态圈和技术圈,并指出二者是相互作用的。两大世界分别受控于不同的客观规律:生态圈具有循环性、保守性、和谐性;而技术圈具有直线性、创新性、不调和性。二者的强烈冲突便引发了严重的环境危机。人类只有正确认识两大领域的关系,才能有效地解决问题并与地球和平共处。

二战之后,许多新型技术被引入生产领域。人们对利润的单纯追求引发了自然与社会的严重失衡。康芒纳认为人类的所作所为造成的后果并非无法挽回。他并不反对工业化,但提倡可持续发展。

环境危机在中国也是一个亟待解决的问题,因为我们已经为过去对环保的漠视付出了严重的代价。1998年洪涝灾害、近年的漫天黄沙都是自然对我们的惩罚。如何处理好人与自然的关系并建立一个良好的公众环保意识,的确值得我们深思。

#### (二) 背景知识

##### 1. Barry Commoner

Barry Commoner is a progressive pioneer of environmental protection. As early as 1950s, he helped found the St. Louis Committee for Nuclear Information and dedicated to the study of the damage of nuclear test. In 1966, he established the Center for the Biology of Natural System. He was the author of 9 books and the 1980 Citizens' Party presidential candidate.

##### 2. Three Mile Island

The accident to a Pressurised Water Reactor (PWR) at Three Mile Island (TMI) nuclear power station near Harrisburg, Pennsylvania, USA in March 1979 is always referred to by anti-nuclear factions as a disaster. A maintenance error and a defective valve led to a loss-of-coolant accident. The reactor itself was shut down by its safety system when the accident began, and the emergency core cooling system began operating as required a short time into the accident. Then, however, as a result of human error, the emergency cooling system was shut off, causing severe core damage and

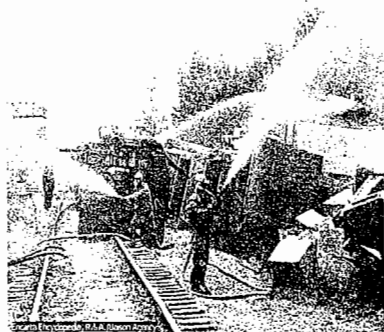


Three Mile Island

the release of volatile fission products from the reactor vessel. Although only a small amount of radioactive gas escaped from the containment building, causing a slight rise in individual human exposure levels, the financial damage to the utility was very large, \$1 billion or more, and the psychological stress on the public, especially those people who live in the area near the nuclear power plant, was in some instances severe.

### 3. Chernobyl

On April 26, 1986, one of the nuclear reactors at the Chernobyl' nuclear power plant in Ukraine exploded, releasing an estimated 100 to 150 million curies of radiation into the atmosphere. In the weeks following the explosion, cleanup crews worked to contain the damage and reduce emissions from the radioactive debris. Shown here are workers decontaminating an area near the Chernobyl' plant.



Decontamination at Chernobyl



## 二、词汇与短语

### (一) 词汇

#### ① afflict /ə'flikt/ *v.*

to cause trouble, pain or distress 使苦恼; 疼痛; 悲痛

—She is afflicted with serious arthritis. 她身患严重的关节炎。

【派生】affliction *n.* 疼痛; 苦恼

#### ② algae /'ælgi:/ *n.*

very simple plants with no true stems or leaves, found in water 藻类

#### ③ biodegradable /,baɪəʊdɪ'greɪdəbl/ *adj.*

(of substances) that can be made to rot by bacteria 可生物降解的 【同义】decomposable

#### ④ carcinogenic /,kɑ:sɪnə'dʒenɪk/ *adj.*

producing cancer 致癌的

【词根】carcinogen *n.* 致癌物

#### ⑤ cellulose /'seljələʊs/ *n.*

organic substance that forms the main part of all plants and is used in making plastics, paper, etc. 植物纤维物质

#### ⑥ curator /kjuə'reɪtə/ *n.*

person in charge of a museum, an art gallery, etc. 博物馆、图书馆的馆长

#### ⑦ deplete /dɪ'pli:t/ *v.*

to reduce greatly the quantity, size, power or value of sth. 大量缩减某物的数量、能力或价值; 消耗

【同义】exhaust 【反义】increase

—The expense has depleted our funds. 这笔花费已使我们的资金所剩无几。

【派生】depletion *n.* 削减; 消耗

#### ⑧ elaborate /ɪ'læbəreɪt/ *adj.*

detailed and complicated; carefully prepared and finished 详尽而复杂的; 精心制作的

【反义】simple

—They offer an elaborate five-course meal. 他们提供了一顿有五道菜的盛宴。

【派生】elaboration *n.* 详细制定; 详尽讨论

⑨ enzyme /'enzam/ *n.*

organic chemical substance that is formed in living cells and assists chemical changes without being changed itself 酶

⑩ esoteric /i:seu'terik/ *adj.*

likely to be understood by only those with a special knowledge or interest; mysterious; obscure 深奥难懂的 【同义】abstruse 【反义】easy

—He cannot understand the esoteric poem. 他无法理解这首难懂的诗歌。

⑪ excrete /ik'skri:t/ *v.*

(an animal or a plant) to pass out (waste matter, sweat, etc.) (指动物或植物)排泄或分泌(废物、汗等) 【同义】separate 【反义】ingest

【派生】excretion *n.* 排泄; 分泌

⑫ grandiose /'grændiəs/ *adj.*

planned on a large scale; intended to seem imposing 庞大的; 浮夸的 【同义】imposing 【反义】plain  
—She has some grandiose plan to start up her own company. 她有个野心勃勃的大计划, 想独立创办公司。

⑬ habitat /'hæbitæt/ *n.*

natural environment of an animal or a plant; home 动植物的居住环境; 栖息地

⑭ ingest /in'dʒest/ *v.*

to take (food, etc.) into the body, typically by swallowing 摄取食物于体内 【同义】absorb

【反义】excrete

⑮ innocuous /i'nokjuəs/ *adj.*

causing no harm 无害的 【同义】harmless 【反义】harmful

⑯ insidious /in'sidiəs/ *adj.*

spreading or acting gradually and unnoticed but with harmful effects 隐伏的; 潜在的; 暗中为害的

【同义】latent 【反义】open

—an insidious disease 潜伏的疾病

—insidious jealousy 暗暗产生的忌妒

⑰ marauder /mə'rɔ:də/ *n.*

person or animal that does marauding 劫掠者 【同义】plunderer

【词根】maraud 劫掠; 掠夺

⑱ metabolize /mə'tæbəlaiz/ *v.*

to break down food chemically for use in the body 将食物分解用于身体新陈代谢

—Our bodies constantly metabolize the food we eat. 我们吃的食物在体内不停地发生新陈代谢。

【派生】metabolism *n.* 新陈代谢 metabolic *adj.* 新陈代谢的

⑲ mold /məʊld/ *n.*

hollow container with a particular shape, into which a soft or liquid substance is poured to set or cool into that shape 模型

⑳ mundane /mʌn'deɪn/ *adj.*

commonplace; ordinary 平凡的 【反义】 great

②1 niche /ni:ʃ/ *n.*

the specific space occupied by an organism within its habitat 生物小环境

②2 nitrate /'naɪtreɪt/ *n.*

salt formed by the chemical reaction of nitric acid with an alkali with fertilizers 硝酸盐

—The soil is enriched with nitrates. 土壤被施以硝酸盐肥料。

②3 parasite /'pærəsəɪt/ *n.*

animal (e. g. a flea, louse) or plant that lives on or in another and gets food from it 寄生物; 寄生虫

【派生】parasitic *adj.* 寄生的

②4 parody /'pærədi/ *n.*

thing that is done so badly that it seems to be an intentional mockery of what it should be 拙劣的模仿

【同义】travesty

—The trial was a parody of justice. 那场审判是对正义的嘲笑。

②5 photosynthetic /ˌfəʊtəʊsɪn'θetɪk/ *adj.* 光合作用的

②6 polymer /'pɒlɪmə/ *n.*

natural or artificial compound made up of large molecules which are themselves made from combinations of small simple molecules 聚合物

②7 portend /pɔ:'tend/ *v.*

to be an omen or warning of ... 预示 【同义】foreshadow

—His silence portends trouble. 他沉默不语可不是好兆头。

②8 quill /kwɪl/ *n.*

large feather from the wing or tail 翅膀或尾部的大羽毛

②9 residue /'rezɪdju:/ *n.*

what remains after a part or quantity is taken or used 剩余物; 残余

③0 unwitting /ʌn'wɪtɪŋ/ *adj.*

not intentional, not on purpose 无意的 【同义】unintentional 【反义】deliberate

—She was the unwitting cause of the argument. 她无意中引起了这场争执。

## (二) 短语

① to be exempt from

to be free from an obligation, duty or payment; not liable 被免除责任、付款等

—Children under 16 are exempt from prescription charges. 16岁以下的儿童免付处方费。

② to tamper with

to meddle or interfere with sth.; to alter sth. without authority 干预; 乱弄; 擅自改动

—The records of the meeting had been tampered with. 会议记录曾被擅自改动。

③ to dry up

(of any source or supply) no longer to be available (指资源或供应) 耗尽, 枯竭

—If foreign aid dries up, the situation will be desperate. 如果外援枯竭, 形势将十分严峻。

④ to be hostile to

to show strong dislike or enmity very unfriendly 敌意的; 极不友好的

—She found he is very hostile to her. 她发现他极不友好。

**⑤ in proportion to**

relative to 相对于...来说

—The room is wide in proportion to its height. 这房间就其高度的比例来说是宽的。

**⑥ to contribute to**

to help to cause sth. 促成

—Does smoking contribute to lung cancer? 吸烟会导致肺癌吗?

**⑦ to convert sth. into sth.**

to change sth. from one form or use to another 改变某事物的形式或用途

—Britain converted into a decimal currency system in 1971. 英国于 1971 年改用十进制货币体系。

**⑧ to be compatible with**

(of people, ideas, arguments, principles, etc.) to be suited (指人、想法、论点、原则等) 适合, 适宜

—The couple separated because they are not compatible with each other. 这对夫妻因不和而分居。

**⑨ trial and error**

process of solving a problem by trying various solutions and learning from one's failures 反复试验, 从失败中找出解决方法

—Learn by trial and error. 通过反复试验学习。

**⑩ to evolve from**

(plants or animals) to gradually develop from a simple form to a more complex one (植物、动物) 进化

—Many Victorians were shocked by the notion that Man had evolved from lower forms of life. 在维多利亚时代, 许多人对于人是由低等生物进化而来的观点感到大为震惊。

**⑪ to break down**

to change the chemical composition of sth. 改变化学成分; 分解

—Sugar and starch are broken down in the stomach. 糖和淀粉在胃部被分解。

**⑫ to be essential to**

to be necessary, indispensable, most important 必要; 不可缺少

—Is money essential to happiness? 金钱对于幸福是必不可少的吗?

**⑬ to amount to**

to be equal to 等于或相当于

—What you say amounts to a direct accusation. 你所说的话等于直接的指责。

**⑭ to take sides**

to express support for sb. in a dispute, etc. 在辩论等中支援、偏袒某人

—You must not take sides in their argument. 在他们的辩论中不要偏袒任何一方。

**⑮ to be doomed to**

to condemn sb. (to death, destruction, failure, etc.) 注定某人(死亡、毁灭、失败)

—We loathe each other, yet we are doomed constantly to meet. 我们相互厌恶, 却偏偏冤家常碰头。

**⑯ for sb.'s sake**

in order to help sb. or because one likes sb. 为了某人起见

—I want to help you for your sister's sake. 看在你姐姐的面上, 我来帮你。





### 三、课文注释

**① Now, on a planetary scale, this division has been breached. (Para 2)**

Globally, the two worlds are no longer separated, having nothing to do with each other. What humans do in the technosphere will have effect on the ecosphere.

**② We have been tampering with this powerful force, unaware, like the Sorcerer's Apprentice, of the potentially disastrous consequences of our actions. (Para 3)**

We have been interfering to damage this powerful force, paying little attention to the bad results of our actions.

**Sorcerer's Apprentice:** In folklore, the sorcerer's apprentice accidentally flooded the sorcerer's house because he learned to make a broom fetch water but not how to make it stop.

**③ But this image, now repeatedly thrust before us in photographs, posters, and advertisements, is misleading. (Para 4)**

The Earth we see in photos, posters, and ads, which appears so beautiful, is not the reflection of the world we live in; such image lulls us into complacency.

**④ Even if the global warming catastrophe never materializes, and the ozone hole remains an esoteric, polar phenomenon, already human activity has profoundly altered global conditions in ways that may not register on the camera. (Para 4)**

Even if the global warming disaster never comes true, and the ozone hole is still beyond the understanding of most people, man has already greatly changed the Earth's situation, although all these cannot be reflected on pictures.

**⑤ ... noxious flames of smog blanket over major cities. . . (Para 4)**

... poisonous flames of polluted air cover with a thick layer. . .

**⑥ ... carcinogenic synthetic pesticides have been detected in mother's milk all over the world. . . (Para 4)**

... tests of mother's milk all over the world show the existence of synthetic pesticides which might cause cancer. . . This indicates that mothers have eaten food with residues of synthetic pesticide.

**⑦ The technosphere has become sufficiently large and intense to alter the natural processes that govern the ecosphere. (Para 5)**

Human activities have taken place over such large areas and with such intensity that they have already caused disastrous effects on ecology.

**⑧ The human attack on the ecosphere has instigated an ecological counterattack. (Para 5)**

Human beings' damage to natural world will lead to damage to themselves.

**⑨ Indeed, in the evolutionary sense, a good part of the network—the microorganisms and plants, for example—preceded the fish, which could establish itself only because it fitted properly into the preexisting system. (Para 6)**

The fish could play its role because it became a necessary link with the processes preceding it and the processes following it in the ecological system.

**to fit sb. into sth. :** to find or have sufficient space or room for sth. in a place 找到或尚有足够的地方容纳某物

**⑩ A car, for example, imposes itself on the neighborhood rather than being defined by it. . . (Para 7)**

A car does not respond to its environment but insists on its own needs being met...

**⑪ Defined so narrowly, it is no surprise that cars have properties that are hostile to their environment. (Para 8)**

When cars are produced to serve such narrow purposes, it is not surprising that some of their characteristic qualities are harmful to the environment.

**property**: an attribute, quality, or characteristic, esp. as determined by its effects on another substance

**⑫ Yields rose, but not in proportion to the rate of fertilizer application. . . (Para 9)**

The farmer applied more and more fertilizer, and the production did rise, but did not increase at the same rate with the fertilizer.

**⑬ ... year by year, less and less of the applied fertilizer was taken up by the crop and progressively more drained through the soil into groundwater, in the form of nitrates that contaminated river, lakes, and water supplies. (Para 9)**

When the soil is saturated with nitrogen fertilizer, it cannot take in more so the excess fertilizer finds its way into underground water, thus causing water pollution.

**⑭ Crops and the animals to which they are fed are eaten by people; their waste is flushed into the sewer system, altered in composition but not in amount at a treatment plant, and the residue is dumped into rivers or the ocean as waste—which upsets the natural aquatic ecosystem. (Para 11)**

People eat plants and animals, and their waste is flushed into the sewer system. After being processed, the waste is still waste. The residue will go into rivers, oceans and will have harmful effect on the aquatic ecosystem.

**⑮ The energy sources that now power the technosphere are mostly fossil fuels, stores that, once depleted, will never be renewed. (Para 11)**

The energy sources providing power for the technosphere are mostly fossil fuels, which won't be reproduced once used up.

**⑯ Left to their own devices, ecosystems are conservative. . . (Para 12)**

If the ecosystems are not upset by outside intrusion, they will remain the same with very little change. . .

**conservative**: tending to resist changes 保守的; 不愿改变的

**to leave to one's own devices**: to be free to do as one wishes 随心所欲

**⑰ In contrast to the ecosphere, the technosphere is composed of objects and materials that reflect a rapid and relentless process of change and variation. (Para 13)**

The characteristics of the objects and materials in the technosphere are rapid change and great variety.

**⑱ ... living things have created a limited but self-consistent array of substances and reactions that are essential to life. (Para 14)**

... living things have created a limited but independent series of materials and reactions essential to life.

**⑲ In the ecosphere, this is expressed by the idea that "there is no such thing as a free lunch" meaning that any distortion of an ecological cycle, or the intrusion of an incompatible component, leads unavoidably to harmful effects. (Para 15)**

There are always hidden costs even when something appears at first to have no costs. Any damage to the ecosystem will lead to bad effects.

**⑳ Yet nearly every modern technology has grave faults, which appears not as a failure to accomplish its**

designed purpose but as a serious impact on the environment. (Para 15)

The fault of most modern technology is not with its failure to meet the designed purpose but with its adverse effect on the environment.

- ② **Regarded only as a failure in the plant's function, the accident at Chernobyl amounts to a serious but local fire that destroyed the plant. (Para 15)**

If you regard the disaster at Chernobyl as a technical matter, then the disaster can be seen as the destruction of the nuclear plant by a fire.

- ③ **A free lunch is really a debt. In the technosphere, a debt is an acknowledged but unmet cost... (Para 16)**

A free lunch is really a debt. In the technosphere, a debt is admitted but not repaid...

- ④ **In the technosphere, debts are repaid from within and, at least in theory, are always capable of being paid off, or, in some cases, canceled. (Para 16)**

In the economic field, debts are repaid with the production of goods. In this sense, they are repaid within the system. Debts are required to be repaid, unless they are canceled.

- ⑤ **In contrast, when the debts represented by environmental pollution is created by the technosphere and transferred to the ecosphere, they are never canceled; damage is unavoidable. (Para 16)**

In contrast, when the environmental pollution is created by the technosphere and transferred to the ecosphere, the damage cannot be avoided.

- ⑥ **The debts represented by the radioactivity disseminated from the nuclear accident at Chernobyl, and by the toxic chemicals that enveloped Bhopal, have not been cancelled. (Para 16)**

The debts that are represented by the radioactivity and the toxic chemicals have not been dismissed.

- ⑦ **Since the environmental crisis has been generated by the war between the two worlds that human society occupies, it can be properly understood only in terms of their interplay. (Para 18)**

Since the environmental crisis has been caused by the war between the two worlds, it can only be solved in terms of their interaction.

- ⑧ **Of course, as in a conventional war, the issues can be simplified by taking sides: ignoring the interests of one combatant or the other. But this is done only at the cost of understanding. (Para 18)**

If we take sides in the war of the two worlds, we are doing so at the risk of failing to have a clear understanding of the nature and cause of the war. Thus, we lose the chance to really solve the grave environmental crisis.

- ⑨ **If the ecosphere is ignored, it is possible to define the environmental crisis solely in terms of the factors that govern the technosphere: production, prices, and the profits, and the economic processes that mediate their interaction. (Para 18)**

If the ecosphere is ignored, how will environmental crisis be approached? It will be approached in terms of production, prices, profits-factors that govern the economic processes.

- ⑩ **But unlike the conventional marketplace, which deals in goods—things that serve a useful purpose—this scheme creates a marketplace in “bads”—things that are not only useless but often deadly. (Para 18)**

The conventional market deals in good goods, while the scheme deals in bad goods.

作者在此使用了双关修辞手法,利用 good(好的)和 goods(货物)的不同含义,创造了“bads”,表示 bad goods(烂货)。

- ⑪ **... protect all other species from the human marauder by endowing them with “rights”. (Para 19)**

... protect all other species from the human plundering by providing them with “rights”.

to endow ... with ... : to provide sb. naturally with any good quality or ability 赋予某人某种品质或能力

⑪ Of course, at the other extreme is the potentially suicidal view that the enormous value of modern production technology to human society justifies whatever damage to the ecosphere it entails. (Para 21)

Of course, at the other extreme, the would-be dangerous view is that, the enormous value that modern production technology brings to human society makes any damage it brings to the ecosphere reasonable.

⑫ The purpose is less a lament over the war's numerous casualties than an inquiry into how future casualties can be prevented. (Para 23)

The purpose is not to find a culprit for the damage that has been inflicted on the environment but to find a way to avoid future damage.

⑬ It is not so much a battle cry for one side or the other, as a design for negotiating an end to this suicidal war—for making peace with the planet. (Para 23)

The purpose is not to support the ecosphere or the technosphere but to find a way to end the war and to allow peaceful accommodation to the needs of the natural order.

句中 war 使用的是暗喻修辞方法。这一修辞贯穿全篇,用来强调认清自然圈和技术圈冲突的紧迫性。



#### 四、课文译文

### 星球之战

巴里·康芒纳

44

1. 人类生活在两个世界中。和所有的生物一样,我们生存在这个经过 50 多亿年物理、化学、生物变化所形成的地球上,即自然世界。另外一个世界则源于人类的创造,如家庭、汽车、农场、工厂、实验室、食物、服装、书籍、绘画、音乐、诗歌等。我们为人类世界所发生的一切承担责任,却对自然世界的变化无能为力。风暴、干旱、洪水等都是上帝的“手笔”,人类无法控制,也无须负责。

2. 但如今,从全球的角度看,这个界限已被打破。对地球起保护作用的臭氧层出现空洞,全球变暖威胁人类,甚至干旱、洪水、热电波等都可能是人类的无心之过。

3. 正如宇宙的建立,这种预示性的全球事件是影响深远的。它们改变了地球与它的恒星太阳之间的关系。太阳通过两种力量对地球发挥重要作用:重力和太阳辐射。重力是一种使地球轨道绕太阳转的稳定力量。太阳辐射——大部分为可见光和紫外线——是沐浴着地球表层的取之不尽、用之不竭的能量,它会随时间和季节的变化而改变。太阳能为生命进程提供必需的能量:它创造了地球上的气候并支配着庞大而多样的生物群的逐渐进化和当前的行为。我们一直在滥用这股强大的力量,就像传说中的魔术师的徒弟一样,并没有意识到我们的这种行为很可能导致灾难性的后果。

4. 自从人类第一次登月起,我们就一直习惯于如今这平常无奇的地球景象——一个被装点着旋涡状白云的蓝色星球。这真是个壮观的自然天体。隔着那么远的距离,人类活动的明显痕迹无法被察觉。但这种曾无数次展现在照片、海报和广告上的景象都是误导。即使全球变暖这种灾害永不发生,即使臭氧层空洞仍然只是一种深奥的极地现象,人类活动已极大地改变了地球条件,这些也许是用照相机拍不出来的。世界的每个角落都出现了由核爆炸和核能工业的危险剩余物质所产生的辐射现象,那是从前不存在的;烟雾的有害烈焰笼罩在世界大都市的上空;各地都有报道发现母乳中有致癌的合成杀虫剂的

成分;大片大片的森林被砍伐,摧毁了生态小环境,也毁灭了生存在其中的物种。

5. 显而易见,我们需要认识这两个世界间的相互作用:一个是稀薄的地表空气、水、土壤和植物、动物们赖以存在的生态圈;另一个是人造技术圈——它庞大的力量完全配得上这一称号。如此庞大和强烈的技术圈已经改变了控制自然圈的自然进程。接着,被改变了的生态圈也已淹没我们的城市,耗尽我们丰厚的农场资源,污染我们的食物和水源,并毒害我们的身体——使我们丧失供应人类基本需求的能力。人类对生态圈侵害已遭到反击。两大世界正处于交战状态。

6. 我们所居住的两个世界分别受控于不同的规律。生态圈一个最基本的规律可概括为“万物都互相联系”。这说明生态圈是一个精密的网络,其间的每个成员都与其他成员相联系。因此,在海洋生态系统中,鱼不仅是鱼,也不仅是其他鱼的生育者;它还充当有机废料的的生产者,而这些有机废料滋养着微生物甚至水生植物;它又是由植物光合作用生成的氧气的消耗者;它也是寄生虫的栖息地和鱼鹰的猎食对象。鱼并不仅仅是孤立的鱼,它也是网络上的一个要素并限制网络的功能。的确,从进化论的角度上看,网络中的很多成员,比如微生物和植物,都先于鱼而存在。但正因为鱼能适应这一业已存在的系统,它才得以立足。

7. 在技术圈中,成员们即众多形形色色的人造物体之间相对于它们的环境来说关系也不一样。例如,汽车立于社区却不受其限制;同型的汽车可以奔驰在熙熙攘攘的洛杉矶高速公路上,也可以行驶在安静的乡村小路上。汽车被生产出来就是为了出售,就是一种商品,无须考虑它适合于外界条件:交通系统或环境。当然,所有汽车都需要交通通道,并要有合适的闸、灯、喇叭等。但正如洛杉矶或纽约的每个居民所知道的那样,近年来,拥挤的街道和高速公路全都充塞着长龙般的小轿车。而这些小轿车的设计只求迎合买者并使生产商获利,却很少考虑与环境相宜。

8. 若只为迎合买者和生产商,汽车具有不利于环境的性能也就不足为奇了。人们成功地设计出了既舒适又快捷的新型汽车,却从不考虑环境中的必备要素——人类本身和他们对清洁的、无烟空气的需求。

9. 就连技术圈中如此接近自然的农场也遭受到同样的与环境的冲突。作为人造物体,农场仅仅旨在生产农作物。为此,二战后农学家们大力提倡增加化学氮肥料的投入量。生产量增长了,却与肥料投入量不成正比;年复一年,庄稼吸收到的肥料日益减少,投入的肥料大都通过土壤流失到地下水中,并以硝酸盐的形式污染河流、湖泊和淡水供应。仅仅为了提高产量而出售氮肥料,甚至单单为了提高化学工业的利润而生产氮肥料。20世纪50年代引进无机氮肥料时,人们就很少考虑其在土壤/水系统中的生态情况和饮用水中硝酸盐比重提高的危害。

10. 第二条生态规律——“任何事物都会转化成其他事物”——与第一条合起来,体现出自然圈中循环的重要性。例如在水域生态系统中,参与其中的化学要素通过封闭的循环流程来运行。鱼呼吸时产生二氧化碳,接下来,二氧化碳被水生植物吸收并用于光合作用生成鱼呼吸需要的氧气。鱼分泌出含氮的有机化合物;当废料被水生细菌和霉分解时,有机氮就转化为硝酸盐;依次下来,硝酸盐又是水生藻类的必要营养品;水生藻类被鱼吸收后会促成其产生有机废料,这个循环到此完成。在这个封闭的循环系统中,没有真正的“废料”,循环中产生的任何事物都会转化为它物并在下一步被利用。

11. 与生态圈相反,技术圈是由线性流程决定的。农作物和以它们为生的动物被人食用;而它们的废料被冲进下水道,经处置后成分发生了改变但数量没有变化,然后残余部分被倒入河流或海洋中,因此这部分废物便打乱了自然水域生态系统。铀经开采后被加工成用于生产能源的原子燃料,然后变成放射性极强的核废料。为防止污染环境,这些核废料必须被认真保管长达数千年。但迄今为止,保管工作一直效果不佳。现在技术圈运作的能源主要是矿物燃料,一旦用完,永不再生。线性流程的最终后果就是空气污染和全球变暖的威胁。所以,在技术圈中,物质被直线性地转化为废物;农作物转化为污物;铀成为放射性残余;矿物燃料成为二氧化碳。在技术圈中,直线末端永远是废物,是对维持生态圈循环流程的一种侵害。

12. 第三条规律即“自然深知一切”。生态系统内部和谐;各组成部分间相容并共存于一体。经过50亿年这一相当长时期生物进化的反复尝试,终于成就了如此和谐的结构。生态圈的生物部分——生物圈——由经受过考验的生物构成。它们经过准确的调整后能适应自身居住的特殊生态小环境。若生态小环境不被外界打扰,它们将几乎保持不变,进化速度十分缓慢。即使有暂时的变化,比如说兔子的激增,也会很快被狼群重新调整过来。

13. 与生态圈相反,技术圈是由能反映出快速、激烈变化的物体和物质组成。在不到一个世纪的时间里,交通工具不断更新,从马车、T型福特汽车到如今每年不断更新的汽车和飞机。在不长的一段时间里,书写工具便从羽毛笔变成了打字机,直至现在的文字处理器。150年前普通自然物质尿素的实验生产意味着人工合成工业的开端,但很快人们就从这条模仿型的道路转移到生产一系列自然界中从未有过的有机合成物,因此导致与生命化学极不相容。例如尼龙,它不会像植物纤维那样的天然聚合物一样可以进行生物分解——也就是说,在现存的有机生物中还没发现哪种酶可以分解尼龙。所以,若尼龙被遗弃到生态圈,它就会像塑料一样永存。因此,海洋学家目前发现在他们的打捞网中有不少橙色、蓝色和白色的尼龙,在死海龟的消化道里也卡着大张尼龙船用绳索的残留物。在技术圈中,尼龙是一种有用的新商品;但在生态圈中,尼龙没有经过进化的检验,是一个有害的侵犯者。

14. “自然深知一切”是一个概括。在他们进化的几十亿年里,有生命的东西创造了一系列对生命至关重要的数量有限但独立的物质和反应。石油化学制品工业已经偏离了这些限制,生产出数以万计的新型人造物质。既然他们基于与自然合成物相同的碳化学工业的基本模式,这些新的物质往往被认为属于生物化学流程。因此他们就对生命物质发挥了一种暗中为害的作用。事实上,石油化学制品工业生产出的物质——就像貌似人类却极其危险的外星人入侵人类社会一样——狡诈地进入生命化学并对其进行攻击。

15. 最后,有必要从失败的后果上对生态圈和技术圈进行比较。在生态圈里,人们用“没有免费的午餐”来表达这一点,意思是说,任何对生态圈的扭曲,或者是不相容成分的侵入(比如说有毒化学物),都会不可避免地导致恶果。乍一看来,技术圈好像完全没有错误,也就是说,技术进程或产品的失败并非源于某种不可预料事故,而是由于无法做到预期中的事。几乎每种现代技术都有缺陷,但这种缺陷看起来不是无法完成预期目的的失败,而是其对环境的严重影响。汽车总能照常行驶,但它却产生烟雾;电站能有效地发电,却会放射出危险的污染物;现代化学农业卓有成效,但随之而来的硝酸盐污染了地下水,杀虫剂危害了野生动物和人类。即使发生在三里岛和切尔诺贝利的壮观的核灾难相对于其所造成的生态影响来说,也只是一个并不太严重的技术失败。若仅仅被视为工厂运作的失败,切尔诺贝利事故充其量也就相当于当地发生的一次破坏了工厂的严重大火。但随之释放出来的辐射,却使整个欧洲数以千计的人面临患上癌症的威胁。

16. 免费的午餐实际上是一种负债。在技术圈中,债务是指已承认但尚未归还的欠款——比如说抵押在建筑上的押金。这种欠款可以忍受,因为技术圈是个生产系统,如果正常工作,便代表着财富,日后定能还清欠款。在技术领域,债务从内部被偿还,至少在理论上总能还清或者有时会被消除。相反,当债务以技术圈制造的环境污染的形式出现,然后又转嫁到生态圈时,这种债务将永远无法消除。造成破坏是不可避免的。切尔诺贝利核事故泄漏的放射性物质和弥漫在博帕尔的有毒化学物都是无法消除的债务。它们只是被转嫁给其受害者,并以其受害者病亡的形式得以偿还。

17. 既然生活在两个世界中,人们就陷于生态圈和技术圈的激烈冲突中。我们说的“环境危机”——一系列从地方性的倾倒毒物到全球性气候受到破坏,这些关键而又未得到解决的问题——是一种激烈冲突的产物。这种冲突就存在于循环、保守而又和谐的生态圈进程与线性的、创新的却破坏生态和谐的技术圈进程之间。

18. 既然环境危机是由人类社会生存的两大世界的战争所引发,那么要想正确理解它就必须着眼于

二者的相互作用。当然,若是在传统战争中,通过袒护一方就能将问题简单化,即忽视任意一方的利益。但这种做法无法真正解决问题。如果忽略生态圈,就能把环境危机定义在控制技术圈的因素之内:生产、价格、利润及协调它们间相互作用的经济程序。然后还可以制定类似布什总统近日提出的方案,即工厂享有放出少于一定数量的污染物的权利(被仿拟为“自由市场”),并可买卖这些权利。传统市场经营好货——具有一定用途的东西,但这一方案创建了一个市场经营“烂货”——不仅毫无用途还具有致命的危害。除了道德问题,还应指出这一方案仍无法操作,除非执行可以生产污染物的权利——几乎不能消除它们。

19. 若忽略技术圈,就可以将环境危机仅定义在生态范围内。人类将成为生物界一个特有的物种,一个注定要破坏其生存空间的物种。而简单易行的解决方法即:降低人口数量;限制他们占有自然资源的份额;通过赋予其他物种权利来保护它们不受人类屠杀。

20. 这一方法引发了一个深远而又不可避免的道德问题:保护生态圈不受破坏是为了生态圈本身,还是提升依赖于它的人类的幸福感。这又引出一个关于“幸福”的更深层次的问题。一些环保支持者认为:要想提升幸福感,人类就得少依赖技术圈中的人工制品并与区域生态系统更亲密和谐——自烤面包而不买面包;散步或骑车而不开车;居住在小城镇而不是大城市。这种方式就是否认其社会价值,比如说,一位妇女买面包而不自己动手做,却节省时间用在城市博物馆里。而且省时省力技术也不可能与环境的整体性相容。假使技术圈,无论怎样设计,都必定是提供给人们与环保相违背的、生态小环境中不具备的资源。但如我们所见,这种假设是错误的;虽然现存技术圈中几乎每个方面都是与生态相对抗的,但与生态相容的技术必定存在,虽然很少被使用。

21. 单纯的把人认为是生态圈中成分的观点往往会导致极端和非人性的建议。以全球变暖问题为例,人文主义道路强令积极努力阻止其进程,因为全球变暖问题会极大地威胁人类社会:城市被淹没,农业备受干旱之苦和热波延长。但是,若仅从生态方面判断,全球变暖尽管更迅速些但又仅仅是一种全球生态系统的波动,这与伴随上一个后世纪冰川时代的变暖现象相似。从这一点上看,便没有理由再去大力反对全球变暖,而应一如既往地仅仅对冰川时代和全球温度的最终上升表示不快。再远点说,正如一个组织发表的文章《地球第一》中所反映的,这种不人道的立场还会变成反人道的。此文认为,艾滋病的传播能有效地降低人口数量又不会对其他物种造成威胁,因而对其大力支持。当然另一种极端看法是未来毁灭论:认为现代生产技术对人类社会的价值使其可以肆意破坏生态圈。

22. 由我们生存的双重环境引发的多重问题产生了广泛的反应。对人类社会居住的两大世界关系的极端理解——以及间或令人费解的妥协性的立场——有力地证明了我们仍没有正确理解两大系统的冲突,因而也无法解决这一冲突。

23. 理解生态圈与技术圈之间的冲突——与对其做出反应不同——是寻求和平的唯一途径。这样做的目的不是深切哀悼已经造成的损失,而是寻求避免更多损失的方法;不是声讨一方或另一方,而是开辟结束战争的道路——并与地球和平相处。



## 五、练习答案及详解

### I. Vocabulary

A. Look up the following words and phrases. Select the meaning that best suits the sentence in which each appears.

1. to cover with a thick layer
2. the specific space occupied by an organism within its habitat

3. detailed and complicated; carefully prepared and finished
4. an attribute, quality, or characteristic, esp. as determined by its effects on another substance
5. increasingly; by degrees
6. not communicating with or influenced by others
7. any fungus which can produce a downy or furry growth on the surface of organic matter

#### IV. Questions on Appreciation

1. The essay is organized in this order: raising the question; then analyzing the question; finally solving the question

The article can be divided into eight sections.

Section I (Para 1): This is the introductory part in which the author raises the theme that people live in two worlds.

Section II (Paras 2—5): The author explains why the two worlds are at war.

Section III (Paras 6—9): This part deals with the first law of the ecosphere and the law governing the relationship between man-made objects and the surroundings.

Section IV (Paras 10—11): This part deals with the closed cyclical process of ecosphere and the linear process of technosphere.

Section V (Paras 12—14): This part deals with the consistent and harmonious nature of the ecosphere as contrasted to the rapid change and variation of the technosphere.

Section VI (Paras 15—16): The author compares the consequences of failure of the ecosphere and the technosphere.

Section VII (Paras 17—21): Since the two worlds that human society occupies are at war, the issue can only be understood in terms of their interplay. It will be dangerous for us to take sides, ignoring the interest of one combatant or the other.

Section VIII (Paras 22—23): This is the concluding part of the essay. In this section, the author once again stresses the importance of understanding the interplay of the two worlds and on the basis of this understanding, making it our task to find ways to make peace with the planet.

2. The author uses comparison and contrast to bring out the difference of the two spheres. When the author explains the second law, he describes; the second law of ecology—"Everything has to go somewhere"—together with the first, expresses the fundamental importance of cycles in the ecosphere; the technosphere, in contrast, is dominated by linear processes.
3. The author uses many examples in the essay to make his points convincing. To express the fact that "everything is connected to everything else", the author gives us a vivid example of the fish. "In an aquatic system a fish is not only a fish, the parent of other fish; it is also the producer of organic waste that produced photosynthetically by the plants; the habitat of parasites; the fish hawk's prey. The fish is not only, existentially, a fish, but also an element of this network, which defies its functions."
4. The author wants to drive home the importance to understand the interplay of the two worlds and on the basis of understanding, making it our task to find ways to make peace with the planet. He succeeds in doing this, because he can give us both the cause and effect, and provide convincing arguments for his analysis.

#### V. Explain the following in your own words, bringing out any implied meanings.

1. What people do may unintentionally cause droughts, floods and heat waves.



2. The Earth we see in photos, posters, and ads, which appears so beautiful, is not the true reflection of the world we live in; such image lulls us into complacency.
3. Human activities have taken place over such large areas and with such intensity that they have already caused disastrous effects on ecology.
4. The fish could play its role because it became a necessary link with the processes preceding it and the processes following it in the ecological system.
5. When cars are produced to serve such narrow purposes, it is not surprising that some of their characteristic qualities are harmful to the environment.
6. The farmer applied more and more fertilizer, and the production did rise but did not increase at the same rate of the fertilizer.
7. People eat plants and animals, and their waste is flushed into the sewer system. After being processed, the waste is still waste. The residue will go into rivers, oceans and will have harmful effect on the aquatic ecosystem.
8. If the ecosystems are not upset by outside intrusion, they will remain the same with very little change.
9. The characteristics of the objects and materials in the technosphere are rapid change and great variety.
10. If we take sides in the war of the two worlds, we are doing so at the risk of failing to have a clear understanding of the nature and cause of the war. Thus, we lose the chance to really solve the grave environmental crisis.

#### VI. Translate the following into Chinese.

##### A. Phrases

1. 生态小环境以及生活在小环境中的物种
2. 寄生虫的栖息地
3. 鱼鹰的猎食对象
4. 封闭的循环流程
5. 放射性极强的(核)废料
6. 经过精细调整后的适应能力
7. 每年加以改进的汽车
8. 船用尼龙绳索的残留物
9. 有毒化学物

##### B. Sentences

1. 我们一直在滥用这股强大的力量,就像传说中的魔术师的徒弟一样,并没有意识到我们的这种行为很可能会带来灾难性的后果。
2. 即使全球变暖这种灾害永不发生,即使臭氧层空洞仍然只是一种深奥的极地现象,人类活动已极大地改变了全球条件,这些也许是用照相机拍不出来的。
3. 与生态圈相反,技术圈是由线性流程决定的。
4. 现在技术圈运作的能源主要是矿物燃料,一旦用完,永不再生。
5. 尼龙不能进行生物分解——也就是说,在现存的有机生物中还没发现哪种酶可以分解尼龙。
6. ……有生命的东西创造了一系列对生命至关重要的有限但独立的物质和反应。
7. 免费的午餐实际上是一种负债。在技术圈中,债务是指已承认但尚未归还的欠款……
8. ……当债务以技术圈制造的环境污染的形式出现,然后又转嫁到生态圈时,这种债务将永远无法消除。造成破坏是不可避免的。

# Lesson Four

## Nettles



### 一、课文导读

#### (一) 内容梗概

该文叙述了一个中年女子所面临的问题——在现代社会中，任何女人，不论种族、肤色与国籍，都要面临的情欲、迷茫与窘境。

本文的主人公在与丈夫、孩子关系走到困境的特殊时期，偶然遇见了青梅竹马的朋友迈克。她对此重逢感到无比高兴。而这种快乐很快转变成对此男人的朦胧的情感——一种连她自己都无法确定的欲望。在一场突然来临的暴风雨中，他们为了保护自己而深深相拥；风雨过后，他们为了庆祝劫后余生，拥抱并接吻。这时候，迈克告诉她自己内心最深处的秘密，女主人公意识到他正处于情绪最低落的时候。她很高兴她能够成为了解迈克一切的人。在两人之间发生过的以及未发生的使主人公意识到了爱的含义。

#### (二) 背景知识

##### 1. Uxbridge

Uxbridge belongs to the state of Ontario. It is the country economic center of Canada. The city was set up in 1727. Uxbridge is the center of Industry Revolution in history.

##### 2. Toronto

Toronto is the capital of Ontario. With the population of more than 4 million, it is the biggest city of Canada and one of the most important industrial and business centers. Many Chinese immigrants live there.

##### 3. Ottawa

Ottawa, the capital, locates in Eastern Canada. It has a population of 1.07 million. It is also the source of spring tulip.



Toronto



## 二、词汇与短语

### (一) 词汇

#### ① approve /ə'pru:v/ v.

1) to say, show or feel that sth. is good or acceptable or satisfactory 赞成; 认可; 满意; 同意

—She doesn't want to take her new boyfriend home in case her parents don't approve of him. 她不愿意把新男友带回家, 怕父母看不上他。

2) to confirm (sth.); to accept 批准(某事物); 通过

—The minutes of the last meeting were approved. 最后那次会议的记录被认可了。

#### ② beguile /br'gaɪl/ v.

1) to charm (sb.) 迷住某人

—The travelers were beguiled by the beauty of the landscape. 游客对这美丽的景色赞叹不已。

2) to win the attention or interest of sb. 引起某人的注意或兴趣

—He beguiled us with many a tale of adventure. 他讲了许多冒险故事, 我们听得津津有味。

#### ③ bore /bo:/ v.

to make (sb.) feel tired and uninterested by being dull or tedious 使(某人因单调或乏味)感到厌烦

—I've heard all his stories before they bore me. 他的事我以前都听说过了, 那些事真使我厌烦。

【派生】boredom *n.* 令人厌烦的人或事 boring *adj.* 令人厌烦的

#### ④ bother /'bɒðə/ v.

1) to cause trouble or annoyance to sb. 打扰或烦扰某人; 给某人添麻烦 【同义】disturb; perturb

【反义】comfort

—I am sorry to bother you, but could you tell me the way to the station? 对不起打扰一下, 请问去车站怎么走?

2) to concern oneself about sb. / sth. 关心某人/某物

—Don't bother about us—we'll join you later. 别惦记我们——我们不久就和你们在一起了。

【派生】bothersome *adj.* 令人厌烦的

#### ⑤ butt /bʌt/ v.

1) to hit or push (sb. /sth.) with the head 以头撞或顶(某人/某物)

2) to interrupt (sb. /sth.) or interfere (in sth.) 干扰(某人/某物); 干涉

—Don't butt in like that when I am speaking. 我讲话时别这样打断我的话。

#### ⑥ caddy /'kædɪ/ n.

person who carries a golfer's clubs for him during a game 球童(为打高尔夫球者背球杆的人)

#### ⑦ confront /kən'frʌnt/ v.

1) to make sb. face or consider sb. /sth. unpleasant, difficult, etc. 使某人面对或正视令人不快、令人头疼等的人/物

2) (of a difficulty, etc.) to face (sb.) threateningly; to oppose (指困难等) 降临到(某人头上); 面临

【同义】encounter

—the problems confronting us 摆在我们面前的问题

【派生】confrontation *n.* 面对

⑧ convinced /kən'vɪnst/ *adj.*

firm in one's belief 坚信不移的; 有坚定信仰的 【同义】believing

—a convinced Christian 虔诚的基督徒

【词根】convince *v.* 使确信; 说明

⑨ crouch /kraʊtʃ/ *v.*

to lower the body by bending the knees 蹲; 蹲伏 【同义】squat

—The cat crouched, ready to leap. 那只猫弓着身子, 准备扑过去。

⑩ deprivation /ˌdeprɪ'veɪʃən/ *n.*

1) depriving or being deprived 剥夺

—to suffer deprivation of one's rights as a citizen 公民权遭到剥夺

2) thing of which one is deprived 被剥夺的事物

—Missing the holiday was a great deprivation. 错过假日是极大的损失。

【词根】deprive *v.* 剥夺; 阻止

⑪ detach /dɪ'tætʃ/ *v.*

1) to unfasten sth. from sth.; to disconnect sth. 将某物拆下 【同义】undo

【反义】attach; associate

2) to send (a group of soldiers, ships, etc.) away from the main force, esp. to do special duties 派遣 (兵员、舰船等)

【派生】detachable *adj.* 可分开的 detachment *n.* 拆下; 分离

⑫ dovetail /'dɒvteɪl/ *v.*

to join two pieces of wood in this way; to fit together; to combine neatly 以鸠尾榫接合; 吻合

—My plans dovetailed nicely with hers. 我的计划和她的非常吻合。

⑬ hypocrisy /hɪ'pɒkrɪsi/ *n.*

practice of misrepresenting one's real character, opinions, etc., esp. by pretending to be more virtuous than one really is 虚伪 【同义】insincerity

【派生】hypocrite *n.* 伪君子

⑭ matronly /'meɪtrənli/ *adj.*

like or suitable for a matron; sedate 似中老年妇女的; 适于中老年妇女的; 庄重的

—a matronly manner 像老妇人的仪态

⑮ prescribe /prɪ'skraɪb/ *v.*

1) to advise or order the use of (esp. a medicine, remedy, etc.) 建议或吩咐采用 (尤指药物、疗法等); 开药方

—She prescribed some pills to help me to sleep. 她让我吃些药片以利于睡眠。

2) to declare with authority that (sth.) should be done or is a rule to be followed 规定做(某事); 指定遵守(某事)

—The law prescribes heavy penalties for this offence. 法律规定对这种不法行为从严惩处。

【派生】prescription *n.* 药方; 规定

⑯ provocation /ˌprɒvə'keɪʃən/ *n.*

making sb. angry by deliberately doing sth. annoying or offensive; provoking or being provoked

【同义】affront; offense 挑衅; 激怒

—She loses her temper at the slightest provocation. 只要稍一惹她, 她就大发脾气。

⑰ **refrain** /rɪˈfreɪn/ *v.*

to keep oneself from doing sth. 克制;抑制 【同义】abstain 【反义】persist

—to refrain from comment 避免评论

⑱ **reinstate** /ˌriːnˈsteɪt/ *v.*

to restore sb. to a previous position 使某人恢复原先的职位

—to reinstate sb. in the post of manager/ as manager 恢复某人的经理职位

【派生】reinstatement *n.* 复原;复职

⑲ **scrupulous** /ˈskruːpjələs/ *adj.*

1) extremely careful and thorough 极仔细彻底的

—a scrupulous examiner 认真仔细的检查员

2) careful not to do wrong; absolutely honest 审慎的; 极诚实的

【反义】unscrupulous

—scrupulous in all her business dealings (她)对所有交易都十分老实

【派生】scrupulously *adv.* 审慎地;极仔细彻底地

⑳ **squalid** /ˈskwɒlɪd/ *adj.*

very dirty and unpleasant; morally degrading 污秽的;肮脏的;道德败坏的 【同义】sordid

㉑ **squeeze** /skwiːz/ *v.*

to press on (sth.) from opposite sides or all sides 挤; 榨; 捏 【同义】press

【派生】squeezer *n.* 榨汁机

㉒ **stoop** /stuːp/ *v.*

1) to bend forward and down 俯身;弯腰 【同义】bow; bend

2) to lower one's moral standards so far (as to do sth.) 降低自己的道德标准(以致做出某事)

—He tried to make me accept a bribe. I hope I would never stoop so low. 他想让我接受贿赂,但愿我决不至于做出这种低级的事。

㉓ **swamp** /swɒmp/ *v.*

1) to flood or soak sth. with water 淹没或浸泡(某物)

—The sink overflowed and swamped the kitchen. 洗涤槽的水溢出来了,厨房里到处是水。

2) to overwhelm sb. / sth. with a great quantity of things (以繁多的事物) 压倒某人/某物

—I've been swamped with work this year. 今年我工作忙得不可开交。

㉔ **unseemly** /ʌnˈsiːmli/ *adj.*

(of behavior, etc.) not proper or seemly; unbecoming (行为等) 不适当的; 不适宜的; 不得体的

【反义】seemly

—an unseemly rush to leave work 为赶着下班的猴急相

【派生】unseemliness *n.* 不妥

㉕ **vulnerable** /ˈvʌlnərəbl/ *adj.*

1) that can be hurt, wounded or injured 能受伤害的 【反义】invulnerable

—Young birds are vulnerable to predators. 幼小的鸟易受食肉动物伤害。

2) exposed to danger or attack; unprotected 暴露于危险面前的; 易受攻击的

—vulnerable to abuse 易受污辱

【派生】vulnerability *n.* 弱点;责难

㉖ **wriggle** /ˈrɪɡl/ *v.*

1) (to cause sth.) to make quick, short, twisting and turning movements (使某物)扭动,蠕动

—Stop wriggling and sit still. 不要扭来扭去,坐着别动!

2) to avoid (doing) an unpleasant task by being cunning or by making excuses 找借口避免(做讨厌的工作)

—It's your turn to take the dog for a walk—don't try to wriggle out of it. 轮到你遛狗了——别想逃避不做。

## (二) 短语

### ① to take shape

to develop towards completion 形成; 成形

—An idea slowly took shape in his mind. 一个想法在他的头脑里逐渐形成。

### ② to line up

to form into a row, side by side or one behind the other (使)排列成行

—Line up the glasses and I'll fill them. 把玻璃杯排好,我来把它们倒满。

### ③ to pack up

1) to finish work 收工; 完成工作

—As business was slack, she packed up early. 由于生意清淡,她早早就收工了。

2) to stop 停止

—He packed up his job after three months. 三个月后,他就放弃那份工作了。

### ④ to put on weight

to become fatter 增重

—She has put on weight since I last saw her. 自上次我见她以来,她变胖了。

### ⑤ to flush out

to clean or drive out by a sudden flow of water 冲洗; 冲出

—The waste pipe is blocked; try flushing it out with hot water. 污水管堵住了,用热水冲冲看。

### ⑥ to throw up

to stop doing 放弃; 停止做

—I hear you've thrown up your job. 我听说你辞去了那份工作。

### ⑦ to launch out

to make an important new beginning 开始; 着手

—He left his father's shop and launched out into business for himself. 他离开父亲的商店,开始自己创业。

### ⑧ to be supposed to do

to have a duty or responsibility to do sth. 应该做某事

—Everybody is supposed to bring a bottle to the party. 每个人都要带一瓶酒参加酒会。

### ⑨ to be compelled to do sth.

to have to do sth. 必须做某事

—Employees are compelled to join the company's pension plan after a year's service. 雇员在服务一年后必须加入公司的退休金计划。

### ⑩ to be confronted with

to force to deal with or accept the truth of 使不得不面对

—When she was confronted with the evidence, she admitted that she was guilty. 当不得不面对证据时,她承认自己是有罪的。

⑪ to run over

to knock down and pass over the top of 撞倒并碾过

—He was run over and killed by a bus. 他被公共汽车轧死了。

⑫ to get over

1) to return to one's usual state 恢复过来

—He's just getting over an illness. 他刚刚病愈。

2) to do and reach the end 结束;做完

—You'll be glad to get your operation over. 手术做完了,你会高兴的。

⑬ to be delighted with sth.

to be very pleased or satisfied 对……感到高兴

—I was delighted with the presents my parents bought for me. 我对父母买给我的礼物感到非常高兴。



### 三、课文注释

①... we needed a good supply of water for our penned animals... (Para 3)

... we needed sufficient water for feeding our domestic animals...

②... went to whatever school was at hand. (Para 5)

... went to the school which was near.

at hand: near in space or time 临近的

③ Mike and I climbed into the cab when it rained, and the rain washed down the windows and made a racket like stones on the roof. (Para 6)

When it rained, Mike and I climbed into the cab of the truck, and the rain washed down the windows and made a loud noise as if stones were falling on the roof.

cab: A taxi can be called a cab. But here the cab is the part of a truck or bus in which the driver sits.

④ Each of the trees on the place had an attitude and a presence—the elm looked serene and the oak threatening, the maples friendly, the hawthorn old and crabby. (Para 7)

On our farm, every tree had its own character—the elm was quiet, the oak was bossy, the maple was kind, and the hawthorn was grumpy.

此句运用了拟人手法,表现出主人公与自然亲近和谐的关系。

⑤ The river in August was almost as much a stony road as it was a watercourse. (Para 8)

In late summer seasonal dryness had shrunk the flow of water in the stream.

watercourse: a stream of water, river, brook

⑥ ... plowing through mats of flat-leaved water lilies, trapping our legs in their snaky roots. (Para 8)

... moving hard through water lilies which had flat leaves, twisting our legs in the winding roots.

to plow through: to move with a lot of effort or force

⑦ ... so that she could drag him away and dress his wounds as quickly as possible. (Para 10)

... in this case, the girl could pull the boy out of the game, clean and cover the wound as soon as possible.

to drag: to pull along with great effort 用力拖

to dress: to clean and cover a wound 包扎伤口

- ⑧ There was a keen alarm when the cry came, a wire zinging through your whole body, a fanatic feeling of devotion. (Para 10)

When Mike called my name, I would be much nervous, with a kind of contribution.

- ⑨ He lay limp and still while I pressed slimy large leaves to his forehead and throat and—pulling out his shirt—to his pale tender stomach, with its sweet and vulnerable belly button. (Para 10)

At this point of the game, the boy was supposed to be wounded, and by pressing slimy large leaves to his forehead, his throat and his stomach, the girl was pretending to dress his wounds.

belly button: 肚脐

- ⑩ The game disintegrated, after a long while, in arguments and mass resurrection. (Para 11)

After a long while, the game broke up with the children arguing, probably about which side had won, and those who were supposed to have been killed all came back to life.

resurrection: coming back to life 复活

- ⑪ One morning, of course, the job was all finished, the well capped, the pump reinstated, the fresh water marvelled at. (Para 12)

It's expected that one day the well-drilling was finished with capped well, reset pump and pouring water.

to cap: to put a cover on the well

to marvel at sth.: to show great surprise or admiration 大为惊异

- ⑫ The laugh had a lonely boom in it, as if he were still down the well. (Para 12)

His laugh was extremely deep with loneliness. It seemed that he still worked at the bottom of the well.

boom: a deep, hollow, resonant sound

- ⑬ How all my own territory would be altered, as if a landslide had gone through it and skimmed off all meaning except loss of Mike. (Para 13)

I didn't expect that Mike's leaving would have such a tremendous power that it would change the meaning of my existence completely. All my thoughts were about loss of Mike.

territory 和 landslide 是比喻的说法,主人公把自己的生活比做自己的领域,把迈克的离去比做毁灭性的山崩。

to skim off: to remove 清除

- ⑭ In my kitchen or in hers, once a week or so, distracted by our children and sometimes reeling for lack of sleep, we stoked ourselves up on strong coffee and cigarettes and launched out on a rampage of talk—about our marriages, our fights, our personal deficiencies, our interesting and discreditable motives, and our forgone ambitions. (Para 19)

Almost every week we would gather once in her kitchen or mine. Our children always continuously disturbed us. Sometimes we felt dizzy because of sleepiness, and then we sought energy by drinking many cups of coffee and smoking cigarettes. We focused on various topics including marriage, our struggle, shortcomings, our funny and disgraceful intentions as well as our past aspiration.

to reel for lack of sleep: to feel dizzy; to have a sensation of spinning or whirling, because of lack of sleep

rampage: an outbreak of violent or raging behavior 撒野



discreditable; damaging to one's reputation or status 可耻的;丢脸的

- ⑮ During that time of life that is supposed to be a reproductive daze, with the woman's mind all swamped by maternal juices, we were still compelled to discuss Simone de Beauvoir and Arthur Koestler and "The Cocktail Party". (Para 19)

In the stupefying and confusing condition that young mothers were stereotypically supposed to be in, we continued to discuss literary and intellectual matters.

Simone de Beauvoir; French novelist and essayist

Arthur Koestler; Hungarian-born English novelist, journalist and essayist

"The Cocktail Party": A verse play written in 1949 by T. S. Eliot (1888—1965); the play is contemporary drawing-room comedy about marriage and love affairs.

- ⑯ ... a long necessary voyage from the house of marriage. (Para 21)

... a needed also tough escape from the confinement of marriage.

- ⑰ Accusations, confessions of misery... (Para 23)

In their angry outburst, the girls admitted that they were miserable and blamed their mother for causing their misery.

- ⑱ ... I would be frightened, not of any hostility but of a kind of nonexistence. (Para 25)

... I would be full of fear, and my fear was not caused by my neighbors' noisy and violent way of life, but by a feeling that compared to them I did not really exist.

- ⑲ She did not ask me—was it delicacy or disapproval?—about my new life. (Para 29)

She did not ask me about my new life, either out of subtle consideration for my feeling about this sensitive subject or out of disapproval for my new life style.

delicacy; a sensitive diplomacy or, sometimes, finicky distaste for what is considered improper or offensive

- ⑳ ... I was full of happy energy. (Para 38)

... I was full of energy because I felt so happy.

此句运用了通感的修辞手法,虽然 happy 用在 energy 前,但实际上它用来修饰 I。

- ㉑ Sunny had given him fresh sheets rather than unmaking and making up again the bed he had left for me. (Para 47)

Sunny had given him clean sheets instead of taking away used bed sheets from his bed and spreading clean sheets over the bed for me.

- ㉒ It would be a sleazy thing to do, in the house of his friends. (Para 49)

It would be a morally low thing to have an extra-marital affair in the house of his friends.

sleazy; morally low, indecent 肮脏的;格调低下的

- ㉓ My sleep was shallow, my dreams monotonously lustful, with irritating and unpleasant subplots. (Para 49)

I didn't sleep peacefully that night, thinking about Mike with sexual desire.

lustful; feeling or showing strong sexual desire 好色的;充满情欲的

subplot; a plot or a set of events that is less important than the main plot and separate from the main plot in the story 次要情节

- ㉔ It might be that he thought it unseemly to talk of our partners or our children, under the circumstances. (Para 64)

It seemed that he thought it improper to talk of our spouses or kids when we were alone.

②⑤The bushes right at the edge of the grass looked impenetrable, but close up there were little openings, the narrow paths that animals or people looking for golf balls had made. (Para 72)  
There were bushes beside the grass. So it seemed that we could not pass through. However, when you went near, the narrow paths would be seen. They were made by animals or people who looked for golf balls.

②⑥It looked as if a large portion of the sky had detached itself and was bearing down, bustling and resolute, taking a not quite recognizable but animate shape. (Para 72)

It seemed that, most of the sky separated from the whole. It moved quickly towards the ground with noise. The shape was ambiguous, but it looked like animal life.

to bear down; to move quickly towards someone in a threatening way

animate; living, having life, esp. animal life 活的; 有生命的

②⑦Stooping, butting his head through the weeds and against the wind, Mike got around in front of me, all the time holding on to my arm. (Para 74)

Mike bent and pushed his head through the weeds in the wind. He protected me from the storm with his own body for a certain time.

②⑧... the miniature rivers already breaking up the earth around our feet. (Para 74)

... the small brooks already dispersing the soil by our feet.

miniature; on or done on a very small scale; diminutive; minute

to break up; to disperse; to scatter 冲散

②⑨Our shirts and slacks were stuck fast to our bodies. (Para 75)

Our shirts and slacks firmly stuck to our bodies.

fast; firm, fixed, not easily removed 紧紧地; 牢牢地

③①This was more of a ritual, a recognition of survival rather than of our bodies' inclinations. (Para 75)

They did this as a spontaneously shared set form. It was not because of their physical desire but the realization of their success.

ritual; a set form or system of rites, religious or otherwise 仪式; 例行习惯

inclination; a particular disposition or bent of mind; tendency; a more or less vague mental disposition

toward some action, practice, or thing 趋势; 倾向

③②It had a weight to it, a warning—determination edged with apology. (Para 79)

It sounded heavy with a warning and determination to apologize.

③③I knew now that he was a person who had hit rock bottom. (Para 88)

I got to know that he was a person who had experienced the worst in life, the hardest experience a person might have to endure.

rock bottom; the lowest level or point 最低点

③④He and wife knew that together and it bound them, as something like that would either break you apart or bind you, for life. (Para 88)

He and his wife experienced the worst together and knew the meaning of that experience. Their marriage would be strengthened or their friendship would be broken and they would be driven apart.

to bind; to stick/tie together 捆绑, 粘合在一起

③⑤I was a person who knew—that was all. A person he had, on his own, who knew. (Para 90)

I was a person he could confide his deepest secrets to. I was his soul mate.

⑥ Not risking a thing yet staying alive as a sweet trickle, an underground resource. (Para 94)

They wouldn't do that or go further in their relationship, but they would rather let their love remain as a sweet trickle, which would flow on gently and permanently, and as an underground resource, which would never be fully tapped but would never go dry.

trickle: a thin slow flow or movement 涓流;细流



#### 四、课文译文

### 荨麻子

艾丽斯·芒罗

1. 1979年的夏天,我来到好朋友赛妮在安大略省的欧克斯桥的家中度假。在她家的厨房,我见到了在灶台旁正忙于做番茄酱三明治的他。

2. 几年后,我坐在另一个男子的车里围绕着多伦多东北部的山区,寻找那幢房子。我试着找到它所在的街道,但从未成功过。那房子可能已经被推倒。在我拜访过她们的几年后,赛妮和丈夫就把房子卖掉了。只因为它离他们在渥太华的住处太远,不便作为夏天度假之地。

3. 在我儿时所在的乡下,夏天井水经常干涸。尽管我家的井已经是最深的,但是父亲圈养的银狐、水貂需要相当大的供水量。所以有一天掘井人带着给人深刻印象的掘井设备,开始了他的工作——将井深一直扩充到地下有水的地方。从那时起,无论天气多干燥,我们都可以任何时间用泵摇出纯净冰凉的地下水。在水泵上有一个锡制的杯子,当我在灼热的天气,用它来喝水的时候,我就想象着水流经过黑色的岩石如耀眼的黑宝石。

4. 掘井人名叫迈克·麦卡乐姆。他住在离我们农场很近的镇上的克拉克旅馆。他春天到我们这来,将这附近的能找到的活都干完就会离开,继续到别处去。

5. 迈克有一个儿子,和父亲一起就近住在旅馆或寄宿公寓,并就近上学读书。他也叫迈克·麦卡乐姆。那时他9岁,我8岁。

6. 迈克的父亲总是驾着一辆脏兮兮的深红色的卡车。下雨的时候,我和迈克就爬到驾驶舱里,雨水打在车窗上有很大的声响,听起来就像是石块儿打在屋顶上。车里充满着男人的气息——他们的工作服、工具、烟草以及脏靴子和发出酸奶酪气味的袜子。还有湿漉漉的长毛狗,因为我们把我的狗兰杰也带进来了。有一天,我们把兰杰带出来,它去追赶一只臭鼬,那只臭鼬调过头向它喷射。妈妈不得不立即停下手里的活,驾车到镇上去买了几大罐子番茄汁,迈克把兰杰哄到盆里,然后我们把番茄汁倾倒在它身上,再用刷子刷它的毛发。看起来就好像我们在用鲜血给它洗澡。

7. 我家的农场很小——9英亩。正是因为它足够小,我可以透彻地研究发掘每个细节。这里的每一棵树都表现出某种神态。比如,榆树看上去宁静安详,橡树则咄咄逼人,枫树亲切友好,而山楂树则老气横秋、脾气暴躁。甚至河岸上的坑凹都有他们明显的特征。

8. 八月的河是条水道,几乎也是一条石头路。我和迈克光着脚,趟着河水,蹦着从一个雪白光滑的石块儿上跳到另一个上,滑倒在水面下的脏石头上。于是我们吃力地在一团团长着扁平叶子的睡莲中蹚行,两腿陷在弯曲的睡莲根中。

9. 我在远离农场的乡村学校读书,并且迈克自春天就已经去了镇上的学校,所以镇上的男孩儿和迈克都熟悉起来。在河岸上更远处还有镇上的女孩儿。她们可能是尾随着男孩子从镇上来到这里,但又

要装做并不是跟着他们来的,再或者是男孩子企图欺负她们尾随而来的。但无论如何,他们一起来了,游戏也就初具规模了。这是一个战争的游戏。男孩儿们分成两队,然后躲在由树枝、水草支成的障碍物后开始他们的战斗。主要的武器就是棒球大小的泥球。你需要用力将黏土捏成球状,每一个球只能掷一次,所以需要许多这种球。

10. 同男孩子一样,女孩儿们也分成两队。每个女孩儿都有她自己的一堆球,并且为特定的士兵服务。当某个士兵受伤时,他将喊出某个特定女孩儿的名字,那么这个女孩儿便会把他拉走,然后以最快的速度帮他包扎伤口。我当然就是帮迈克制造武器的,而当他受伤时所喊的女孩儿也就是我。当他喊我的名字时,我会紧张万分,全身蹭地就像过了电似的,一种狂热的忠诚感油然而生。当迈克受伤的时候,他总是闭着双眼。他无力地躺着,一动不动,我则把黏的大叶子拍在他的额头和喉咙上,还要撩起他的外衣,拍在他的白嫩的肚皮上,那上长着可爱而易受攻击的肚脐。

11. 游戏没有胜者可言。当大家玩过一段时间,就会在争执谁是胜者中结束,而刚刚在战争中阵亡的战士也将复活。在回家的路上,我们平躺在河水里,试着把身上的泥土冲掉。我们的外衣被弄得又脏又湿,一直滴着水。

12. 终于有一天早晨,所有掘井工作都完成了,这是意料中的事。井上了盖子,水泵重新安装好了,大家对清新的井水赞叹不已。那辆卡车也没有来。中午吃饭时餐桌边少了两张椅子。回想以前我们吃饭时,迈克和我很少注视对方。他喜欢把番茄酱涂到面包上。迈克的父亲同我的父亲交谈,而内容大都关于掘井、事故以及地下水位。我父亲称他是一个严谨的人,全心倾注于工作。迈克的父亲几乎每次说完话,都会大笑。他的笑声深沉孤独,带着回音,似乎他还在井底干活一样。

13. 到头来,这是这位掘井人在我们村上的最后一项活儿。其他地方还有很多工作在等着他。所以他希望能趁着好天气,赶到那些地方去。事情对于以他这种方式生活的人来说很简单,只需要收拾收拾行李,离开旅馆就可以了,这也正是他所做的。我早就知道总有一天迈克将离开,我会接受他的离去。只是直到迈克真的离开,我都无法想象,他离开后会是怎样的情形。我的世界里,就像发生了山崩,除了迈克的离去,其余的所有记忆都被冲掉了。

14. 几周后的某一天,我陪母亲去鞋店试鞋。当我站在鞋店门口时,听见一个女人跑过商店,喊着“迈克”。突然间我认为她就是迈克的母亲。我跑出了鞋店,希望马上就可以见到他。

15. 那个女人撵上了一个大约5岁的小男孩儿。一个太普通的名字。那是一个傻傻的男孩儿,有一张扁平的脸,脏脏的金发。我的心咚咚地跳个不停,就像是胸腔在咆哮。

16. 1979年的夏天,赛妮在欧克斯桥的客车站接我。她是一个靓丽的女子,银棕色的卷发用不对称的梳子别着。即便当她发胖时——现在她确实是胖了——她看上去也不像是结了婚的女人,而像是带有几分庄重的女孩子。

17. 她还是像往常一样,把我卷入她的生活,告诉我她还以为自己会迟到,因为女儿克莱尔早上把臭虫放进自己的耳朵,她不得不带她到医院把虫子冲洗出来。后来,一条狗又在她家厨房的台阶上呕吐,约翰斯顿便让孩子们把它洗干净,因为他们原本就想要一条狗。

18. “要不我们找一个安静漂亮的地方,喝上几杯,不醉不归?”她说道,“可是,我们得……”约翰斯顿邀请了一个朋友,恰好那个朋友的妻子和孩子都回爱尔兰了,所以他俩要去打高尔夫球。

19. 我和赛妮是几年前在温哥华相识的。我们俩的怀孕期正好前后相接,所以我们能够共用一套孕妇服。我们大约每周都要在我家或她家厨房小聚一次。孩子们总是不断打扰我们,有时我们还会因为缺觉而感到头晕目眩,于是我们就用大量的浓咖啡和香烟给自己提神,开始天南海北地聊天,所谈的话题无所不包:我们的婚姻、奋斗、个人的不足、既有趣又有些丢脸的动机,以及我们曾有过的理想抱负。我们同时读章恩的书,试图不丧失我们的梦想。就在那样一段时间里,我们虽然忙于照看孩子,应该处在一种生产带来的恍惚忙碌中,我们被迫去讨论着斯蒙波伍、阿瑟·凯斯特勒以及《鸡尾酒会》。

20. 如今,我们都搬离了温哥华。只不过赛妮是和丈夫、孩子、家居用品一起以一种正常的方式搬走的。原因也很正常——她的丈夫换了工作。而我搬家的原因却很新奇,而且也只有某些特定的人才能理解。我离开了丈夫和房子以及所有婚姻生活中所必需的东西(当然,除此之外,还有孩子,他们会定期来到我身边)。我希望可以过一种没有虚伪、不丧失自我、不感到羞辱的生活。

21. 我现在住在多伦多的一幢房子的二楼。楼下的住户是在12年前从特立尼达岛搬来的。街道上老式砖结构的房子里居住的都是微褐色皮肤的人。他们以一种我不熟悉的方式说着英语,空气中从早到晚弥漫着这些人又辣又甜的烹饪气味。我对这一切都很满意。因为这一切让我感觉自己真的改变了,这是为摆脱婚姻的禁锢而必须踏上旅途。但是对于我的10岁和12岁的女儿来说,要想让她们同我有一样的感觉是不现实的。她们在暑假初来到我这里,本打算要待上整整两个月。她们觉得这街道的气味令人作呕,这里的噪音令人发怵。

22. 刚开始,她们没有抱怨。大女儿对小女儿说:“让妈妈觉得我们很快乐,不然她会不开心的。”

23. 后来终于爆发了。小女儿埋怨,哭诉着:“为什么你不在家里住?”大女儿辛酸地告诉她说:“因为妈妈恨爸爸。”

24. 我打电话给丈夫——他问我近乎同样的问题,而他自己也给出了近乎一样的答案。我给孩子们换了票,帮她们收拾东西,送她们到飞机场。当我独自回来的时候,我把所有与她们有关的、可能唤起对她们记忆的东西收集在一起塞进垃圾袋里。而当我想起她们的时候,几乎也做同样的事,将我的思绪完全封闭。与男人有关的苦痛我可以忍受,而与孩子有关的苦痛我不能忍受。

25. 孩子们走后,我又恢复到以往的生活。我早晨不再做早饭,每天都到意大利便利店去喝咖啡,吃新出炉的面包卷。回到家以后,我就会坐在前边阳台的大窗户旁的木桌旁,花上几个小时来写东西。窗户外天色渐暗,后院的集会将会开始,先是音乐声、喊叫声和挑衅声,之后可能会发出吵闹声、打架声。我会感觉到害怕,不是因为人们之间的不友好,而是因为我感到自己不复存在。

26. 在这些情绪的笼罩下,我拨通了赛妮的电话,并且获得她的邀请,可以在乡下度过周末。

27. “这里很漂亮。”我说。但是这沿途的乡村对于我来讲并没有什么意义。山峰是一块块绿色的斑点,时而夹杂着牛群。被水草覆盖的小溪上架着许多矮矮的混凝土桥,大棵的卷成堆的干草堆在田地里。

28. “等见到房舍就好了。”赛妮说,“这里实在不太令人赏心悦目。”

29. 她并没有询问我的新生活,或是缘于不便提起,或是出于对我的新生活的不赞同。即使是她问了,我也会说谎,至少会编一部分谎话。和过去的生活决裂是很难的,但也是我必须做的。我非常想念孩子们,但总该付出代价。我正在学着解放一个男人以及我自己。我正在学着轻率地对待性的问题,而这对于我又很艰难,因为我起初并非如此,并且我已不再年轻。但是我正在努力。

30. 房屋的砖结构上留下被拆倒的阳台的痕迹。赛妮的儿子们在院子里疯闹嬉戏着。上次与赛妮见面时刚出生的3岁的小女儿,从厨房跑出来,停在我们面前,很惊奇地看着我这个陌生人。

31. 赛妮抱起她,我提起行李袋,我们一起走进厨房。厨房里,迈克·麦卡乐姆正在给面包涂番茄酱。

32. “是你。”我和迈克几乎异口同声地说。我们笑着,奔向对方,握住对方的双手。

33. “我还以为是你父亲。”我说。

34. 约翰斯顿背着高尔夫球袋走进厨房,对我打声招呼,并催促迈克加快速度。赛妮告诉他说:“亲爱的,他们彼此认识,真没想到他们会彼此认识。”

35. “当我们还是孩子的时候。”迈克说。

36. 约翰斯顿说:“真的吗?太棒了!”

37. 我和迈克仍然看着彼此,继续笑着。我们似乎要证实我们的重逢的确是赛妮和约翰斯顿所意识的那样意想不到。对于我们来讲,的确是个奇迹。

38. 在这两个男人外出的整个下午,我都饱含着快乐与兴奋的情绪。我为晚餐准备了一个蜜桃派,给克萊尔读书听,让她可以乖乖地睡一小觉。

39. 迈克的记忆同我的完全不同。但我们都记得泥球和我们的战争游戏。我们一起洗碗,以便可以一起尽情地聊天并不显鲁莽。

40. 我告诉他,我和丈夫分手了,现在住在多伦多,孩子们刚在我那住过一阵,现在正和他们的父亲一起度假。

41. 他告诉我,他住在金斯顿,但也是刚去不久。最近通过工作认识了约翰斯顿,他和约翰斯顿一样也是土木工程师。他的妻子是爱尔兰人,在加拿大工作时和迈克相识,是一名护士。现在带着孩子回爱尔兰探亲。

42. “家里几个孩子?”

43. “3个。”

44. 刷完碗之后,我们来到前屋和孩子们一起玩纵横拼字游戏。玩了一局,就到了睡觉时间,但孩子们一再要求再玩一局。约翰斯顿让孩子们结束游戏,他们很听话。但是格雷戈里想去看星星。“这是我们唯一可以看到星星的地方。”他说,“在家的時候,到处都是灯光和乌烟瘴气。”

45. “好吧。”约翰斯顿说道。然后我们就都来到室外,一起看星星。我们寻找靠近北斗七星第二颗星的飞行员星。“要是谁找到那颗星,说明他的眼力足够好,好到可以当空军士兵了。”约翰斯顿说。

46. 迈克站在我的一边,稍微靠前一点。事实上,他靠赛妮比靠我更近一点。我们身后没有人,我想靠近他——仅仅轻轻地或是偶然地擦到他的胳膊或肩膀。然后如果他没有躲闪——出于礼貌,或没有在意——我想用手指碰一下他露出的脖子。如果他站在我后面,会不会也有同样的想法?他会不会本来就是专注于此,而不是天上的星星?但是,我感觉,他是很谨慎的人,他不会这样做。

47. 前一天晚上,迈克睡在客房。但今晚他要住到楼下前屋的折叠沙发床上。赛妮给他准备了新床单,也把他换给我的床重新铺好了。

48. “他挺干净的,”她说,“毕竟他是你的老朋友。”

49. 躺在他躺过的床单上,我并没有享有一个安逸的晚上。我知道即使风险很小,他也不会来找我。在他朋友的家里,那的确是很不应该的事。并且他也无法了解我的想法,就像我无法确定他的想法一样。直到现在,我一直可以认为自己是一个对自己的性伙伴忠诚的女人。我睡得很浅,没完没了地做着充满情欲的梦,中间还穿插着令人不快的小情节。一整个晚上——或者说至少是每当我醒来的时候——蟋蟀在窗外叫个不停。起初我以为是鸟儿,我已经在城市里住了太久,已经忘记了蟋蟀可以发出瀑布般的叫声。

50. 第二天早上,大家都被邀请到某位邻居的房子里去用餐,房子的主人还拥有一个游泳池。迈克说如果可以的话,他宁愿只到高尔夫球场去转转。

51. 赛妮说道,“当然可以。”随即看着我。我说:“嗯,我不知道如果我——”迈克打断我:“你不打高尔夫球,是吗?”

52. “不打。”

53. “那你可以来帮我拿球袋。”

54. 约翰斯顿在我们离开前就警告我们要下雨了。迈克说我们要冒个险。我喜欢他说“我们”。并且我喜欢乘车坐在他身边,坐在妻子的位置。当感觉和他是一对儿时,我就会感到快乐——一种像少女一样轻浮的快乐。这种为人妻的想法让我迷迷糊糊的,就好像我从来没当过妻子一样。

55. 我说我想爱尔兰是美丽的。

56. “有些地方是荒芜的。光秃秃的石头。”

57. “你妻子是在那儿长大的?她有那种美妙的口音吗?”

58. “如果你能听到她说话,你会这样认为的。但当她从那儿回来时,人们告诉她那口音已经没有了,她听起来就像个美国人。美国人常如此说——他们对加拿大人并不反感。”

59. “那你的孩子呢?——我猜他们听起来没有一点儿爱尔兰口音。”

60. “没有。”

61. “那都是男孩儿还是女孩儿?”

62. “两个男孩儿,一个女孩儿。”

63. 我急于告诉他我生活中的矛盾、痛苦和需要。我说:“我想我的孩子们。”

64. 然而他什么也没说,没有同情的话,没有鼓励。可能他认为在这种环境下谈论我们的伴侣和孩子是不合适的。

65. 不久之后我们把车停到了俱乐部旁边的停车场。他去办公室买了门票。

66. 我从来没去过高尔夫球场,只在电视上看过一两次高尔夫球比赛。我知道一些俱乐部被称为铁头联盟,而球场本身则被称为海边球场。当我告诉他这一切后,迈克说:“也许你会觉得很乏味的。”

67. “如果真是那样,我会出去走走。”

68. 这话似乎让他很高兴。他把温暖的手放在我的肩膀上说:“你会的。”

69. 我的无知并没产生什么——当然,我也没真的去拿什么球袋——我没觉得乏味。我所有要做的事就是跟着他转转并看着他。

70. 一直走着,我们几乎没说什么。有时候,迈克沿着球场望去,望到云彩由深蓝变白的地方,然后他无警示或失望地说:“那种天气来了。”他便开始有条不紊地收拾他的包。

71. 我们不久便尽可能地远离了俱乐部。鸟儿们在头上亢奋且优柔寡断地盘旋着。树冠开始摇晃起来,有种声音——仿佛就在我们头顶——那声音就像是卷着石块的海浪冲击着海滩。迈克说,“那好吧,我们最好到这来。”他拉着我的手匆忙穿过干草堆冲进灌木丛和高高的野草里。

72. 紧挨着草地边上的灌木丛看上去似乎无法穿过,但走近了可以看到一些小缺口和窄窄的小径,这是被动物或者找高尔夫球的人踩出来的。地面微微向下倾斜,我们能看见一点点河水。河水呈现出钢铁般的铅灰色,似乎正在翻滚着。我们与河水间是一片杂草地,生机盎然——秋麒麟,带着红黄铃铛的风仙花,我脑子里尽是略带粉红色及紫色的一簇簇盛开的荨麻和野紫菀。甚至根茎最脆弱看起来很复杂的植物也长得和我们一样高或者高出我们的头顶。当我们停下脚步,抬头从这些植物中望出去时,我们发现午夜的云彩里某样东西正在靠近。是真正的雨,紧随噼噼啪啪的雨点而来。看上去,天空的大部分似乎脱离了主体,喧闹着、果断地压向地面,那形状虽然说不出具体像什么,但像是一种活物的样子。瓢泼大雨——不是毛毛细雨,而是狂风暴雨——在那之前席卷而来。当我们俩都感觉到轻轻慵懒的雨点时,我们就能清楚地看到它们。就好像我们正在透一扇窗子望过去,且直到窗子真的碎了,风雨开始侵袭我们时才肯相信这一切。我的头发被搅得一团糟,我觉得好像我的皮肤接下来也会变成那样。

73. 后来我试图转过身来——我有种从未感觉过的冲动,冲出灌木丛一直奔向俱乐部会所。但我动不了。能站着就很艰难了——在野外这种狂风能把人迅速击倒。

74. 迈克弯着腰,用头顶过杂草迎着风,转到我前面,一直扶着我的胳膊。然后他面向我,把身体挡在我与暴风雨之间。他说了一些什么,正对我的脸,可我听不见。现在他抱住了我的双臂,双手向下紧紧握住了我的手腕。他把我拽倒——我们两个都摇摇晃晃的了,当时我们都试图换个位置——那样我们就能紧靠地面蹲下来。我们靠得太近几乎都看不到对方了——我们只能看着下面被压扁了的植物和我们已经浸透了的鞋子。暴雨形成的小河冲散了我们脚下的泥土。这时,迈克松开了我的手腕,用双手紧紧扣住了我的肩膀。他的碰触更像种管制而不是安慰。

75. 我们一直保持这样,直到狂风过去。这一切不超过5分钟,也许只有两三分钟。雨仍在下着,但

现在只是普通的大雨了。他松开了手，我们颤颤巍巍地站了起来。我们的衬衫和裤子紧紧地贴在身上。我们试图微笑，可几乎连一丁点儿力气都没有了。后来我们简单地拥抱亲吻了对方。我们拥抱并不是出于身体的渴望，而是庆祝劫后余生的一种表示。我们的唇相互间轻轻滑过，润滑且冰凉。拥抱的压力使我们轻轻地颤抖，雨水从我们的衣服中被挤落。

76. 渐渐地，雨开始变小了。我们在几乎被压平的杂草中艰难地行进，后来又经过被雨水浸透的茂密的灌木丛。大树枝被刮得满高尔夫球场都是。雨几乎停了，天晴了。在我抬头仰望那令人欢快的阳光之前，我已经感受到它的光热正照射在我的肩膀上。

77. 我静静地站着，深深地吸了口气。现在是我们饮酒庆祝安全并且面对光明的时候了。现在得说点什么了。

78. “有些事我没跟你提起过。”

79. 他的声音让我有些惊讶，就像太阳的出现。相反，他的声音有些沉重——带有一种警告以及道歉的决心。

80. “是关于我的最小的儿子，”他说，“我们的小儿子在去年夏天夭折了。”

81. “哦。”

82. “他是被车轧死的，”他说，“我就是那个开车轧死他的人。从汽车道里把车倒出去。”

83. 我又停了下来。他同我一起停下来。我们两个都凝视着前方。

84. “他的名字叫布莱恩，3岁。事实上，我当时以为他还在楼上睡觉。其他人都还没睡。但他是被抱上床的，后来他又起来了。尽管我当时该看一看的。我应该更小心点的。”

85. 我想到他当时从车里出来的情形，他一定会发出的哀号，当孩子母亲从房子里跑出来的情景。

86. 他又开始走，进了停车场。我在他后面跟着，没有说一句话——没有一个温和、普通、绝望的字眼。此时我们心心相通。

87. 他没有说，是我的错，我永远不会从那件事中恢复过来。我决不会原谅自己。但我已经尽我所能。或者说，我的妻子原谅了我，但她永远不会从那件事中恢复过来。

88. 我知道了所有的一切。我现在知道，他是世上最不幸的人。一个知道了——而我却不知道，也不会了解——不幸之所在的人。他和妻子共同体验了这一切，这使他们结合在了一起，就像是有些事在生活中要么把你们拆散，要么使你们更加亲密。并不是他们共同经历着不幸，而是他们对此有着共同的感受——那种凄凉、失落、封闭的中心世界。

89. “赛妮和约翰斯顿并不知道这件事。”他说，“从我们搬走之后认识的人中没人知道这些。好像这样更好一些。甚至其他孩子——他们几乎不曾再提起他，从来不提他的名字。”

90. 我不属于那些他们可以结交到的、可以展开他们崭新而又艰难的普通生活的朋友。我是了解他一切的人。一个他自己拥有的、了解他的朋友。

91. 当我们驾车返回时，我和迈克都注意到并大声地说起我们赤裸的前臂、手背和脚踝都有种灼痒和刺痛感。这都是我们蹲在杂草地时没有衣服保护的部分。我记起了那些荨麻。但那些有着硕大的粉紫色的花的植物并不是荨麻。我后来才发现它们叫斑茎泽兰。我们一定是进到带刺的荨麻丛里了。这些荨麻是些更不起眼儿的植物，它们的茎上阴险地长满着细细的、锋利的能划破人皮肤并能引起发炎的小刺。

92. 坐在赛妮的农舍厨房里，我们讲述了我们的历险，还展示了我们起的疹子。赛妮知道该为我们做些什么了。以前有一个周末，男孩儿们都跑到空地后的杂草地里去，又满身污渍和伤痕地回来了。大夫吩咐将伤口冷敷，又开了抗组胺药膏和一些药片。现在仍剩着不到一瓶药水和一些药片。

93. 孩子们看见我们坐在那，双脚泡在盆里，手和胳膊笨笨地缠着薄布觉得滑稽极了。克莱尔看见我们光着的大脚尤其高兴。迈克用长脚趾向她慢慢靠近，她就猛地发出一阵警觉似的咯咯的笑声。



94. 如果当时能再见的话,也会有同样的往事的。爱不是来被利用的,我们十分清楚它应在的位置。我们不拿它来冒险,而是让它像涓涓细流慢慢地流淌,仿若地下资源。将爱封存,让它静静地沉淀。

95. 在我们的友谊逐渐淡化的那些岁月里,我没有再向赛妮询问,也没有得到过任何有关于他的消息。



## 五、练习答案及详解

### I. Vocabulary

A. Look up the following words and phrases. Select the meaning that best suits the sentence in which each appears.

1. a wild plant with hairy leaves which may sting and make red marks on the skin
2. being confined in a pen which is a small yard or enclosure for domestic animals
3. private houses where you pay to sleep and eat
4. the part of a truck or bus in which the driver sits
5. to clean and cover a wound
6. the small mark or sunken place in the middle of the stomach
7. to fit perfectly together
8. (for children) to be arranged to take turns in living with the father and mother
9. an angry outburst
10. a special stick used in golf to hit the ball; golf club
11. to push against sth. or someone with your head

### IV. Questions on Appreciation

1. The author begins her story in a rather unusual way. She starts her narration from 1979 in the brief beginning paragraph. This allows her to infuse her stories with a sort of floating suspense, inducing the readers to continue.
2. The plot of her story does not follow the normal chronological order. She starts her narration from 1979 in the first paragraph. But right after that she switches to "years afterward" in the second paragraph. And from Para 3 to Para 15 the time is shifted to her childhood when she met and made friends with a boy called Mike. From Para 16 the narrative is shifted back to 1979 in time.
3. Para 3 to Para 15 is narrated in a flashback, devoted to the narration of her childhood memories, her friendship with Mike. Her vivid descriptions of her childhood show that the narrator is very nostalgic. And Mike is deeply embedded in her memory.
4. It contains a series of narration and questions the narrator asked herself by showing her arousing sexual desire and her intention to be intimate with Mike.
5. In this part, the author describes a big storm. The two main characters went through on the golf course. The author doesn't tell but shows with vivid and specific details how violent the storm was. These descriptions of the storm serve as an important element of the whole story. The two friends who survived the storm together felt even closer. This makes readers think that something will happen between the man and woman now.
6. Their experience in the storm is the climax of the whole story. It furthers the relationship between

them two. And it offers the readers a floating suspense of how they would develop.

7. Para 91 is essential for understanding the meaning of the title of the story. While they were driving back, Mike and the narrator noticed an itch or burning on their bare forearms, the backs of their hands and around their ankles. She remembered the nettles. But those plants with big pinkish-purple flowers (described in Para 72) are not nettles. They are called joe-pye weeds. The nettles are stinging insignificant-looking plants with stalks outfitted with skin-piercing spines. Her mistaking joe-pye weeds for nettles implies that ordinary life is more like the insignificant-looking nettles that are stinging and piercing, thus irritating and annoying people rather than the joe-pye weeds with showy pinkish-purple flowers. Real life is disturbing, frustrating, and unsettling, offering no tidy resolution.
8. The story centers on a middle-aged woman's reunion with a childhood boy friend in 1979, but it moves back and forth between past and present, revealing the author's ambiguous hold of the past, throwing light on the present. Para 94 is an important part of the story. Like some of Munro's other stories, this one ends with the narrator's epiphany, a moment of sudden intuitive understanding, or a flash of insight. It is part of the author's style to search for some revelatory gesture by which an event is illuminated and given personal significance. What happened, or rather what did not happen between Mike and her gave her a new perception of love. This is the theme of the story. The event that took place during that weekend may not seem special or exciting, but through it the author explores the complexity of human emotions and the beauty of ordinary life.

**V. Explain the following in your own words, bringing out any implied meanings.**

1. The impact of Mike's leaving on my life was beyond my imagination. I didn't expect that Mike's leaving would have such a tremendous power that it would change the meaning of my existence completely. All my thoughts were about loss of Mike.
2. At that time, we were young mothers, and we were supposed to lead a terribly busy life full of confusion and bewilderment caused by giving birth to and raising babies. And our minds were supposed to be fully occupied by how to feed the babies and things like that. However, in the midst of all this we still felt the need to discuss some of the important thinkers of our time like Simone de Beauvoir and Arthur Koestler and T. S. Eliot's sophisticated work "The Cocktail Party".
3. I would be frightened, and my fear was not caused by my neighbors' visibly hostile and violent way of life, but by a kind of formless and hidden emptiness and meaninglessness of human existence. What happened around me was totally irrelevant to me, and I felt very isolated and alienated.
4. She did not ask me about my new life, either out of subtle consideration for my feeling about this sensitive subject or out of disapproval for my new life style.
5. It would be a morally low thing, an indecent thing to commit infidelity in the house of a friend.
6. I knew that he was a person who had experienced the worst in life, the hardest experience a person might have to endure.
7. They experienced the worst together and they knew what it was like and understood the meaning of that experience. Such an experience posed the gravest test to people. If they stood the test, their friendship or marriage would be strengthened, and a sacred bondage would be formed between them. But if they failed the test, their relationship would be broken and they would be driven apart.
8. If they acted on love, they would take risks. They wouldn't do that or go further in their relationship, but they would rather let their love remain as a sweet trickle, which would flow on gently and

permanently, and as an underground resource, which would never be fully tapped but would never go dry.

**VI. Translate the following into Chinese.**

**A. Phrases**

1. 只能掷一次
2. 一种没有虚伪、不丧失自我、不感到羞辱的生活
3. 整条街道
4. 为摆脱婚姻的禁锢而必须踏上的漫长旅途
5. 如瀑布般的叫声
6. 那声音就像是卷着石块的海浪冲击着海滩
7. 从汽车道里把车倒出去
8. 在我们的友谊逐渐淡化的那些岁月里

**B. Sentences**

1. 这里的每一棵树都表现出某种神态。比如,榆树看上去宁静安详,橡树则咄咄逼人,枫树亲切友好,而山楂树则老气横秋、脾气暴躁。
2. 当他喊我的名字时,我会紧张万分,全身蹭地就像过了电似的,一种狂热的忠诚感油然而生。
3. 一天早晨,工作全部完成,这是意料中的事。井上了盖子,水泵重新安装好了,大家对清新的井水赞叹不已。
4. 我们大约每周都要在我家或她家厨房小聚一次。孩子们总是不断打扰我们,有时我们还会因为缺觉而感到头晕目眩,于是我们就用大量的浓咖啡和香烟给自己提神,开始天南海北地聊天,所谈的话题无所不包;我们的婚姻、奋斗、个人的不足、既有趣又有些丢脸的动机,以及我们曾有过的理想抱负。
5. 赛妮给他准备了新床单,也把他换给我的床重新铺好了。
6. 我睡得很浅,没完没了地做着充满情欲的梦,中间还穿插着令人不快的小情节。
7. 紧挨着草地边上的灌木丛看上去似乎无法穿过,但走近了可以看到一些小缺口和窄窄的小径,这是被动物或者找高尔夫球的人们踩出来的。
8. 看上去,天空的一大部分似乎脱离了主体,喧闹着、果断地压向地面,那形状虽然说不出具体的像什么,但像是一种活物的样子。
9. 我们拥抱并不是出于身体的渴望,而是庆祝劫后余生的一种表示。

**VII. Give a specific word used in the text to replace the more general word or phrase given below.**

- |               |            |
|---------------|------------|
| 1. chase      | 9. sleazy  |
| 2. filthy     | 10. caddy  |
| 3. boom       | 11. wheel  |
| 4. thump      | 12. sway   |
| 5. tromp      | 13. stoop  |
| 6. halt       | 14. crouch |
| 7. crap       | 15. drench |
| 8. scrupulous | 16. hurl   |

**VIII. Complete the following sentences from the text or explain their implied meanings in your own words.**

1. Mike was a common name, and I should have known that the mother was not calling my friend Mike.
2. That boy by the name of Mike had a stupid face with dirty blond hair, nothing in common with my friend Mike.
3. At last there was blowup as they couldn't help bursting into angry complaints.

4. There were accusations and confessions of misery. They accused me of failing in my marriage and thus causing trouble to them. And they also admitted that they felt miserable while staying at my place.
5. "Well, I don't know if I should go to the brunch or come with you."
6. He didn't say any sympathetic words, nor did he show any encouragement.
7. When the sun came out suddenly, I was surprised in a pleasant way, for the sunlight indicated that we had survived the storm, and that was something to be celebrated. When Mike spoke, he surprised me, too, but in the opposite way. For his voice carried a tone of weight and warning, indicating that what he was going to tell me was not happy news.
8. I was a person he had, on his own, who knew. I was a person he could confide in. He and I knew each other so well that we had nothing to hide from each other.
9. Love was not an object that could be used. We shared a kind of love that was not usable, that could not be made use of, that knew its place, and that could not be displaced.

# Lesson Five

## The One Against the Many



### 一、课文导读

#### (一) 内容梗概

1783 年美利坚合众国诞生。在短短的 225 年间,美国由一个仅仅拥有 13 个州的新生国家变成一个可以把其利益建立在几乎世界每个角落的超级大国。为什么美国发展如此之快? 最重要的因素有哪些? 美国历史学家认为,一个最重要的原因是“国家抛弃了在社会和经济秩序管理中的教条主义偏见”。

文章以美国为例,以“一个对多个”为题目,其中的“一个”即指一个观点,而“多个”则指多个观点。换句话说,作者认为实用主义是导致美国快速发展的关键因素。而中国与美国的对比又进一步说明教条主义、理想主义与实用主义的区别。

以中国的经验与现今的国际地位作为参照,我们会对此文产生兴趣。虽然我们在某些观念上与作者并不一致,但我们仍会从阅读此文获益匪浅。

#### (二) 背景知识

##### Calvinist theology

Calvinist theology advocates the following points: John Calvin on the necessity of reforming the church; Calvin's analysis: The “soul” of Christianity is essential, the “body” is secondary; Calvin on the “soul” of Christianity: Worship and salvation; Calvin's further distinction between what is necessary and what is indifferent.



John Calvin



### 二、词汇与短语

#### (一) 词汇

##### ① aspiration /ˌæspə'reɪʃn/ n.

sth. that you want to achieve, or the wish to achieve sth. 雄心大志;野心;渴望 【同义】ambition; desire 【反义】degeneration

—When I was 12 I had aspirations to play professional basketball. 我 12 岁时就渴望成为一名职业篮球运动员。

【词根】aspire *v.* 渴望;有志于

②banish /'bæniʃ/ *v.*

1) to make someone stop thinking about sth. (从心中)排除;消除 【同义】dismiss 【反义】keep  
—The news of her pregnancy had banished all other thoughts from her mind. 她怀孕的消息消除了她心中所有其他的想法。

2) to order someone to leave a country or region as a punishment 放逐;把...流放 【同义】exile  
—He was banished from his own country. 他被驱逐出本国。

【派生】banishment *n.* 排除;放逐

③compulsion /kəm'pʌlʃən/ *n.*

a very strong feeling of wanting to do sth. 无法抑制的欲望(冲动);强迫作用 【同义】urge; desire  
—He felt a sudden compulsion to tell her the truth. 他突然有一种想告诉她真相的冲动。

【派生】compulsive *adj.* 强迫的

④construe /kən'stru:/ *v.*

to explain or deduce the meaning of sth. 解释;释义 【同义】interpret  
—Please do not construe this as any criticism of yourself. 请不要把这解释成对你自己批评的理由。

⑤contingency /kən'tɪndʒənsi/ *n.*

1) a possible, unforeseen or accidental occurrence 不测事件 【同义】event  
—We like to be prepared for all contingencies. 我们喜欢对任何不测事件做好准备。

2) sth. dependent on another uncertain event 由未知情况而引发的事件  
—contingency measures/plans 对不测事件采取的措施、计划

【派生】contingent *adj.* 意外的;不可预料的

⑥discourse /'diskɔ:s/ *n.*

1) communication of ideas, information etc., esp. by talking 会话;交谈;话语 【同义】conversation  
—a powerful discourse on art 关于艺术的热烈交谈

2) lengthy treatment of a subject 论文;论述

⑦dogmatic /dɒg'mætɪk/ *adj.*

stating opinion in a positive or arrogant manner 固执己见的;武断的;自以为是的

【同义】arrogant; authoritative 【反义】careful

—The party is rigid and dogmatic and unlikely to change. 这个政党固执、武断,很难改变。

【派生】dogmatically *adv.* 独断地 dogmatism *n.* 教条主义

⑧empirical /ɪm'pɪrɪkl/ *adj.*

based solely on experiment and observation rather than on scientific principles 以观察(或实验)为根据的 【同义】practical 【反义】theoretical

—He is very empirical and practical. 他非常实际。

⑨endow /ɪn'dau/ *v.*

to provide with some talent or quality 给予;赋予(才干、能力等) 【同义】give; offer

【反义】deprive

—She is endowed with both brains and beauty. 她天生聪明美丽。

【派生】endowment *n.* 给予;资助

⑩epoch /'i:pɒk/ *n.*

(beginning of a) period of time in history, life, the history of the earth, etc., esp. one marked by

notable events or characteristics 纪元;时代;时期 【同义】era

—Einstein's theory marked a new epoch in mathematics. 爱因斯坦的理论开创了数学的新纪元。

【派生】epoch-making *adj.* 划时代的;开新纪元的

⑪ falsify /'fɔ:lsɪfaɪ/ *v.*

to change sth. deliberately in order to trick other people 篡改;伪造 【同义】alter; misrepresent

【反义】respect

—He falsified the constitution by himself. 他私自篡改了宪法。

【派生】falsification *n.* 篡改;伪造

⑫ formidable /fɔ:'mɪdəbl/ *adj.*

causing fear or great anxiety 引起恐惧或不安的;可怕的 【同义】frightening; awesome

—a formidable appearance, look 可怕的外表、神情

⑬ frailty /'freɪlti/ *n.*

frail quality 脆弱;虚弱;弱点 【同义】infirmity; feebleness 【反义】strength

⑭ inclusive /ɪn'klusɪv/ *adj.*

including sth.; including much or all 包括或包含某事物的;包括许多或全部的

—The price is \$ 800, inclusive of tax. 连税在内,价格 800 美元。

⑮ infirmity /ɪn'fɜ:məti/ *n.*

being infirm, particular physical weakness 体弱;虚弱 【同义】feebleness; weakness

【反义】strength

—He is suffering from infirmity. 他身体虚弱。

【词根】infirm *adj.* 体弱的;虚弱的

⑯ innovation /ɪnə'veɪʃən/ *n.*

the introduction of new things, ideas or ways of doing sth. (新事物、思想或方法的)创造;创新;改革

—a period of innovation 革新时期

【词根】innovate *v.* 革新

⑰ instructive /ɪn'strʌktɪv/ *adj.*

giving much useful information 提供丰富知识的;有益的

⑱ literate /'lɪtərət/ *adj.*

1) able to read and write 有读写能力的

—Though nearly twenty he is barely literate. 他都快 20 了,还是一字不识。

2) cultured; well-read 有文化的;博学的 【同义】educational

—Every literate person should read this book. 凡有文化的人该一读书。

【派生】literacy *n.* 读写能力

⑲ monolith /'mɒnəlɪθ/ *n.*

1) single block of stone, esp. shaped into a pillar etc. (尤指形状为柱石等的)独块巨石

2) person or thing like a monolith in being massive, immovable, or solidly uniform 坚如磐石的人或物

【派生】monolithic *adj.* 坚如磐石的

⑳ potentiality /pə'tenʃɪ'æləti/ *n.*

power or quality that exists but has not been developed 潜力;潜在性

—a country with great potentialities 具有很大潜力的国家

㉑ pragmatic /præg'mætɪk/ *adj.*

concerned with actual practice, everyday affairs, etc. not with theory or speculation 实用主义的; 讲究实际的 【同义】 practical 【反义】 ideal

—a pragmatic approach to problem solving 解决问题的实际方法

【派生】 pragmatism *n.* 实用主义

22 preconception /ˌpri:kən'sepʃən/ *n.*

preconceived idea 事先构成的想法(偏见) 【同义】 prejudice

—Before meeting with a client, you must try to erase any preconceptions you may have about them.  
在见客户前,你必须尽力消除你对他们的任何偏见。

23 predestined /ˌpri:'destɪnd/ *adj.*

determined beforehand 预先确定的; 命定的; 注定的 【同义】 predetermined

—Her fate is predestined. 她的命运是注定的了。

24 repugnant /rɪ'pʌgnənt/ *adj.*

1) extremely distasteful 令人厌恶的; 使人极度反感的 【同义】 unpleasant; offensive 【反义】 tasteful

—He is repugnant and no one likes him. 他很讨厌,没有人喜欢他。

2) contradictory 矛盾的; 抵触的 【同义】 opposite 【反义】 coordinate

—two repugnant concepts 两个相互矛盾的观点

【派生】 repugnance *n.* 厌恶情绪

25 secular /'sekjələ/ *adj.*

not concerned with religion 世俗的; 非宗教的; 现世的 【同义】 worldly 【反义】 sacred; religious

—He was the first of the country's secular rulers. 他是这个国家第一个世俗统治者。

【派生】 secularism *n.* 世俗主义

26 spectrum /'spektrəm/ *n.*

1) the entire range or a wide range of anything arranged by degree or quality, etc. 范围; 幅度 【同义】 extent

—The course covers a wide spectrum of musical activity from opera to rock. 课程覆盖了从戏剧到摇滚乐的大范围的音乐知识。

2) band of colors as seen in a rainbow, etc. 光谱

27 tangible /'tændʒəbl/ *adj.*

perceptible by touch, clearly intelligible (经济术语) 有形的(即看得见的,可以计算的)

【同义】 noticeable; definite 【反义】 elusive

—The plan will bring tangible economic benefits to the area. 这项计划将给这个地区带来有形的经济效益。

【派生】 tangibility *n.* 有形; 明确

## (二) 短语

### ① in relation to

in relevance to; concerning sth.; in comparison to sth. 与...有关

—I have nothing further to say in relation to this matter. 与此有关的话题我不想再说。

### ② to arise from

to originate from 起源于; 由...引起

—Did anything interesting arise from the meeting? 会上没引起什么有趣的事吗?



## ③ to be devoted to

1) to be very enthusiastic about sth. 献身于...

—Her life was devoted to the cause of human education. 她把毕生的精力献给了人类的教育事业。

2) to love someone very much 忠于; 深爱

—They are devoted to their children. 他们深爱着自己的孩子。

## ④ to be immune to

not to be influenced or affected by sth. 免疫; 免除; 不受影响

—Few women were immune to his charm. 很少有女人不受他的魅力的影响。

## ⑤ to be bound to

to happen certainly 一定; 注定

—She is bound to find out sooner or later. 她一定会迟早发现事实真相的。

## ⑥ to attempt to

to try to do sth. 试图; 企图

—The book attempts to explain the origins of the war. 这本书试图解释战争的起因。

## ⑦ in terms of

in the language peculiar to; referring to 用...的措辞; 根据...

—The savings, both in terms of time and money, could be considerable. 这笔积蓄以时间与金钱的角度衡量是相当可观的。

## ⑧ in consequence/as a consequence

as a result 结果; 因此

—She has lived in France, and in consequence speaks French fluently.

## ⑨ to be devoid of

to lack sth. esp. a good quality 缺少; 缺乏

—Bob's face was devoid of any warmth. 鲍伯的脸缺少暖意。

## ⑩ to give way to

to agree to sth. that someone else wants instead of what you want 让位于; 让步

—Give way to traffic coming from the right. 让右方驶来的车辆先行。



## 三、课文注释

① In an epoch dominated by the aspirations of new states for national development, it is instructive to recall that the United States itself began as an underdeveloped country. (Para 1)

From this statement, it is likely that the essay was written in the late 1960s or early 1970s because many countries in Asia and Africa won independence in this period and wanted to develop their countries.

② The country was blessed by notable advantages—above all, by the fact that population was scarce in relation to available resources. (Para 2)

The country had the unique advantages—the fewer people and the very rich resources.  
to bless; to favor 恩赐

③ Had that been so, the Indians, for whom the ratio was even more favorable, would have developed the country long before the first settlers arrived from over the seas. (Para 2)

If the favorable ratio between population and resources had been the only factor, the Indians would have developed the country long before the first settlers arrived from over the seas.

- ④ One factor was the deep faith in education. The belief that investment in people is the most essential way for a society to devote its resources existed from the earliest days of the American colonies. (Para 3)

One factor was that they believed in education. They believed that the money put into education of people was very important for a society from the earliest days of the American colonies.

faith: complete, unquestioning acceptance of sth. 信仰

- ⑤ It arose originally from a philosophical rather than an economic commitment. . . But at the same time, it also helped produce the conditions essential to successful modernization. (Para 3)

The thinking of Thomas Jefferson exemplifies the position that state-supported education for all citizens is a basic requirement for democracy. In spite of the fact that economic commitment was not the major reason for respect for learning, wide literacy became a necessary condition for modernization.

- ⑥ J. K. Galbraith has rightly observed that "a dollar or a rupee invested in the intellectual improvement of human beings will regularly bring a greater increase in national income than a dollar or a rupee devoted to railways, dams, machine tools, or other tangible capital goods." (Para 4)

Galbraith's observation is correct, but a dollar or a rupee invested in construction may bring tangible results in a relatively short period of time while the result of investment in intellectual improvement may not be evident for a long period of time. So it takes decision-makers with long term perspective to really grasp the significance of Galbraith's observation.

intellectual improvement: 智力的提高

capital goods: 生产资料

- ⑦ Another factor in the process of American development has been the commitment to self-government and representative institutions. We have found no better way than democracy to fulfill man's talents and release his energies. (Para 5)

Self-government is the principle that the people are the ultimate source of governing authority and that their general welfare is the only legitimate purpose of government. This is correct in theory but in the United States the welfare of the people is not necessarily the chief concern of the federal government. representative institutions: 代议制政府机构

- ⑧ But fundamental to all of these, and perhaps the single most important explanation of the comparative speed of American development, has been the national rejection of dogmatic preconceptions about the nature of the social and economic order. (Para 6)

As a nation, America has refused to cling to certain rigid principles concerning social and economic development. America has been adaptable and flexible. Americans, in general, are not dogmatic. They do not cling to theories. They believe in experience and are not afraid of mistakes. Trials and errors are natural in experiments.

dogmatic preconceptions: 教条式的偏见

preconception: 事先在头脑中形成的看法或观点

- ⑨ Nor can one suggest that Americans have been consistently immune to the ideological temptation. . . (Para 8)

No one can say that Americans have never been tempted by the approach of understanding, preserving or transforming the world according to rigid dogmas.

- ⑩... and any intellect so shaped was bound to have certain vulnerability to secular ideology ever after.  
(Para 8)

A mind influenced by Calvinist theology would surely find it somewhat difficult to resist other ideological temptation.

- ⑪ There have been hedgehogs throughout American history who have attempted to endow America with an all-inclusive creed, to translate Americanism into a set of binding propositions, and to construe the national tradition in terms of one or another ultimate law. (Para 8)

The hedgehogs in American history have tried to make America accept a comprehensive set of principles, to turn Americanism into a series of assertions that have to be followed, and to interpret the national tradition according to some rigid, dogmatic theory.

a set of binding propositions: 一系列必须遵循的主张

- ⑫ Our national faith has been not in propositions but in processes. (Para 9)

Americans believe in continuous development, in ways toward better life or better society rather than in fixed ultimate goals.

- ⑬ America, in consequence, has been at its most characteristic a nation of innovation and experiment. (Para 9)

As a result, the most outstanding characteristic of the United States is innovation and experiment.

- ⑭ Pragmatism is no more wholly devoid of abstractions than ideology is wholly devoid of experience. (Para 10)

Pragmatism is not completely free from abstract ideas just as ideology is not completely free from experience, that is to say, abstract ideas have a place in pragmatism just as experience has a role in ideology.

- ⑮ As an ideologist, however, Jefferson is today remote—a figure not of present concern but of historical curiosity. (Para 11)

As a man following a fixed set of beliefs, he is only an interesting historical figure. His beliefs are out of date and are irrelevant to present-day reality.

- ⑯ This was Jefferson's ideology; and had the United States responded to it, we would be today a feeble and impotent nation. By responding to Jefferson's ideals rather than to his ideology, the United States has become a strong modern state. (Para 11)

According to Jefferson's ideology, he was opposed to industrialization, hence modernization. So if the United States had accepted his ideology and put it into practice, there would not be a strong modern America.

- ⑰ Indeed, the whole ideological enterprise contradicted Jefferson's temper, which was basically flexible and experimental. (Para 12)

Indeed, Jefferson's efforts in ideological system was contradictory to his characters, which were flexible and pragmatic.

- ⑱ ... who said that one generation could not commit the next to its view of public policy or human destiny.  
(Para 12)

Jefferson, the idealist, did not believe that one generation should impose on the next generation its view of what policy a nation should pursue or what should be the future goal of the nation.

- ⑲ The besetting sin of the ideologist, in short, is to confuse his own tidy models with the vast, turbulent, unpredictable, and untidy reality which is the stuff of human experience. (Para 14)

Models are constructed on the basis of certain principles so they are neat and orderly in arrangement.

Reality, however, develops and changes all the time. This is the difference.

⑳... and often whose central dogma is confided to the custody of an infallible priesthood. (Para 15)

Their central beliefs are imprisoned by the whole body of priests who are always effective.

㉑ The American tradition has found this view of human history repugnant and false. (Para 16)

This view is repugnant because it is inconsistent with the actual development of history. It is false because it fails to give a true picture of history.

㉒... where free men may find partial truths, but where no mortal man will ever get an absolute grip on Absolute Truth... (Para 16)

In this universe a person whose mind is unconstrained may be able to discover relative truths but no man on earth can claim that he has already grasped the one and only Truth.

to get a grip on: to grasp sth. 掌握; 理解

㉓ But ideology is a drug; no matter how much it is exposed by experience, the craving for it still persists. (Para 19)

Ideology has the characteristic of a narcotic. In spite of the fact that it has been proved wrong many times by experience, people still long to commit themselves to ideology.

㉔... the only certainty in an absolute system is the certainty of absolute abuse. (Para 21)

The only thing that is sure of a despotic system is the unrestricted exercise of power.

㉕ The distinctive human triumph... lies in the capacity to understand the frailty of human striving but to strive nonetheless. (Para 22)

The most outstanding achievement of humanity is that they know that no matter how hard they try, they cannot achieve Absolute Truth, yet they continue to make great efforts and refuse to give up.



#### 四、课文译文

10658007864

## “一”对“多”

小亚瑟·M·施莱辛格

1. 在这个新生国家渴望发展的时代,回眸美国从不发达国家开始的发展历程是很有教益的。

2. 当然,每个国家都有各自的发展问题而且必须根据其各自的传统、能力和价值解决它们。美国的经验在很多方面是独特的。这个国家有着得天独厚的优势——主要是人口相对稀少而资源十分丰富。但是很明显,人口和资源之间有利的比例不是促进美国发展的唯一因素。如果真是这样的话,在人口与资源比例上更有优势的印第安人,在海外殖民者到来以前,早就应该把国家发展起来了。同样重要的还有这些殖民者在面临各种经济和社会环境的挑战时的精神。几个基本思想因素对于促进美洲大陆社会和经济迅速发展起到了至关重要的作用。

3. 其中一个思想因素就是对教育的深信不疑。对人员的投入是社会资源分配的最基本方式,这种信念在美国殖民地最早期就存在。它源于对思想原则的信仰,而不是出于对经济利益的追求;它源于对人的尊严的笃信以及由此而产生的信念,即给人们提供机会去发展其最大的潜能是社会的责任。但与此同时,它帮助美国奠定了走向现代化的基本条件。

4. 现代化的工业社会必须首先是知识的社会。经济历史学家把美国两个世纪发展期间 2/3 的经济

增长归功于生产率的提高。当然,这种生产率的提高直接来源于国家对教育和研究的投入。J·K·加尔布雷思曾经恰当地指出:“在智力提高上投入的每一美元或卢比所带来的国家收入,都大于将其投入到铁路、水坝、机器工具,或其他有形生产资料所能带来的国家收入。”这句话准确地叙述了美国的经验。

5. 促进美国发展进程的另一个思想因素是对自治和代议制的追求。我们发现民主是使人的才智得到充分施展、人的能量得以充分发挥的最好方式。民主思想一方面确信人的自由的重要性和创新来自个人;另一方面是懂得合作的作用,这种合作包括义务的和自发的两种。

6. 但所有因素当中最基本的,或许是对美国发展速度最重要的一个就是美国拒绝关于社会本质和经济规律的教条式的偏见。幸运的是,美国不是一个观念性很强的国家。

7. 在我看来,意识形态体系是指人们探索去理解、维护和改变世界时所遵循的系统的、固定的信条总和。意识形态体系与经验主义的斗争在人类历史上源远流长。在意识形态体系与经验主义的斗争史上,意识形态体系曾吸引了人类历史上一些聪明绝顶的人物——艾赛亚·伯林先生称之为“刺猬”即懂得一件大事的人,和“狐狸”即知道很多小事的人。

8. 没有人能说美国始终如一地不受意识形态体系诱惑的影响,也就是不受以一种有序的、全面的、永恒的方式来确定国家目标的诱惑的影响。毕竟,美国人的思维方式深受加尔文派神学的影响,这种神学是有史以来人类创造的最崇高、最令人敬畏的分析体系之一,而如此形成的思维方式一定始终容易受到世俗意识形态体系的攻击。那些所谓“刺猬”贯穿于美国整个历史,他们企图赋予美国一个万能的信条,把美国精神转变成一系列必须遵循的主张,用一种或另一种最终规律来解释国家的传统。

9. 然而,大多数美国人对抽象的理性主义和僵硬的先验理论持明智的不信任态度。我们的民族不相信一成不变的终极目标,而忠诚于发展中探求。在她处于最佳时期时,美国可以说超越了所有的意识形态体系。她不允许由于信仰教条的原因使现实被歪曲,使人们的实践受到束缚,使选择的范围变得十分狭小。这种对意识形态体系的怀疑是社会创造力的首要源泉。最重要的美国社会思想是经验主义、实践主义和实用主义。结果,美国最显著的特点是创新和尝试。

10. 实用主义不再完全排斥抽象概念,就像意识形态体系不再完全排斥经验一样。当抽象概念与经验发生冲突、必须做出取舍时,区别就显现出来了。在这一点上,实用主义者拒绝抽象概念,而意识形态主义者拒绝经验。共和国的早期历史阐释了这种差异。美国独立战争是在某些普遍价值指导下的实用主义的尝试。殖民者们为独立而战所根据的是英国的公民自由和代议制政府的理想;他们起义反抗英国人是用英国的理由。美国独立的理想可以在伴随国家产生的权威文献当中找到表述:独立宣言、宪法以及权利法案。

11. 保持理想与意识形态体系的差异是非常重要的。理想是指一个国家的长远目标以及它所追求的精神。意识形态体系是不同的,它更系统、更详尽、更全面、更教条。开国者托马斯·杰斐逊的事例证明了这种差异。杰斐逊既是理想的阐述者,又是意识形态体系的阐述者。作为理想的阐述者,他仍然是一个充满活力、富于创新的人——不仅活在美国人心中,我相信也活在所有主张人的尊严和自由的人心中。然而,作为一个意识形态主义者,他只是一个令人好奇的历史人物,他的思想过时而与今天的现实无关。作为一个意识形态主义者,比如说他相信农业是理想社会的唯一基础;小土地所有制是自由的根基;诚实的、品德高尚的耕种者是民主国家唯一可以信赖的公民;以农业为基础的经济是自我调节的,因此要求最小的政府;管得越少的政府越是好政府;另一方面,自由国家的最大敌人是都市化,工业、银行业、无土地的工人阶级和所有其他的我们现在所知道现代化过程中的特点,以及能指导国家发展的强大政府。这就是杰斐逊的意识形态体系,如果美国响应了这种思想,我们今天将是一个衰弱无能的国家。响应了他的理想而不是意识形态体系,美国成为了一个强大的现代化国家。

12. 幸运的是,杰斐逊喜欢他的理想胜过他的意识形态体系。如果发生冲突,他选择怎样对百姓有利而不是怎样符合理论条条。说实在的,杰斐逊一生在意识形态体系上所做的努力与他的性格是相矛

盾的。他的性格特征基本上是灵活的、从经验出发的。真正的杰斐逊不是意识形态体系的杰斐逊,而是那个曾经指出“一代人不能把他们关于公共政策和人类命运的主张强加给下一代人”的杰斐逊。

13. 对意识形态体系的忠诚错在哪呢? 问题是这样的,意识形态体系不是现实的描绘,它来自现实的模式,设计的模式把现实中的模式创造者(意识形态主义者)认为至关重要的某些明显特征区分出来。也就是说,意识形态体系是来自现实的抽象概念。抽象观念或模式本身并没有错。事实上,没有它们,我们就不可能进行讨论。意识形态体系的谬误是忘记了意识形态体系是对现实的抽象概念,而把这种抽象概念本身当成了现实。

14. 简而言之,意识形态主义者不断发生的错误是他们混淆了自己整齐的模式与广阔的、汹涌的、不可预见的人类实践的现实之间的区别。这种混淆至少有两方面恶果:让意识形态体系的信仰者犯宿命论历史观的错误;误导他们对公共政策的具体选择。

15. 让我们思考一下意识形态主义者的历史观。他们主张历史的秘密,根据清晰的、绝对的、能解释过去和预测未来的社会信条是可以被理解的。意识形态体系因此预先假定了一个封闭的世界,它的历史是确定的,它的原则是一成不变的,它的价值和目标是可以从社会信条体系中推理出来的,而这个理论体系的本质掌握在永无谬误的圣人手中。在关于“一”和“多”的古老的哲学争论中,意识形态主义者支持“一”。他们坚信世界作为一个整体是可以被认知的,一个单一的观点是:丰富的、永不停顿的人类生活可以简化为一个单一抽象的解释系统。

16. 美国的传统发现了这种关于人类历史的观点是矛盾的、虚假的。美国传统把世界看成“多”,而不是“一”。威廉·詹姆斯的作品以及被詹姆斯称做“激进经验主义”的对待哲学问题的方法,最好地表达了这种经验主义的本能,即着重事实而不是推理,看重行动而不是教条。詹姆斯反对认为单一的解釋就能解答历史上所有的问题这样的信念,反对认为所有政治和社会问题都能在那些圣典的结论部分找到答案的主张,反对对历史宿命论的解释,反对封闭的世界。他支持被他称为“未完成的世界”——一个以成长、多样性、不确定性、神秘、偶然性为特征的世界——一个自由的人们可以找到部分真理,而不是某个凡人独自掌握了绝对真理的世界;一个社会的进步不是依赖单一的学说,而是依靠自由思想不受约束的交流的世界。

17. 因此意识形态体系和实用主义的历史观是完全不同的。就如同他们处理公共政策的方法完全不同一样。意识形态主义者错把模式当现实;总是误导关于公共决策的可能性和结果。20 世纪的历史就是意识形态体系使人类多方面误入歧途的记录。

18. 让我们看一个当代的例子。例如在是选择公有制还是选择私有制的问题上,在发展中国家占据了如此多的政治经济讨论,现在已经很清楚了,它不是宗教的原则。它不是一个由绝对论者意见决定的道德问题,也不能被那些认为公有制是邪恶的右派,或那些认为私有制可耻的左派来决定。它不是理论能回答的问题,只能通过经验和试验来解决。我甚至建议在思想界和学术界的讨论中摒弃某些用滥了的词语。这些词语不再有清晰的含义。这些词语只能使头脑发热,而不会给人以智慧的光芒。他们是煽动的言辞,而不是分析的话语。

19. 随着混合社会的发明,实用主义战胜了绝对论。由此,世界明白了混合经济提供了把社会控制和个人自由有机结合的手段。但意识形态体系就像毒品;不管实践怎样揭露它,对它的渴望依然存在。这种渴望无疑会永远存在,只要还有人渴望找到一种无所不包并能解释一切的意识形态体系。真的,只要政治哲学的形成仍受到追根溯源这种冲动支配。

20. 我们曾经提到过,最古老的问题是“一”与“多”关系的问题。我们可以确定无疑地说,我们这个时代的根本矛盾恰恰是那些想要把世界简化为“一”的人与那些认为世界是“多”的人之间的冲突——那些相信世界会朝着一个方向进化、经过单一预先设定好的路线、奔着单一预设的结局的人与那些相信人类的未来就像过去一样,根据多样化的传统、价值、目标继续朝着多个方向、奔向多种结局的人之间的冲

突。简而言之,它是在教条主义和实用主义、理论社会和试验社会之间的选择。

21. 意识形态主义者害怕思想的流动,甚至在他们自己思想体系内的不正常的流动。他们确信他们独占真理。因此他们总是觉得屠杀异端者是在拯救世界。他们的追求仍然是根据他们的意识形态体系改造世界。他们的目标是按照确定可靠的理论,建造一个铁板一块的世界——绝对的权力必然导致权力的滥用。

22. 自由人的目标与此大相径庭。自由人掌握许多具体的真理,但他们认为没有一个凡人能够掌握绝对真理。他们宗教和理性的传统致使他们怀疑那些声称永无谬误的人。他们认为对于一个人来说,没有比把自己当做神更荒唐的了。他们承认人的智力是有限的,人的心灵是脆弱的,人类在判断力上是各具特色的。他们懂得人类奋斗是存在缺憾的,但仍然奋斗不息。



## 五、练习答案及详解

### I. Vocabulary

A. Look up the following words and expressions. Select the meaning that best suits the sentence in which each appears.

1. to come near or nearer to sb. /sth. in space or time
2. trust; strong belief
3. commitment of philosophy
4. to give a spoken or written account of sth. heard; to describe
5. power of learning, understanding, and reasoning
6. to have an important effect on sb. /sth. ; to determine
7. to express in another language or in simpler words
8. state of the mind as regards anger or calmness
9. (Of a person) not a slave or prisoner; allowed to move where one wants; having physical freedom
10. to hand over or show sb. /sth. disloyally (to an enemy)

### IV. Questions on Appreciation

#### A. Organization

1. The author begins his essay by raising the issue of American experience in achieving rapid national development, because the example of the USA can prove his statements about the pragmatism and ideology.
2. This essay can be divided into seven sections:  
 Part I (Para 1) is the opening paragraph.  
 Part II (Paras 2—6) deals with the factors that facilitated the rapid social and economic development of the United States.  
 Part III (Paras 7—10) uses the American Revolution as an example to illustrate the differences between pragmatism and ideology.  
 Part IV (Paras 11—12) uses Thomas Jefferson as an example to illustrate the distinction between ideas and ideology.  
 Part V (Paras 13—14) answers the question "What is wrong with ideology".  
 Part VI (Paras 15—19) elaborates on the differences between the ideologist and the pragmatist in their

views of history and in their approaches to issues of public policy.

Part VII (Paras 20—22) is the concluding part. The author sums up the conflict of our times.

3. They are transitional paragraphs, relating the above paragraphs and the following paragraphs.
4. The author contrasts the worst case of ideology with the openness, sensibility of free men. In presenting ideology, the author writes in a highly critical way. The effect is devastating. In this way, he achieves his purpose, that is, making the readers see that pragmatism is the better choice. So it is a good ending.

**B. Comment on the following statements in this essay. What method is used here? Why?**

1. This sentence indicates that Americans also can be influenced by the ideology. The dual-negative method is used here to emphasize the voice of the author.
2. Pay attention to the way the author argues. The author always offers explanations to objections raised by critics. After defining ideology in terms of relations with reality, he immediately writes that "There is nothing wrong with abstractions or models per se".

**C. In order to bring out the differences between different terms, the author uses "contrast" a number of times. Please locate where "contrast" is used and comment on it.**

Just take two examples here:

"It arose originally from a philosophical rather than an economic commitment. . ." (Para 3)

"The dividing line comes when abstractions and experience collide and one must give way to the other." (Para 10)

The "contrast" is used in order to build up force and make the statement more powerful.

**V. Explain the following in your own words, bringing out any implied meanings.**

1. There are such prejudices in an arrogant manner about the characteristic of the social order and economic order and they take it for granted. The country just rejected such prejudice.
2. No one can say that Americans have never been tempted by the approach of understanding, preserving or transforming the world according to rigid dogmas.
3. A mind influenced by Calvinist theology would surely find it somewhat difficult to resist other ideological temptations to ideological thinking.
4. Pragmatism is not completely free from abstract ideas just as ideology is not completely free from experience, that is to say, abstract ideas have a place in pragmatism just as experience has a role in ideology.
5. As a man following a fixed set of beliefs, Jefferson is only an interesting historical figure. His beliefs are out of date and are irrelevant to present-day reality.
6. Their central beliefs are imprisoned by the whole body of priests who are always effective.
7. In this universe a person whose mind is unconstrained may be able to discover relation truths but no man on earth can claim that he has already grasped the one and only Truth.
8. Ideology has the characteristic of a narcotic. In spite of the fact that it has been proved wrong many times by experience, people still long to commit themselves to ideology.
9. The only thing that is sure of a despotic system is the unrestricted exercise of power.
10. The most outstanding achievement of humanity is they know that no matter how hard they try, they cannot achieve Absolute Truth, yet they continue to make great efforts and refuse to give up.



# VI. Translate the following into Chinese.

## A. Phrases

- |               |                            |
|---------------|----------------------------|
| 1. 人的尊严       | 9. (由于信仰教条的原因)使选择的范围变得十分狭小 |
| 2. 智力的提高      | 10. 宿命论的历史观                |
| 3. 生产资料       | 11. 封闭的世界                  |
| 4. 代议制政府机构    | 12. 丰富的、永不停顿的人类生活          |
| 5. 教条式的偏见     | 13. 独自掌握了绝对真理              |
| 6. 分析问题的理论体系  | 14. 自由思想不受约束的交流            |
| 7. 一系列必须遵循的主张 | 15. 铁板一块的世界                |
| 8. 僵硬的先验理论    |                            |

## B. Sentences

1. 美国的经验在许多方面都是独特的。
2. 这个国家有着得天独厚的优势——主要是人口相对稀少而资源十分丰富。
3. 它源于对思想原则的信仰，而不是出于对经济利益的追求……
4. 我们发现民主是使人的才智得到充分施展、人的能量得以充分发挥的最好方式。
5. 在意识形态体系与经验主义斗争的历史上，意识形态体系曾吸引了人类历史上一些聪明绝顶的人物……
6. 在她处于最佳时期时，美国可以说超越了所有的意识形态体系。
7. ……政府管得越少越好……
8. 说实在的，杰斐逊一生在意识形态体系上所做的努力与他的性格是相矛盾的。他的性格特征基本上是灵活的、从经验出发的。
9. 我甚至建议在思想界和学术界的讨论中摒弃某些用滥了的词语。……这些词语只能使头脑发热，而不会给人以智慧的光芒。
10. 自由人掌握许多具体的真理，但他们认为没有一个凡人能够掌握绝对真理。

# Lesson Six

## Death of a Pig



### 一、课文导读

#### (一) 内容梗概

这篇发表于1947年的著名小说是基于E·B·怀特的亲身经历创作的。作者向我们讲述了他与小猪度过的最后几天的情景。通过照顾生病的小猪,作者的角色发生了戏剧性的变化,由屠夫转换成猪的伙伴和医生,情感也随之发生了微妙的变化,已不再是简单的人与动物之间的关系,小猪已经成了作者生命的一部分。

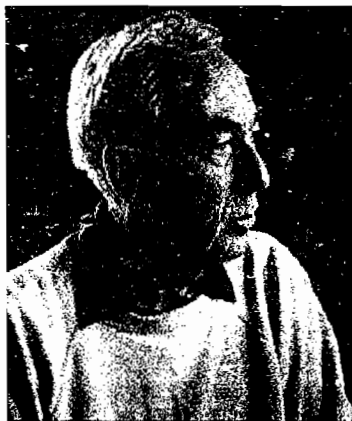
通过感受小猪的痛苦遭遇,作者感到生活变得失去了安全感、失去了平衡,变得转瞬即逝、难以预料,在小猪身上发生的事情同样也可能在身边看似平静的地方发生。读者也已全然忘了作者表述的只是一只小猪的遭遇,小猪的痛苦、主人的担忧,使我们仿佛也置身于故事之中,关心着小猪的命运。

作者的措辞相当精彩,故事虽然弥漫着悲剧色彩,但字里行间不乏幽默。自然流畅的文字、平衡的文章结构和想象手法,都给读者留下了深刻的印象。

#### (二) 背景知识

##### 1. E. B. White

Elwyn Brooks White (1899—1985) is an American writer, famous for his essays and children's literature. His light verse is also notable for its wit and perfection of form. He was born in Mount Vernon, New York, and educated at Cornell University. He joined the staff of the magazine *The New Yorker* in 1926 when it had just been founded, and remained its regular contributor for many years. From 1938 to 1943 White was also associated with *Harper's* magazine, for which he wrote a widely read monthly column entitled "One Man's Meat". White's elegantly written essays gently satirize the complexities and difficulties of modern civilization. Besides his verse, his writings include the collected essays *One Man's Meat* (1942) and *The Points of My Compass* (1962); the children's books *Stuart Little* (1945), *Charlotte's Web* (1952), and *The Trumpet of the Swan* (1970); and a tribute to New York City, *Here Is New York* (1949). His revised edition of *The Elements of Style* (1959, originally



E. B. White

published in 1918) by his former professor William Strunk, Jr., has become a fundamental work on the use of the English language. *The Letters of E. B. White*, published in 1976, was followed by *The Essays of E. B. White* in 1977.

## 2. Memorial Day

Legal holiday, observed annually on the last Monday in May in most of the United States, in honor of the nation's armed services personnel killed in wartime. The holiday, originally called Decoration Day, is traditionally marked by parades, memorial speeches and ceremonies, and the decoration of graves with flowers and flags, hence the original name. Memorial Day was first observed on May 30, 1868 for the purpose of decorating the graves of the American Civil War dead.



Memorial Day



## 二、词汇与短语

### (一) 词汇

#### ① antique /æn'tik/ n.

object, e. g. a piece of furniture or a work of art, that is old and valuable, esp. one that is of interest to collectors 文物;古董;古玩

—Mr. Hunter is very much interested in collecting antiques. 亨特先生对收藏古董非常感兴趣。

【派生】antiqued *adj.* 仿古的 antiquer *n.* 古物收藏家;专门制造仿古家具的人

#### ② bobble /'bɒbl/ n.

small woolly ball used as a decoration (esp. on a hat) (装饰用的)绒线球(尤指帽子上的)

#### ③ carnival /'kɑ:nɪvl/ n.

[C, U] (period of) public festivities and merry-making occurring at a regular time of year, e. g. in Roman Catholic countries during the week before Lent 狂欢节;嘉年华会(天主教国家大斋期前一周内的狂欢) 【同义】fair;fete

—a carnival atmosphere 狂欢节的气氛

#### ④ ceremonial /,seri'məʊniəl/

1) *adj.* of, used for or involving a ceremony; formal 礼仪的;仪式的;正式的 【同义】ritual; solemn  
—the President's ceremonial duties 总统礼仪方面的职责

2) *n.* [C, U] system of rules and procedures for ceremonies or formal occasions 礼仪;仪式  
—the ceremonials of religion 宗教仪式

【派生】ceremonialism *n.* 拘泥于礼节;讲究礼节 ceremonialist *n.* 礼法家;拘泥形式者;礼仪家

#### ⑤ corrosive /kə'rəʊsɪv/ *adj.* & *n.*

(substance) that corrodes 腐蚀性的(物质) 【同义】caustic; mordant; cauterant

#### ⑥ corrugated /'kɒrəʒetɪd/ *adj.*

folded, wrinkled or furrowed 起皱褶的;起皱纹的;起波纹的

#### ⑦ coy /kɔɪ/ *adj.*

1) (usu. derog. 通常作贬义) pretending to be shy or modest 假装害羞的;忸怩作态的;故作谦虚的

【同义】bashful

—She gave a coy smile when he paid her a compliment. 他恭维她时,她忸怩作态地笑了一笑。

2)reluctant to give information, answer questions, etc.; secretive 不肯明说的;不肯作答的;含糊其辞的

—He was a bit coy when asked about the source of his income. 当问起他收入的来源时,他有些吞吞吐吐的。

【派生】coily *adv.* 害羞地;隐蔽地 coyness *n.* 羞怯;忸怩作态

⑧crank /kræŋk/ *n.*

1)L-shaped bar and handle for converting to-and-fro movement to circular movement (用以将往复运动变换为圆周运动的)曲柄,曲轴

—The pedals of a cycle are attached to a crank. 自行车的踏板与曲柄相连。

2)person with strange fixed ideas, esp. on a particular subject; eccentric person (尤指在某问题上)有古怪成见的人;有怪癖的人

—a health-food crank (one who insists on eating unusual food for health reasons) 对保健食品有偏好怪癖的人

⑨crave /kreɪv/ *v.*

1)to have a strong desire for sth. 渴望;渴求 【同义】covet;lust

—I was craving for a drink. 我非常想喝一点儿饮料。

2)to ask for (sth.) earnestly;to beg for 恳求(某事物);祈求

—to crave sb.'s mercy/forgiveness/indulgence 恳求某人宽恕/原谅/赦免

⑩deviation /diːvi'eɪʃən/ *n.*

[U] not following the normal or expected course; plan, etc. 偏离正常的或原定的路线、计划等

—There was little deviation from his usual routine. 他没有什么反常的举动。

⑪dismal /'dɪzmə/ *adj.*

1)causing or showing sadness; gloomy; miserable (使人)悲伤的;凄凉的;阴沉的

【同义】dark;dreary 【反义】cheerful;merry;gay

—dismal weather, countryside 阴沉沉的天气、乡村

2)(*infml*) less good than expected; poor 差劲的;不怎么样的

—a dismal performance in the elections 在选举中差劲的表现

⑫dispatch /dɪ'spætʃ/ *v.*

1)to send sb./sth. off to a destination or for a special purpose 派遣(某人);发送(某事物)

【同义】transmit;forward

—to dispatch a letter, telegram, message, etc. 发送信件、电报、消息等

2)to give the death-blow to (sb./sth.);to kill 给予(某人/某物)致命的一击;杀死

—A vet dispatched the injured horse. 兽医把那匹受伤的马杀死了。

⑬divination /ˌdɪvɪ'neɪʃən/ *n.*

[U] foretelling the future by supernatural means 占卜;(以超自然的方法)预测

【派生】divinatory *adj.* 占卜的;靠直觉的

⑭enema /'enimə/ *n.*

injection of liquid into the rectum by means of a syringe (e. g. to clean out the bowels before an operation) 灌肠(如手术前);灌肠剂

15 furrow /'fʌrəʊ/

- 1) *n.* long narrow trench cut in the earth, esp. by a plough 沟; 垄沟 【同义】 wrinkle; crease; groove  
 —furrows ready for planting 为播种而犁好的沟  
 2) *v.* to make furrows in (sth.) 犁; 使(某物)起皱纹  
 —newly furrowed fields 刚犁过的田地

16 imminence /'ɪmɪnəns/ *n.*

the nearness of sth. which is going to happen

【词根】 imminent *adj.* (危险等) 逼近的; 即将发生的

17 indignity /ɪn'dɪɡnəti/ *n.*

rude or unworthy treatment causing shame or loss of respect 侮辱; 轻蔑; 侮辱性的言行

【同义】 insult; affront 【反义】 dignity

18 inextricable /ɪnɪk'strɪkəbl/ *adj.*

1) so closely linked that separation is impossible 无法分开的

—In the Middle Ages, philosophy and theology were inextricable. 在中世纪, 哲学与神学是不分的。

2) that cannot be escaped from 不能逃避的 【反义】 extricable

19 intercourse /ɪntə'kɔ:s/ *n.*

[U] dealings with people, nations, etc. (与人、国家等的) 交往, 交际

【同义】 communication; dealings

20 irrigate /'ɪrɪgeɪt/ *v.*

1) to supply (land or crops) with water (by means of streams, reservoirs, channels, pipes, etc.) 灌溉 (田地或作物) 【同义】 water

—to irrigate desert areas to make them fertile 灌溉荒芜地区使之肥沃

2) (medical) to wash (a wound, etc.) with a constant flow of liquid (医) 冲洗 (伤口等)

【派生】 irrigation *n.* 灌溉 irrigator *n.* 灌溉者; 灌溉车

21 lusty /'lʌsti/ *adj.*

healthy, vigorous and full of vitality 健康的; 精力充沛的; 充满活力的 【同义】 strong

22 muffle /'mʌfl/ *v.*

to wrap or cover sb./sth. for warmth or protection 包裹或覆盖某人/某物 (为保暖或保护)

—He walked out into the snow, heavily muffled (up) in a thick scarf and warm overcoat. 他雪天出门, 裹着厚厚的围巾, 穿着暖和的大衣。

23 paraphernalia /ɪ'pærəfə'neɪliə/ *n.*

[U] numerous small articles or personal belongings, esp. the equipment needed for a hobby or sport 零星物品; (尤指业余爱好或体育活动所需的) 个人随身物品 【同义】 hardware; furniture; fitting

24 rehearse /rɪ'hɜ:s/ *v.*

1) to practice (a play, piece of music, etc.) for public performance 排练 (戏剧、乐曲等); 排演

2) to give an account of (sth.), esp. to oneself; to recite 讲述 (某事物); (尤指) 自述; 背诵

—to rehearse one's grievances 诉苦

—He rehearsed the interview in his mind beforehand. 他把面试时要说的话预先想好了。

【派生】 rehearsal *n.* 排练; 试演; 练习

25 scheme /skim/ *n.*

1) (for sth./to do sth.) plan for doing or organizing sth. 计划; 方案

—a scheme for manufacturing paper from straw 用麦秆造纸的计划

2) secret or devious plan 阴谋; 诡计

—a scheme for not paying tax 逃税的诡计

【派生】schemer *n.* 计划者; 谋士 schematize *v.* 计划; 系统化

26 slapstick /'slæpstɪk/ *n.*

[U] comedy based on simple visual jokes, e. g. hitting people, falling over, etc. 打闹剧(多打闹等简单滑稽的动作)

27 snuffle /'snʌfl/

1) *v.* to make sniffing noises 用鼻子吸气发出声音; 抽鼻子

—The dog was snuffling around the roots of a tree. 那条狗在树根处嗅来嗅去。

2) *n.* act or sound of snuffling 抽鼻子(声); (鼻腔受阻的)呼吸(声)

28 synonym /'sɪnənɪm/ *n.*

word or phrase with the same meaning as another in the same language, though perhaps with a different style, grammar or technical use 同义词; 同义词组; 同义语 【反义】antonym

—Slay and kill are synonyms. slay 和 kill 是同义词。

【派生】synonymity *n.* 同义; 类义 synonymous *adj.* 同义的; 同义词性质的

29 transitory /'trænsətəri/ *adj.*

lasting for only a short time; transient 短暂的; 片刻的; 转瞬即逝的

【同义】mushroom; momentary; flying

—a transitory feeling of well-being 片刻的安逸

【派生】transitoriness *n.* 暂时; 瞬息; 昙花一现

30 trough /troʊf/ *n.*

1) long narrow open box for animals to feed or drink from 饲料槽; 饮水槽

2) low area between two waves or ridges 波谷; 低谷

—The business cycle is a series of peaks and troughs. 商业周期是一系列的高峰期和低谷期。

31 vicarious /vɪ'keərɪəs/ *adj.*

1) felt or experienced indirectly, by sharing imaginatively in the feelings, activities, etc. of another person 设身处地的; 间接受到的; 有同感的 【同义】representative

—He got a vicarious thrill out of watching his son score the winning goal. 他看着儿子射入一球获胜, 感到同样兴奋。

2) done, felt or experienced by one person on behalf of another 代别人做的、感受的或经历的

【派生】vicariously *adv.* 设身处地地; 有同感地

32 vile /vaɪl/ *adj.*

1) extremely disgusting 非常讨厌的; 可憎的 【同义】filthy; grimy

—a vile smell, taste, etc. 令人厌恶的气味、味道等

2) despicable on moral grounds; corrupt 卑鄙的; 邪恶的; 不道德的

—vile deceits, accusations, slanders, etc. 可耻的欺骗、指控、诽谤等

33 villainous /'vɪləniəs/ *adj.*

1) characteristic of a villain; wicked 恶棍似的; 邪恶的 【同义】accursed; cursed; criminal

—a villainous plot, smile 邪恶的阴谋; 狰狞的笑

2) (*informal*) extremely bad (口)极坏的

—villainous handwriting, weather 糟糕的笔迹、天气

【词根】villain *n.* 恶棍; 歹徒

## (二) 短语

### ① rural economy

the economy of the countryside; of the rural area; of a rural village(财经)农村经济

### ② account for

1) to make a description of 说明; 证明

—He could not account for his foolish mistake. 他无法解释他所犯的荒谬的错误。

2) to be responsible for sth. 对...负有责任

—Who will have to account for the misprints in the dictionary? 谁应对字典中的印刷错误负责?

### ③ to sit up

to stay up late or all night (and not liking it) 熬夜

—The doctor sat up all night with the patient. 医生彻夜守护着病人。

### ④ to take sick

to become ill 生病

—He took sick and died a week later. 他得了病, 一周后便死了。

### ⑤ to catch up on

1) to receive information 得到...消息

—I'm afraid I can't catch up on how things are in that area. 恐怕我不能及时得到关于那个地区的消息。

2) to spend extra time doing sth. in order to compensate for having neglected it 用额外时间做某事(以弥补所耽误的时间)

—I had to comfort my girlfriend until late last night, so I've got to catch up on my homework. 昨晚我因安慰女友很晚才回家, 因此今天我必须把功课补上。

### ⑥ to hold off

1) not to be getting on for (使)不接近

—His cold manner holds people off. 他冷淡的态度使人无法接近。

2) to procrastinate 拖延

—They will hold off their decision until Monday. 他们将延至星期一再作决定。

### ⑦ to make out

1) to distinguish from 辨别出

—I could hardly make out anything in the thick fog. 在浓雾中我几乎什么也看不见。

2) to fill in 填写; 写出

—The teacher has made out a list of reference book. 教师已开出了一份参考书单。

3) to understand 理解

—We can't make out what he is saying. 我们不懂他在说什么。

### ⑧ to take possession of

to capture 占领; 占有

—The candidate takes possession of 55% of the vote. 那位候选人获得 55% 的选票。



### 三、课文注释

- ① This uncertainty afflicts me with a sense of personal deterioration; if I were in decent health I would know how many nights I had sat up with a pig. (Para 1)

The fact that I cannot remember exactly when the pig died shows that my health is deteriorating. Otherwise, I would be able to remember.

Notice the humor conveyed by the solemn tone as if the event was of great historical importance. It is extremely funny because normally, nobody cares whether a pig died on the third day or fourth day.

- ② It is a tragedy enacted on most farms with perfect fidelity to the original script. (Para 2)

The raising of a pig is like a tragedy, because it always ends in the killing of the pig, and the set pattern—buying, raising and butchering—is strictly followed on most farms.

Now the author ironically calls the scheme “a tragedy”—the pig is, with few exceptions, murdered in the end. This metaphor is fully developed in the essay; we’ll find a number of references to drama.

- ③ The murder, being premeditated, is in the first degree but is quick and skillful, and the smoked bacon and ham provide a ceremonial ending whose fitness is seldom questioned. (Para 2)

The tragedy has an ending—the killing of a pig and the serving of its meat. The killing deliberately planned and carried out efficiently, is the most type of murder. However, whether pigs should end their lives that way has never been questioned.

**first degree murder:** (American) the most serious type of murder, premeditated murder (manslaughter)

- ④ Once in a while something slips—one of the actors goes up in his lines and the whole performance stumbles and halts. (Para 3)

Occasionally something goes wrong. One of the actors in the play, in my case, the pig, performs its part too early, thus creating chaos, and the whole play has to stop.

The author humorously introduces the premature death of his pig. The metaphor is carried on.

- ⑤ My pig simply failed to show up for a meal. The alarm spread rapidly. (Para 3)

Pigs seem to be always hungry, so when the author’s pig refused a meal, everybody instantly sensed trouble.

- ⑥ This was slapstick—the sort of dramatic treatment that instantly appealed to my old dachshund, Fred, who joined the vigil, held the bag, and, when all was over, presided at the interment. (Para 3)

The whole matter of the pig getting sick and me taking care of it was like a crude comedy, but my dog liked it very much—he did not miss any part of it: he was there when I stayed awake during the night to take care of the pigs; he was there to hold the enema bag during the medical treatment; he was even in charge of the burial after the pig died.

**to preside at the interment:** to seem to be in charge of the burial. Usually “to preside” is to be in charge of an official meeting, ceremony, or other events. Here in this place, the role of the dog is personified and dramatized to create humor.

- ⑦ He had evidently become precious to me, not that he represented a distant nourishment in a hungry time, but that he had suffered in a suffering world. (Para 3)

This sentence explains the previous one, clarifying the distinction between “meat” and “pig”. I felt the loss of the pig not because he would be butchered in winter and his meat would be brought on my



table, but because he had suffered in a suffering world, just like me. To the author, the suffering of the pig symbolizes the suffering of human beings.

- ⑧ One of my neighbors said he thought the pig would have done better on new ground—the same principle that applies in planting potatoes. (Para 4)

According to my neighbor, just as potatoes grow better where none have been planted before, so does the pig.

- ⑨ He failed to appear at the trough for his supper, and when a pig (or a child) refuses supper a chill wave of fear runs through any household, or ice-household. (Para 5)

My pig didn't show up for supper, and since a pig is, like a child, always hungry, the whole family were worried.

The author is comparing a pig to a child. The two share quite some similarities: hungry all the time and dear to the family.

- ⑩ There is never any identification needed on a country phone: the person on the other end knows who is talking by the sound of the voice and by the character of the question. (Para 5)

It's a small village and everybody knows everybody else. Therefore you don't have to say who you are when you talk to somebody on the phone.

character of the question: the kind of question

- ⑪ Henry says roll him over on his back and give him two ounces of castor oil or sweet oil, and if that doesn't do the trick give him an injection of soapy water. (Para 7)

They didn't even bother to check what was wrong with the pig and decided on the treatment straight away, as if the only disease a pig could suffer from was indigestion. Castor oil, sweet oil, and soapy water are all for the purpose of having the pig vomit and thus solving indigestion.

to do the trick; to do what is needed in order to achieve sth.

- ⑫ I thanked Mr. Dameron. I didn't go right down to the pig, though. I sank into a chair and sat still for a few minutes to think about my troubles, and then I got up and went to the barn, catching up on some odds and ends that needed tending to. (Para 8)

I was not in a hurry to take the neighbor's advice. I didn't like the doctor's idea and didn't want to acknowledge that the pig was sick, so I delayed the medical treatment as long as possible.

- ⑬ The dinner date seemed a familiar conflict: I move in a desultory society and often a week or two will roll by without my going to anybody's house to dinner or anyone's coming to mine, but when an occasion does arise, and I am summoned, something usually turns up (an hour or two in advance) to make all human intercourse seem vastly inappropriate. (Para 9)

Dinner dates are always like that. There are no dinner dates when life is boring and you want to have them. But when they do come you always can't enjoy them because something like the disease of your pig usually happens.

- ⑭ I have come to believe that there is in hostesses a special power of divination, and that they deliberately arrange dinners to coincide with pig failure or some other sort of failure. (Para 9)

The author humorously accuses the hostesses of having supernatural power to make dinner dates a dilemma.

divination: the practice of finding out about the future by receiving signs from Heaven

- ⑮ The screams, slightly muffled by oil, were pitched in the hysterically high range of pig-sound, as though

torture were being carried out, but they didn't last long: It was all over rather suddenly, and, his legs released, the pig righted himself. (Para 10)

The author continues to use a pseudo-serious tone, making it sound like he was giving a scientific report. He is also comparing the screaming of the pig to the screaming of human beings tortured. "His legs released" is a subject supplement to "the pig righted himself".

**to right:** to put someone or sth. back into their usual upright position

⑩ In the upset position the corners of his mouth had been turned down, giving him a frowning expression. (Para 11)

This is a vivid description of the pig's facial expression (as if a pig was capable of giving a facial expression) during the medical treatment, which shows that he didn't like it.

⑪ I scratched him gently with oily fingers and he remained quiet, as though trying to recall the satisfaction of being scratched when in health, and seeming to rehearse in his mind the indignity to which he had just been subjected. (Para 11)

The pig normally would enjoy being scratched, but not this time, as he was too sick. Here the pig is personified as if it could think.

**to rehearse:** to go over; to recall

⑫ I noticed, as I stood there, four or five small dark spots on his back near the tail end, reddish brown in color, each about the size of a housefly. (Para 11)

The speed of the story is maintained with the introduction of another conflict. After the pig was forced to take some medicine to cure indigestion, the author noticed some new symptoms, attracting the reader's attention and creating suspense.

⑬ They did not look troublesome but at the same time they did not look like mere surface bruises or chafe marks. Rather they seemed blemishes of internal origin. (Para 11)

These small dark spots immediately puzzled and worried the author. Although they didn't seem too serious, they were not bruises caused by external force but were symptoms of internal illness.

⑭ With very small, timid pigs, weanlings, this ruse is often quite successful and will encourage them to eat; but with a large, sick pig the ruse is senseless and the sound I made must have made him feel, if anything, more miserable. (Para 13)

Instead of reminding the pig of past pleasures of eating, the sucking sound might make the pig more aware of his present situation and therefore more miserable.

⑮ At this point, although a depression had settled over me, I didn't suppose that I was going to lose my pig. (Para 14)

The author at this point knew that the case was more serious than he had thought, but he still did not expect the pig would die.

⑯ As my own spirits declined, along with the pig's, the spirits of my vile old dachshund rose. (Para 15)

This is a transitional sentence. The author took the pig's problem as his own and felt depressed; yet his dog became very excited about the whole event.

⑰ The frequency of our trips down the footpath through the orchard to the pigyard delighted him, although he suffers greatly from arthritis, moves with difficulty, and would be bedridden if he could find anyone willing to serve him meals on a tray. (Para 15)

The tone is humorous. The dachshund visited the sick pig frequently with his master. He ran to and

fro despite his poor health.

- ②... made many professional calls on his own. (Para 16)

The dog would often even visit the pig by himself as if he were a doctor or nurse.

- ②5 You could see him down there at all hours, his white face parting the grass along the fence as he wobbled and stumbled about, his stethoscope dangling—a happy quack, writing his villainous prescriptions and grinning his corrosive grin. (Para 16)

Fred was quite excited about the event. he was down at the pigpen all the time. Because of his swollen joints, he moved about unsteadily. His face set apart the grass along the fence as he moved about. He was like a doctor, with his long, drooping ears dangling like a stethoscope, and he scrabbled on the ground as if he were prescribing some medicine.

“Wobble” rhymes with “stumble”. These two specific verbs bring out vividly the way the dog walks. Because it suffers from arthritis, it can’t walk steadily, moving from side to side, and sometimes it almost falls.

“His stethoscope” refers to his long drooping ears. This is said with a tongue in cheek and not to be taken seriously.

“Writing his villainous prescriptions” refers to the dog’s scrabbling on the ground as if it were prescribing some medicine.

- ②6 When the enema bag appeared, and the bucket of warm suds, his happiness was complete, and he managed to squeeze his enormous body between the two lowest rails of the yard and then assumed full charge of the irrigation. (Para 16)

We can’t help but smile at this description of the dachshund, who has very short legs and a long body, and who tried hard to get through the fence.

When it was time to dose the pig, Fred became even more excited, and he managed to get through the fence, and acted as if he was taking charge of the medical treatment.

- ②7 His suffering soon became the embodiment of all earthly wretchedness. (Para 17)

His suffering soon became the symbol of all miseries in life.

- ②8 My throat felt dry and I went to the cupboard and got a bottle of whiskey. Deep hemorrhagic infarcts—the phrase began fastening its hooks in my head. (Para 30)

The narrator was very worried by the vet’s words about the pig’s getting erysipelas and the possibility of his catching it, so he chose to drown his worries with whiskey.

- ②9 I went to bed tired but with a feeling of relief that I had turned over part of the responsibility of the case to a licensed doctor. I was beginning to think, though, that the pig was not going to live. (Para 35)

It was clear that the author did not have much confidence in the licensed doctor. He began to feel that the pig’s days were numbered.

- ③0 Fred, I well knew, was supervising the work of digging, so I ate breakfast slowly. (Para 37)

I was quite sure that Fred would be running around the grave being dug, as if he were in charge.

- ③1 ... Fred patrolled the brink in simple but impressive circles... (Para 38)

Fred walked around the edge of the grave as if he were inspecting the process closely.

- ③2 ... ours was a businesslike procession, with Fred, the dishonorable pallbearer, staggering along in the rear, his perverse bereavement showing in every seam in his face; and the post-mortem performed handily and swiftly right at the edge of the grave, so that the inwards that had caused the pig’s death preceded

him into the ground and he lay at last resting squarely on the cause of his own undoing. (Para 39)

Our procession was a serious and efficient one. Fred, who acted as the pallbearer, walked unsteadily in the back, though he was not qualified for that function. The sorrow of losing a family member was shown clearly in his face. The autopsy of the body's inwards was done right at the side of the grave. The intestines of the pig were first thrown into the grave, so the pig could lie exactly on those things that caused his death.

This is one-sentence paragraph, describing the funeral.

**directness and dispatch:** Alliteration. The pig was buried immediately, and unceremoniously. Normally animals are buried in this way, unlike human beings. The author approves of this kind of burial, simple, direct, and quick, as contrasted to the Christian burial, which is quite complicated.

③... and the premature expiration of a pig is, I soon discovered, a departure which the community marks solemnly on its calendar, a sorrow in which it feels fully involved. (Para 41)

If a pig dies before he is supposed to, it is a serious matter for the whole community to remember. The whole community would share the sadness for his death.

④... no one took the event lightly... (Para 41)

It is another example showing that throughout the article the author seems to be talking about the death of a family member rather than the death of a pig.

⑤I have written this account in penitence and in grief, as a man who failed to raise his pig, and to explain my deviation from the classic course of so many raised pigs. (Para 41)

The purpose of this essay is to show that I am sorry for what has happened to my pig, since I have failed to raise the pig and cannot provide a reason why my pig didn't grow the way other pigs have grown.

⑥The grave in the woods is unmarked, but Fred can direct the mourner to it unerringly and with immense good will, and I know he and I shall often revisit it, singly and together, in seasons of reflection and despair, on flagless memorial days of our own choosing. (Para 41)

The pig's grave in the woods doesn't have a tombstone, but whenever somebody wants to visit it, Fred will show him the way. I know we will often visit it, separate or together, when we need to ponder over problems or when we are depressed.

The author and Fred will often visit the pig's grave in the woods to show their love whenever they like, and these days will be like memorial days. The only difference is that the author and Fred will not hoist the national flag as would be the case on the Memorial Day.



#### 四、课文译文

### 小猪之死

E·B·怀特

1. 在一个九月的中旬,为了照看一只生病的猪,我花费了好几个日日夜夜,被某种力量驱使着要把这个时段描述出来,尤其是因为这只猪死了而我还活着。事情很容易颠倒过来,不过那样的话就没有人

留下来讲述这件事了。甚至现在,距这件事情发生的时间如此之近,我却回想不起事情发生的确切时间,也说不清那头猪死于第三个还是第四个晚上。对时间的不确定让我感觉到我体质上的确大不如前;倘若我身体健壮,岂能搞不清我与这头猪究竟熬过了多少个不眠之夜呢!

2. 春暖花开时节买一头猪崽,然后经过从夏至秋几个月的精心饲养,寒冷的冬季来临的时候宰杀,这对我来说是再熟悉不过的计划,延续着古老的模式。这就好像绝大多数的农场上演精确地忠实于原剧本的一幕幕悲剧。这杀戮蓄谋已久,毋庸置疑,然而手段敏捷利落,提供给喜庆盛宴的熏肉和火腿便是它们的结局,至于这样的结局是否值得则无人质疑。

3. 偶尔事情也会出错——某个演员提前念了台词,那么整个演出就会出现混乱,以致停滞。我的猪该吃食的时候没有出场,我担心的情绪马上散布开来。这部经典悲剧的轮廓和步骤消失殆尽。我俨然发现自己开始扮演起猪的朋友和私人医生——一个拿着助推器灌肠剂袋子当道具的滑稽角色。就在当天下午我有一种预感,这部剧将永远不会再获平衡,而我的同情心完全趋向了猪的这一边。这是一部闹剧——一场戏剧性的表演吸引了我的老达克斯猎犬弗雷德。他又是守夜,又是拖灌肠剂袋,当一切结束的时候又充当葬礼主持。死猪尸体下葬的时候,我们两个都伤心欲绝,我们失去的不是餐桌上的火腿,而是失去了一头猪,一个家庭成员。事实证明这头猪对于我来说非常珍贵,不是在我饥饿时提供大餐,而是他在这个苦难世界里经历了一次磨难。我把故事讲过头了,现在回来从头讲起。

4. 我的猪栏设在一个旧果园的末端,一所房子的底层。我饲养过的猪生活在一个过去曾是冰库的褪色的建筑中,有一个可以走动的惬意的院子,一棵苹果树伏在低矮的篱笆上遮着阴凉。一头猪不可能要求比这更好的条件了——或许它压根儿就没提过要求。锯末给它提供了舒服温暖的床,同时又可以被它用嘴拱来拱去。然而正是这些锯末被怀疑是让猪患病的罪魁祸首。我的邻居说他认为这头猪有块儿新地面就没事了——跟种植马铃薯同样的道理。他觉得这些锯末不卫生,也从未看好锯末这种东西。

5. 那是在下午四点钟左右,我第一次意识到这只猪有些不对劲。他没有来到食槽前吃食,当猪不吃食(或孩子不吃饭)时,房主或者冰库主都会感到阵阵恐惧。我看了看猪舍中四脚伸开躺在锯末里的猪后,打了四次电话。达默龙先生接的电话,“猪病了该怎么办呢?”我问道。(在农村打电话,从来不需要确认身份;电话一端的人很快通过声音和问题的种类知道在和谁通话。)

6. “我不了解。我的猪从来没病过,”达默龙先生说,“但我会尽快去寻找答案。你挂了电话吧,我去问亨利。”

7. 达默龙先生在五分钟内就给我回了电话:“亨利说把他翻转过来,给他灌两盎司蓖麻油或橄榄油。如果这样不奏效的话,妙诀是给他注射肥皂水。他说他几乎可以确信这只猪可以逃过这一劫。即使他说的不对,对猪也没有什么伤害。”

8. 我对达默龙先生表示了谢意,但没有马上去做。我堆坐在椅子上,花了几分钟思考我的烦恼,然后起身到谷仓收拾了些凌乱的东西。不知不觉地,我把这种治疗手段拖延了一个小时。我郑重地认为这种做法毁了养猪的整个程序;我本不想有任何事情中断正常的饲养,要它稳定地生长,不想灌油,不想有任何的不正常。我就是想要饲养一头猪,一餐一餐地喂,从春到夏,从夏到秋。我甚至不晓得家里是否有两盎司的蓖麻油!

9. 刚过五点钟我想起来那天晚上我们已经被邀请出去参加一个晚餐会。要给猪服药,就不能浪费时间了。晚餐约会好像经常跟别的事情撞车:我搬进的是生活惬意悠闲的社区,经常一两个星期不被邀请或邀请别人参加聚会;而一旦有了聚会,我也被邀请了,就会突然发生一些事情(一般提前一小时或两小时),让人们的交际活动看起来不合时宜。我已经渐渐相信女主人有特殊的预测力,她们已经算出来而故意安排这个晚餐,与我的猪需要治病或者其他什么不顺的事情构成了一种巧合。总之,现在五点钟已过,我知道我已经不能再拖延给猪灌药的时间了。

10. 当我和儿子拿着装有蓖麻油的瓶子和一条晾衣绳来到了猪栏时,猪已经从他的屋子里出来,正

无精打采地站在院子中间。他用微弱的声音打了声招呼。我们能看得出他感觉非常不舒服和彷徨。我拿着晾衣绳,原以为不得不把他捆起来(这头猪的重量超过100多磅),但我们却根本没用上。我儿子弯下身子,抓住他的两只前爪,快速地把他的翻了过来。当他张开嘴尖叫时,我顺势把蓖麻油倒进了他的嗓子——一块儿我以前没有见过的粉红色皱状区域。当瓶颈在他的嘴里时,我正好看到了瓶子标签,上面写着“纯测试”。猪的尖叫被蓖麻油压低了一些,但仍然是歇斯底里般的高调门,好像他受到了折磨。但是尖叫并没有持续很长时间,忽然就结束了。他伸开脚,自己站了起来。

11. 当他嘴角向下被翻过来时,他看上去带着一副不悦的表情。当他再次翻回来站立的时候,即使在病中他恢复了猪特有的像是在笑的样子。他站在地上,轻轻地吮吸着残油,有几滴从嘴唇边漏了出来。他看着我,害羞的短睫毛下那原本淘气的眼睛里充满了厌恶和憎恨。我用沾满油的手轻轻地给他挠痒,他表现得很安静,仿佛回忆起原来没病时那种被挠抓时的舒服的感觉,又像是在回忆着刚才被制服的屈辱。当我站在那儿的时候才注意到在他背上靠近尾根部有四五个呈红棕色的暗色小点,每个有家蝇般大小。我不能确定它们是什么,也看不出这会有什么麻烦,但又认为它们不只是表皮青淤的痕迹,它们很可能是内部组织的伤疤。他身上的白鬃几乎全部把它们隐藏起来,我得用手指分开鬃毛才能看清楚。

12. 几个小时后,几乎是午夜时分,别人请我吃完晚饭后,我拿着一只手电筒回到猪栏。这个患者已经睡着了。我弯下身子,抚摸他的耳朵(像你把手放在孩子额头的情形),觉得耳朵不热。借着灯光我仔细地检查了院子和房子,看看有没有迹象表明蓖麻油起了作用。我没发现什么,就回去睡了。

13. 我们正在经历一段非常反常的天气,闷热且雾气沉沉。浓雾每晚笼罩着村庄。中午的几个小时雾会渐渐散去,但傍晚时又悄悄地潜回,先是覆盖在树梢,接着一下子飘过田地,挡住了外面的世界,将整个村庄的房屋、人和动物都裹在其中。每个人都希望会有所改变,但这天气就是凉不下来。第二天又是一个热天。早饭前我去查看病猪,在食槽里放一些牛奶来吸引他。当我用牙发出一种啜食的声音提醒他这里有过去那些好吃的大餐时,他却用眼睛死死地盯着我。对于那些羞涩、刚断奶的小猪,这些小把戏一般会奏效并且将使它们多进食;可对于一头生病的大猪,这种做法没有丝毫意义,我发出的声音肯定只会让他觉得更难受。现在他不仅不会渴望这些食物,而且觉得反感。我在苹果树下发现了夜里他曾呕吐过的地方。

14. 这时,尽管我的心里充满了沮丧,我还不认为我会失去我的猪。看着一头健康的猪充满活力,人们常常感到自己也是精力充沛。看到他狼吞虎咽地吃掉食槽里的食物,人们就像是预定了今后的大餐。而当这一切突然结束,槽中的食物丝毫没动,任其在阳光下发霉时,猪的不适也就让人觉得自己也不舒服,生活变得失去了安全感、失去了平衡,变得转瞬即逝。

15. 在我的心情随着猪的境况而低落时,我的那条讨厌的狗的精力却越来越好。我们经常穿过果园沿着小路去猪栏,这让他非常开心。这条狗有关节炎,行动不便利,其实如果能找到什么人愿意端着盘子给他送饭吃,他可能就会卧床不起了。

16. 他从来没放过任何机会跟着我去,而且独自做了好多次专门探望。你每时每刻都能在猪栏处看到他,摇着尾巴、跛着脚,那张白脸沿着篱笆拨开草丛——像个脖子上吊着听诊器的快活的庸医,在开出邪恶的处方时露出龇齿奸笑着。当灌肠剂和大桶的肥皂泡出现时,他彻底开心了,设法从低矮的院子的横木下费力地挤过他那硕大的身躯并且主动担任灌肠治疗员的角色。一次当我把那个袋放低了去试一下是否畅通时,他还急急忙忙地跑过来喝了几口肥皂泡以检查一下是不是真的很有功效。我也注意到,每当有麻烦出现时,弗雷德都会兴奋地吃下与之相关的东西,他喜欢苦味。当够不到那个袋子时,他立刻关注起猪,并且围前围后,像座铁塔一样坚强有力但碍手碍脚。令人非常惊奇的是猪在整个嘉年华似的治疗场面中安静地站在那儿,灌肠剂尽管不是很有作用,灌肠过程却没有我所预料的那么困难。

17. 我发现猪一旦接受灌肠,事情就不会逆转了,人再没有机会回到过去的角色。现在这头猪的命

运和我的命运紧紧地联系在一起,似乎冲洗直肠的胶皮管就是连接我们情感的纽带。从他生病到死去,我无时无刻不在想着他。如何想尽办法使他脱离苦海成了我心里想的唯一的事情。他的苦难很快就变成了世间所有悲惨经历的写照。那天下午,由于无法治愈我的猪,我打电话给 20 英里外的一个兽医,并且正式地把这个病例移交给他。他问了很多问题,当我不经意地提到猪背上有几个黑斑时,他的声音变得有些异样。

18. “我不想吓唬你,”他说道,“但是如果有斑点一般认为是丹毒。”

19. 我们在考虑丹毒时,接线员频繁地打扰我们,他不知道电话连接是否正常。

20. “如果一只猪得了丹毒会不会传染给人类呢?”我问道。

21. “是的,能够。”兽医回答道。

22. “他们应答了吗?”接线员问道。

23. “是的。”我说道。然后我又继续和兽医说话,“你最好亲自来一次,并给猪做一个全面的检查。”

24. “我不能亲自去,”兽医说,“但麦克法兰今晚可以去,他在这方面比我懂得更多。你没有必要过多担心那些斑点,要深处的出血梗塞才能表明是丹毒。”

25. “深处的出血什么?”我问道。

26. “梗塞,”医生答道。

27. “他们应答了吗?”接线员问道。

28. “是的,”我说,“我不知道除了大约像家蝇那般大小,你把那些斑点叫什么。如果那猪有丹毒,我猜想我也会有,因为我们最近一直在一起。”

29. “麦克法兰将会去的。”兽医说。

30. 我挂上了电话。由于嗓子干渴就到碗柜拿了一瓶威士忌。深处出血梗塞——这个说法开始在我的脑海中产生挥之不去的印象。在他被慢慢谋杀的几个月中我一直以为他不会出现什么问题;我对猪的健康状况和抗病能力深信不疑,尤其是对于我养的猪的健康,这一直都是我感到骄傲的计划的一部分。这种醒悟来得太突然,使我深感不安,因为我知道世事难料,在猪身上发生的事情同样也有可能在我身边其他看似平静之处发生。我想忘记这个令人不快的想法,但它总是不停地出现。我喝了点儿威士忌,尽管想到猪栏看一看是否有新的迹象,但我惶恐万分,确信自己也患上了丹毒。

31. 夜幕降临许久了,晚餐的碗筷都收拾好了,一辆车驶进来,是麦克法兰到了。有一个女孩儿与之同来,在夜幕之中我勉强能看清她,她看起来年轻漂亮。麦克法兰说:“这是欧文小姐。我们在海边野餐,所以来得晚了些。”

32. 麦克法兰站在车道上脱去了夹克和衬衫。当我帮他找到工作服并拉上拉链时,在手电筒的微光下看到他那粗壮有力的臂膀和灵巧的手。在他车的后座里随身用具出奇得多,他迅速地检查了一遍,选出链子、注射器、油瓶、橡皮管以及一些我不认识的东西。欧文小姐说她愿意与我们一起去看看那头猪。我带路沿着那果园的坡路前行,用手电光为他们照亮道路。我们三个爬过了篱笆,进入了猪栏,在猪旁边蹲了下来,麦克法兰给猪测量肛温。在手电筒的光下我看到那女孩儿的订婚戒指熠熠发光。

33. “体温不高,”麦克法兰一边说,一边在光线下转动着温度计。“你不必担心什么丹毒了。”他用手在猪的胃部慢慢地摸着,当摸到一处时猪痛苦地叫了起来。

34. “可怜的小猪猪,”欧文小姐说道。

35. 这两天来对猪的治疗接下来被重新做了一遍,只是由医生做得更专业。我与欧文小姐递给麦克法兰所需要的东西——抓住他绕在猪上腭的链子,握着注射器,拿着瓶塞和胶管头。我们大家凭着紧急情况下产生的本能的合作精神,在黑暗里默契地配合,猪并没有反抗,屋子笼罩在黑暗里,给人一种安全感和亲切感。当我上床睡觉时虽然很累,但感觉如释重负,因为把一部分责任转交给了一个职业医生。但我开始意识到猪可能会死掉。

36. 小猪 24 小时后死了,或许是 48 小时后死了。这段时间有些模糊不清,小猪死的时间比我讲述的时间或许少了一天,或许多了一天。在最后一天时间里,我不时拿些清冷的水去喂他。这时他也是倾尽全力站起来,将头放到桶里,抽抽鼻子,左右嗅嗅,用嘴吸着但没有吃更多;他把鼻子浸到水里,搅动着,吸进嘴里又吐出来,这样做好像让他感到舒服些。现在他更多的时间是躺在屋里,一半身体埋进锯末中。在接近最后我去照看的时候,发现他在试图把床整理得更舒服些,但是他已经没有那么多气力了。当他把嘴插入锯末时,他甚至不能犁出一条小沟以便能躺进去。

37. 他死在屋外。我睡觉前去看他时,他正展开四肢躺在距离门几英尺的地方。我弯下身子去看了一下,他确实死了。我没有动他:他的脸看上去很温和,既没有表现出来非常平静,也没有表现出极度的痛苦,尽管在我看来他历经磨难。我回到房间来到床上,我的内心在哭泣——那是深处滴血的眼泪。直到第二天早晨快八点了,我才醒来。从开着的窗望出去,看见坟坑已经挖好了,就在过了垃圾场的一棵野苹果树下。我可以听到铁锹挖下时与石头碰撞发出的声音。从未询问那墓地用来葬谁,我暗自对自己说,那是用来葬你的。我可以肯定弗雷德一定在监督掘墓的过程,因此我可以慢慢吃早饭。

38. 这是个星期六的早晨。挖坑者正在挖坑的那片灌木丛笼罩在闷热和昏暗之中,天空也阴云密布。在接骨木和小松树交错的树林里的一棵苹果树下,伦尼已经挖好了一个大坑,五英尺长,三英尺宽,三英尺深。他正站在坑里掀出最后一锹土,弗雷德则在坑边上严肃地兜着圈子巡视着,不停地碰到坑边松散的土,使之又慢慢流淌回坑里。由于几个星期不下雨土壤很干燥,甚至挖到三英尺深,土仍然是干粉状的。我正站在那儿呆呆地看着,坑的底部一只大蚯蚓由于铁锹挖掘而露出一部分身躯,于是它向更深的地方逃去,缓慢地往回缩,寻找更遥远更寂寞更潮湿的地方去了。伦尼从坑里跨出来,把锹靠在树上,点了一支烟。这时,一个绿色的小苹果从头顶的树枝上落下来,掉到坑里。关于这最后一幕的描写显得有点冗长——阴沉的天空、杂乱的树丛、即将来临的降雨,以及传说中与尸体做伴的蚯蚓和烤猪时常用做点缀的苹果。

39. 即使这样,我认为,动物的葬礼是直接而快速的,因而比人的葬礼更体面:没有人在逝者的灵堂中驻足逗留,没有花环和松枝的装饰;我们在猪的后腿绑好绳子,迅速地把他从院子里拖出来,放到马车上,留下碾碎的青草和土堆上光滑的碎石。我们的送葬队像模像样,弗雷德扮演着不太称职的护棺人,蹒跚着尾随在后面,脸上的每条皱纹中都展现出亲人丧亡的表情。在墓边,验尸过程快捷而熟练,那些致猪于死地的内脏先扔进坑里,最后让他刚好躺在上面。

40. 我扔进第一铲土,然后大家动作迅速,没有交谈,直到最后全部完成。我拾起了绳索,拴在弗雷德脖子上(他是个臭名昭著的盗贼)。我们三个一字排开从小路返回了家。弗雷德拱起后背,一路上挣扎着,佯装一副特别不寻常的丧亲至悲的模样。我注意到,尽管他的体重远不及猪,但是由于他活蹦乱跳,拽他相当费力。

41. 猪死亡的消息很快被传开了,我也收到了朋友和邻居们的同情之声,因为没有人对这件事表示漠不关心。我很快发现,像猪的早亡这样的离别大家都会庄重地标记在日历上,这是牵涉整个社区的悲伤。我写下这篇文字表达我的忏悔和悲伤,我没有把猪养好,也没法解释为什么我的猪没有像其他猪那样长大。林中的坟墓没有做标记,但是弗雷德能带着极大的善意引领悼念者准确无误地到达那里。在回想往事和绝望的时候,在一个我们自己选择不升旗的纪念里,我知道我和弗雷德会经常来的,独自或一同来。





## 五、练习答案及详解

### I. Vocabulary

A. Look up the following words and phrases. Select the meaning that best suits the sentence in which they appear.

1. a piece of furniture or small object used in a play or movie
2. smooth, regular, uniform, constant
3. to tip over; to overturn
4. a period of time, usually a short one; a period when there is a particular type of weather
5. to rise or lift
6. money paid in advance as part payment to bind a contract bargain; thing meant as a sign or promise of what will follow
7. washing out (a body cavity or wound) with water or a medicated fluid
8. efficient speed; promptness; quickness
9. the track or course of anything that has gone before or passed by
10. full of energy and life

### IV. Questions on Appreciation

1. Although the author humorously describes the death of his pig, he shows great sympathy, worry, and sadness. On the whole, the story should be considered a tragedy instead of a comedy.
2. When the pig looked sick, White shifted from a butcher in winter to pig's friend and physician. In his account, the relations between human and animal are concerned in a philosophical way. It's concerned more about the insecure, displaced and transitory world.
3. His dog, Fred, is not simply an animal, like the pig, he's a family member, who is in charge of the digging.
4. Time may be circular for seasons, the weather, and human nature, but for humans, or animals in this case, time is painfully one-directional. This is probably why death has been a constant theme in White's writing.
5. White accounts for the death of pig in a humorous mood. Although it's a tragedy, he has a good choice of words and figure speeches such as personification, metaphor. By using long and involved sentences, parallelism, and formal words, the author conveys a sense of pseudo solemnity which creates humor.
6. One example of such humor is: This uncertainty afflicts me with a sense of personal deterioration. If I were in decent health, I would know how. The humor is conveyed by the solemn tone as if the event were of great historical importance. It is extremely funny because normally, nobody cares whether a pig died on the third day or fourth day.
7. This is a summary of the scene of the grave being dug. Everything about the last scene seemed overwritten. In order to hold the reader's interest, he varies the sentence lengths and uses clauses to avoid repeating the same subjects. Parallelism is also used to show the powerful sentence structure. As compared with Para 38, it's really boring and dull in structure. Readers may give it up while reading it.

8. Literary illusions make a vivid impression and strong effect on readers. White's essay flows so smoothly that readers are so absorbed in it.

9. For one example, "... with the fog shutting in every night, scaling for a few hours in mid-day, then creeping back again at dark, drifting in first over the trees on the point, then suddenly blowing across the fields, blotting out the world and taking possession of houses, men, and animals." For another example, "... everything about this last scene seemed overwritten—the dismal sky, the shabby woods, the imminence of rain, the worm ( legendary bedfellow of the dead), the apple( conventional garnish of a pig)." The author achieves the smooth style by avoiding repeating the subject and using long and complex sentences.

**V. Explain the following in your own words, bringing out any implied meanings.**

1. The tragedy has an ending—the killing of a pig and the serving of its meat. The killing deliberately planned and carried out efficiently, is the most type of murder. However, whether pigs should end their lives that way has never been questioned.
2. A pig couldn't ask for any better living conditions; at least no pig has ever complained. In a word, my pig lived in a pleasant environment. Note the humor here—a pig couldn't speak; therefore it couldn't let us know whether it was contented with its living conditions or not.
3. The author is comparing a pig to a child. The two share quite some similarities; hungry all the time and dear to the family.
4. Fred was quite excited about the event. He was down at the pigpen all the time. Because of his swollen joints, he moved about unsteadily. His face set apart the grass along the fence as he moved about. He was like a doctor, with his long, drooping ears dangling like a stethoscope, and he scabbled on the ground as if he were prescribing some medicine.
5. When it was time to dose the pig, Fred became even more excited, and he managed to get through the fence, and acted as if he was taking charge of the medical treatment.
6. Our procession was a serious and efficient one. Fred, who acted as the pallbearer, walked unsteadily in the back, though he was not qualified for that function. The sorrow of losing a family member was shown clearly in his face. The autopsy of the body's inwards was done right at the side of the grave. The intestines of the pig were first thrown into the grave, so the pig could lie exactly on those things that caused his death.
7. If a pig dies before he is supposed to, it is a serious matter for the whole community to remember. The whole community would share the sadness for his death.
8. The purpose of this essay is to show that I am sorry for what has happened to my pig, since I have failed to raise the pig and cannot provide a reason why my pig didn't grow the way other pigs have grown.
9. The pig's grave in the woods doesn't have a tombstone, but whenever somebody wants to visit it, Fred will show him the way. I know we will often visit it, separate or together, when we need to ponder over problems or when we are depressed.  
The author and Fred will often visit the pig's grave in the woods to show their love whenever they like, and these days will be like memorial days. The only difference is that the author and Fred will not hoist the national flag as would be the case on the Memorial Day.

VI. Translate the following into Chinese.

A. Phrases

1. 记录这段时间所发生的事情
2. 伤心欲绝
3. 将来饿的时候成为食物
4. 收拾凌乱的东西
5. 用微弱的声音打了个招呼
6. 世间所有悲惨经历的写照
7. 在我的脑子里留下深刻的印象
8. 为他们照亮道路
9. 测量肛温
10. 内心在哭泣——深处滴血的眼泪

B. Sentences

1. 他站在地上,轻轻地吮吸着残油,有几滴从嘴唇边漏了出来。他看着我,害羞的短睫毛下那原本淘气的眼睛里充满了厌恶和憎恨。
2. 我们正在经历一段非常反常的天气,闷热且雾气沉沉。浓雾每晚笼罩着村庄。中午的几个小时会渐渐散去,但傍晚时又悄悄地落回,先是覆盖在树梢,接着一下子飘过田地,挡住了外面的世界,将整个村庄的房屋、人和动物都裹在其中。
3. 对于那些羞涩、刚断奶的小猪,这些小把戏一般会奏效并且将使它们多进食;可对于一头生病的大猪,这种做法却没有丝毫意义,我发出的声音肯定只会让他觉得更难受。
4. 看到一头健康的猪充满活力,人们常常感到自己也是精力充沛。看到它狼吞虎咽地吃掉食槽中的食物,人们就像是预定了今后的大餐。而当一切突然结束,槽中的食物丝毫未动,任其在阳光下发霉时,猪的不适也就让人觉得自己也不舒服,生活变得失去了安全感、失去了平衡,变得转瞬即逝。
5. 现在这头猪的命运和我的命运紧紧地联系在一起,似乎冲洗直肠的橡皮管就是连接我们情感的纽带。从他生病到死去,我无时无刻不想着他。如何想尽办法使他脱离苦海成了我心里想的唯一的事情。他的苦难很快就变成了世间所有悲惨经历的写照。
6. 这种醒悟来得太突然,使我深感不安,因为我知道世事难料,在猪身上发生的事情同样也有可能在我身边其他看似平静之处发生。我想忘记这个令人不快的想法,但它总是不停地出现。
7. 我们大家凭着紧急情况下产生的本能的合作精神,在黑暗中默契地配合,猪并没有反抗,屋子笼罩在黑暗里,给人一种安全感和亲切感。
8. 关于这最后一幕的描写显得有点冗长——阴沉的天空、杂乱的树丛、即将来临的降雨,以及传说中与尸体做伴的蚯蚓和烤猪时常用做点缀的苹果。

# Lesson Seven

## Inaugural Address



### 一、课文导读

#### (一) 内容梗概

这是美国第 35 任总统约翰·肯尼迪于 1961 年 1 月 20 日发表的就职演说。这篇演说内容充实，文体节奏感鲜明，被认为是美国历史上最精彩的总统就职演说之一。

演说号召全体美国人肩负起保卫人类自由的重任，共同反对专制、贫困、疾病和战争这些人类共有的敌人，并为了实现这一重任、确保人类共同富裕的生活，组成全球性的伟大联盟。在演说的篇尾，肯尼迪提出了著名的、极具号召力的建议：不要问你的国家能为你做什么，要自问你能为你的国家做何贡献。

这篇以和平和友谊为主题的演说含义丰富，语言简洁，用词精确，其中很多脍炙人口的名句至今仍被人们引用。

#### (二) 背景知识

John F. Kennedy



John F. Kennedy



Inaugural Address of John F. Kennedy

Of Irish descent, he was born in Brookline, Massachusetts, on May 29, 1917. Graduating from Harvard in 1940, he entered the Navy. In 1943, when his PT boat was rammed and sunk by a Japanese destroyer, Kennedy, despite grave injuries, led the survivors through perilous waters to safety.

On November 22, 1963, when he was hardly past his first thousand days in office, John Fitzgerald Kennedy was killed by an assassin's bullets as his motorcade wound through Dallas, Texas. Kennedy was the youngest man elected President and the youngest to die.

His Inaugural Address offered the memorable injunction: "Ask not what your country can do for you—ask what you can do for your country." As President, he set out to redeem his campaign pledge to

get America moving again. His economic programs launched the country on its longest sustained expansion since World War II; before his death, he laid plans for a massive assault on persisting pockets of privation and poverty.



## 二、词汇与短语

### (一) 词汇

①adversary /'ædvəsəri/ *n.*

opponent in a contest; enemy 竞赛中的对手; 敌手 【同义】challenger

—He defeated his old adversary. 他击败了他的老对手。

②asunder /ə'sʌndə/ *adv.*

into pieces; apart 碎; 散

—The house was ripped asunder by the explosion. 房子被炸得粉碎。

③beachhead /'bi:tʃhed/ *n.*

a position gained as a secure starting point for any action 阵地

④belabor /bɪ'leɪbə/ *v.*

1) to spend too much time and make too much effort on 花费大量的时间和精力做 【同义】overstress

【反义】ignore

—He belabored his problems by himself. 他自己花了大量的精力解决问题。

2) to beat sb. /sth. hard 攻击 【同义】attack

—He belabored the donkey mercilessly. 他恶狠狠地抽打那头驴。

⑤bond /bɒnd/ *n.*

1) shackle 束缚; 桎梏

—The people live under the bonds of oppression and tyranny. 人们生活在压迫和专制之中。

2) thing that unites people or groups 将人或团体联合起来的事物

—The trade agreement helped to strengthen the bonds between the two countries. 这项贸易协定有助于加强两国之间的联系。

⑥embattled /ɪm'bætlɪd/ *adj.*

1) prepared for battle 严阵以待的 【同义】beleaguered

—Our group is an embattled troop. 我们的队伍是严阵以待的部队。

2) in a condition of defense 处于防御状态的

—Our city isn't an embattled city. 我们的城市是不设防的城市。

⑦forebear /'fɔ:beə/ *n.*

person from whom one is descended 祖宗; 祖先 【同义】forerunner 【反义】descendant

【派生】forbearance *n.* 自治; 耐性

⑧forum /'fɔ:rəm/ *n.*

place where important public issues can be discussed 论坛 【同义】debate; discussion

—The letters page serves as a useful forum for the exchange of readers' views. 读者来信版是读者交换意见的有益园地。

⑨heritage /'herɪtɪdʒ/ *n.*

things such as works of art, cultural achievements and folklore that have been passed on from earlier generations 遗产 【同义】inheritance; legacy

—These ancient theaters are part of our literary heritage. 这些古代戏剧是文学遗产的一部分。

⑩ **invective** /in'vektiv/ *n.*

violent verbal attack 猛烈抨击; 咒骂 【同义】criticism; abuse 【反义】praise

—He lets out a stream of invective. 他破口大骂。

⑪ **mortal** /'mɔ:tl/ *adj.*

belonging to a human being 人类的; 血肉之躯的 【同义】human 【反义】immortal

【派生】mortally *adv.* 致命地

⑫ **oath** /əʊθ/ *n.*

solemn promise to do sth. or solemn declaration that sth. is true 誓约; 誓言

—There is standard form of oath used in law courts. 法庭中使用的誓词有固定的格式。

⑬ **observe** /əb'zɜ:v/ *v.*

1) to celebrate (festivals, birthdays, anniversaries, etc.) 庆祝; 过(节日、生日、周年等)

—Do they observe Christmas Day in that country? 那个国家的人过圣诞节吗?

2) to say by way of comment 评说; 评论 【同义】remark

—He observed that it would probably rain. 他说很可能下雨。

【派生】observer *n.* 观察者; 评论者

⑭ **pledge** /pledʒ/ *v.*

1) to promise solemnly to give (support, etc.); to give (one's word, honor, etc.) as a pledge 保证给予支持; 以(誓言、名誉等)担保 【同义】oath; vow

—He pledged a donation to the charity. 他承诺向慈善机构捐款。

2) to drink to the health of sb. 为某人的健康祝酒

—They pledge the bride and bridegroom. 他们向新娘和新郎祝酒。

⑮ **renewal** /ri'nju:əl/ *n.*

1) renewing or being renewed 更新; 恢复 【同义】restitution; rebirth

—Any renewal of negotiations will be welcomed. 任何为恢复谈判的做法都值得欢迎。

2) act of renewing 更新; 重建

—We've dealt with several renewals this week. 我们本周内处理了几件续约的事。

【派生】renewable *adj.* 可延长有效期的; 可续期的

⑯ **shield** /ʃi:ld/ *v.*

to protect sb. /sth. from harm; to defend sb. /sth. from criticism, attack, etc. 保护或庇护

【同义】guard

—The police officer shielded the child with his body. 那个警察用他的身体保护了那个小孩儿。

⑰ **sovereign** /'sɒvrɪn/ *adj.*

1) (of power) without limit; highest 权利至高无上的 【同义】monarch; supreme

—Who holds sovereign power in the state? 谁掌握国家的最高权力?

2) (of a nation, state, ruler) fully independent and self-governing; having total power (民族、国家、统治者)完全独立自主的 【同义】independent

—China became a sovereign state in 1949. 1949年, 中国成为主权国家。

⑱ **split** /splɪt/ *v.*

1) to cause sth. to break or be broken (into two or more parts), esp. from end to end 使某物裂开; 碎裂 【同义】tear; rip; crack

—She was splitting logs with an axe. 她正用斧子劈木头。

2) to cause people to separate or divide into opposing groups or parties 使人们分裂成相对的集体或派别

—That was the issue which has split the party from top to bottom. 那就是导致该党自上而下分裂的问题。

① subversion /səb'vɜ:ʃən/ *n.*

secret activities that are intended to encourage people to oppose the government 颠覆; 推翻

【同义】treason

② tap /tæp/ *v.*

1) to extract sth. from sth. 自某处获取某物

—It is the new way of tapping the skills of young people. 这是使年轻人发挥技能的新途径。

2) to knock gently on sb. /sth. 轻拍 【同义】beat; hit

—He tapped the box with a stick. 他用小棒敲打盒子。

③ temper /'tempə/ *v.*

to temper sth. (with sth.): to moderate or soften the effects of sth.; to mitigate sth. 调和或减轻某事物的作用

—The judge tempered justice with mercy. 那个法官法外施恩。

④ tribulation /'tribju'leɪʃən/ *n.*

distress; great suffering 痛苦; 忧患 【同义】misfortune

⑤ writ /rɪt/ *n.*

a formal legal document ordering or prohibiting some actions 书面命令 【同义】summon; injunction

—They served him with a writ. 他们向他递了令状。

## (二) 短语

### ① at issue

yet to be decided or realized 有争议的; 讨论中的

—What's at issue here is the whole future of the industry. 争论的焦点是这个行业总的前景。

### ② at odds

in disagreement 反对; 争论

—Her parents are at odds all night long. 她的父母一整晚都在争论。

### ③ to be replaced by

to provide a substitute for sb. /sth. 更换; 替换

—He is inefficient and must be replaced by another. 他不称职, 必须撤换。

### ④ to convert into

to change sth. from one form or use to another 改变形式或用途

—He converted his house into flats. 他把他的房子改成了几个单元房。

### ⑤ to cast off

to abandon or reject sb. /sth. 抛弃或驳回某人/某物

—She's cast off three boyfriends in a month. 她一个月之内就甩了三个男朋友。

⑥ to push back

to move back in force 推回

—He was pushed back at once. 他立即被推了回来。

⑦ to exchange with

to give and receive sth. in return 交换; 交易

—Ali exchanges seats with Ben. 阿里与本调换了座位。



### 三、课文注释

① We observe today not a victory of party but a celebration of freedom—symbolizing an end as well as a beginning—signifying renewal as well as change. (Para 1)

The inauguration today is not to celebrate the victory of the Democratic Party in the presidential election but to celebrate American democratic tradition, that is, the freedom of choice, participatory democracy, and representative government.

It shows that the oath of the President and the task of preserving, protecting and defending the Constitution of the United States have not changed, yet the approaches to issues and policies pursued will change because the world is very different now.

② The world is very different now. (Para 2)

This is a transitional sentence, indicating that the oath is still the old one but the global situation is very different now.

③ For man holds in his mortal hands the power to abolish all forms of human poverty and all forms of human life. (Para 2)

As a result of technological development, human beings now have the power to put an end to poverty and human misery, but at the same time, they now possess nuclear weapons and have the power to destroy the whole world, rendering it uninhabitable and lifeless.

The life span of man is short yet within this short period of time man can do great good, eradicating poverty, or great evil, destroying the world and killing all life on earth.

④ ... to which we are committed today at home and around the world. (Para 3)

To export democracy, to rebuild the world in the American image has been an American strategic goal since World War II. This idea is embodied in Document 68 of the National Security Council of the U. S. approved in 1950. This idea has been reiterated by all post-war presidents.

⑤ United, there is little we cannot do in a host of cooperative ventures. Divided, there is little we can do—for we dare not meet a powerful challenge at odds and split asunder. (Para 6)

These statements are addressed to NATO allies, especially France. France, under de Gaulle, was demanding a greater say in the command structure of NATO and was determined to develop its own nuclear force. Hence, this stress on the importance of unity.

⑥ To those new states whom we welcome to the ranks of the free, we pledge our word that one form of colonial control shall not have passed away merely to be replaced by a far more iron tyranny. (Para 7)

one form of colonial control; It refers to old colonial rule, that is, colonization by British, French, Dutch imperialists.

far more iron tyranny; It is American political jargon for communist rule. This shows Kennedy's anti-



communist stand. He thinks that communist rule is far worse than old forms of colonialism.

- ⑦ **We shall not always expect to find them supporting our view. But we shall always hope to find them strongly supporting their own freedom. . . (Para 7)**

It is not surprising for these countries to hold different opinions. But it is necessary for these countries to carefully guard their hard-won independence, to make sure that they will not fall victim to a far more cruel tyranny.

Note the tone of these statements. The warning is expressed in the form of a hope. In the late 1950s and early 1960s, there was intense competition between the United States and the Soviet Union to win the minds and hearts of the newly independent countries. President Kennedy, therefore, tries to persuade in a friendly manner, to remind these countries of past experience. There is a careful avoidance of arrogance in his tone.

- ⑧ **But this peaceful revolution of hope cannot become the prey of hostile powers. (Para 9)**

But we should not let any Communist power take advantage of this alliance for progress to expand its influence.

**hostile powers:** The President is referring to the Communist countries, especially the Soviet Union and Cuba. A metaphor is used here. The hostile powers are compared to predators and the revolution of hope is compared to a prey, a victim.

- ⑨ **... where the instruments of war have far outpaced the instruments of peace. . . (Para 10)**

In this age we have more weapons with greater destructive power to wage war but we do not have many means to construct peace; the danger of destructive war is far greater than the prospect of peace. Antithesis is employed here.

- ⑩ **... we renew our pledge of support—to prevent it from becoming merely a forum for invective—to strengthen its shield of the new and the weak—and to enlarge the area in which its writ may run. (Para 10)**

As a result of the use of veto power by the United States and the Soviet Union, the United Nations was rendered more or less helpless, and it could hardly play any constructive role in the resolution of conflicts or pressing cross-border issues.

**in which its writ may run:** in which its authority and mandate would continue to be in effect  
**forum of invective:** This is an apt description of the states of the UN.

- ⑪ **... before the dark powers of destruction unleashed by science engulf all humanity in planned or accidental self-destruction. (Para 11)**

... before the world is destroyed by a nuclear war launched in a preemptive attack or caused by accident.

- ⑫ **We dare not tempt them with weakness. (Para 12)**

This idea must have come from Churchill's speech at Fulton, Missouri in 1946. In the speech Churchill said, "... there is nothing they (the Russians) admire so much as strength, and there is nothing for which they have less respect than for military weakness. . . We cannot afford, if we can help it, to work on narrow margins, offering temptation to a trial of strength."

- ⑬ **For only when our arms are sufficient beyond doubt can we be certain beyond doubt that they will never be employed. (Para 12)**

This was the basic approach of the United States in the Cold War period; to negotiate from a position

of strength.

The idea is expressed in an emphatic structure with balanced phrases.

- ⑭... remembering on both sides that civility is not a sign of weakness, and sincerity is always subject to proof. (Para 14)

To be ready to negotiate and establish friendly relations does not mean that we are weak or afraid. Declarations of sincere intention have to be tested by actions.

- ⑮Let both sides, for the first time, formulate serious and precise proposals for the inspection and control of arms—and bring the absolute power to destroy other nations under the absolute control of all nations. (Para 16)

One of the knotty problems in arms control negotiation at that time was on-the-spot verification. The American side insisted on on-the-spot verification while the Soviet side rejected such verification.

- ⑯And if a beachhead of cooperation may push back the jungles of suspicion... (Para 19)

If small scale cooperation can serve as a starting point to dispel deep suspicion...

beachhead and jungles: There are some metaphors used in this statement, military metaphors perhaps echoing the Pacific Campaign in World War II in which Kennedy himself fought.

- ⑰Now the trumpet summons us again—not as a call to bear arms, though arms we need—not as a call to battle, though embattled we are—but a call to bear the burden of a long twilight struggle, year in and year out, “rejoicing in hope, patient in tribulation”—a struggle against the common enemies of man: tyranny, poverty, disease, and war itself. (Para 22)

We are not called upon to join the armed forces but we do need to have strong and powerful military forces. We are not called upon to fight a war but we should always be ready to fight.

The “not... but” structure is balanced, involving the rhetorical device of antithesis. The style is literary and biblical, charged with emotion, fitting for emotional appeal.

- ⑱I do not believe that any of us would exchange places with any other people or any other generation. (Para 24)

The readers may have noticed that throughout the speech, Kennedy is very careful in the use of personal “I”. This has a lot to do with the purpose of the speech. His whole purpose is to make people feel that the President is just one of them; they are on the same side, fighting on the same front. So immediately after he says that he is not afraid of the challenge, he tries to draw in the American people by saying that I am sure you are also willing to take up the challenge. In this way, Kennedy is once again with the American people.

- ⑲With a good conscience our only sure reward... (Para 27)

Since it is a twilight struggle which may not be completed within our lifetime, our only comfort comes from the realization that we are doing the right thing.

- ⑳... knowing that here on earth God’s work must truly be our own. (Para 27)

We should know that we are doing what God wants us to do in this world, know that God’s will has to be carried out in this world by us. The implication is we are chosen by God to do His work on earth.



#### 四、课文译文

### 肯尼迪总统就职演说

约翰·肯尼迪 民主党

我的同胞们：

1. 我们今天庆祝的并不是党派的胜利而是自由的选择——象征着一个时代的结束和另一个时代的开始——意味着延续与变化。因为我已在了你们和万能的上帝面前，做了跟我们祖先将近 175 年前所拟定的相同的庄严誓言。

2. 现今世界已经很不同了，因为人在自己血肉之躯的手中握有足以消灭一切形式的人类贫困和一切形式的人类生命的力量。可是我们祖先奋斗不息所维护的革命信念，在世界各地仍处于争论之中。那信念就是注大人权并非来自政府的慷慨施与，而是上帝所赐。

3. 我们今天不敢忘记我们是那第一次革命的继承人，让我从此时此地告诉我们的朋友，并且也告诉我们的敌人，这支火炬已传交新一代的美国人，他们出生在本世纪，经历过战争的锻炼，受过严酷而艰苦的和平的熏陶，以我们的古代传统自豪，而且不愿目睹或容许人权逐步被剥夺。对于这些人权我国一向坚贞不移，当前在国内和全世界我们也是对此力加维护的。

4. 让每一个国家知道，不管它盼我们好或盼我们坏，我们将付出任何代价，忍受任何重负，应付任何艰辛，支持任何朋友，反对任何敌人，以确保自由的存在与成功。

5. 这是我们矢志不移的事——而且还不止于此。

6. 对于那些和我们拥有共同文化和精神传统的老盟邦，我们保证以挚友之诚相待。如果团结一致，我们在一系列共同从事的事业中就可以无往而不胜。如果我们四分五裂，我们就会一事无成——因为在意见分歧、四分五裂的情况下，我们不敢迎接强有力的挑战。

7. 对于那些我们欢迎其参与自由国家行列的新国家，我们要提出保证，一种殖民控制形式的消失，不应为另一种更为残酷的暴政所取代。我们不能老是期望他们会支持我们的观点，但我们却一直希望他们能坚决维护他们自身的自由，并应记住，在过去，那些愚蠢地想靠与虎谋皮而得势的人最终都为虎所食。

8. 对于那些住在布满半个地球的茅舍和乡村中、力求打破普遍贫困的桎梏的人们，我们保证尽最大努力助其自救，不管需要多长时间。这并非因为共产党会那样做，也不是由于我们想要他们的选票，而是由于那样做是正确的。自由社会若不能帮助众多的穷人，也就不能保全少数的富人。

9. 对于我国边界以南的各姐妹共和国，我们提出一项特殊的保证：要把我们美好的诺言化做善行，在争取进步的新联盟中援助自由人和自由政府来摆脱贫困的枷锁。但这种为实现本身愿望而进行的和平革命不应成为不怀好意的国家的俎上肉。让我们所有的邻邦都知道，我们将与他们联合抵御对美洲任何地区的侵略或颠覆。让其他国家都知道，西半球的事西半球自己会管。

10. 至于联合国这个各主权国家的世界性议会，在今天这个战争工具的发展速度超过和平工具的时代中，它是我们最后的、最美好的希望。我们重申我们的支持——不让其变成一个相互指责的论坛——加强其对新生国家和弱小国家的保护——扩大其起主导作用的领域。

11. 最后，对于那些与我们为敌的国家，我们所要提供的不是保证，而是要求：双方重新着手寻求和平，不要等到科学所释放出的危险的破坏力量在有意或无意中使全人类沦于自我毁灭。

12. 我们不敢以示弱去诱惑他们。因为只有当我们的军力强大无比时，我们才有把握永不使用

武力。

13. 可是这两个强有力的国家集团,谁也不能对当前的趋势放心——双方都因现代武器的代价而感到不胜负担,双方都对于致命的原子力量不断发展而产生应有的惊骇,可是双方都在竞谋改变那不稳定的恐怖均衡,而此种均衡却可以暂时阻止人类最后从事战争。

14. 因此让我们重新开始,双方都应记住,谦恭并非懦弱的象征,而诚意则永远需要验证。我们永远不会由于恐惧而去谈判,但我们永不畏惧谈判。

15. 让双方探究能使我们团结在一起的是什么问题,而不要虚耗心力于使我们分裂的问题。

16. 让双方首次制定有关视察和管制武器的真诚而确切的建议,并且把那足以毁灭其他国家的漫无限制的力量置于所有国家的绝对管制之下。

17. 让双方都谋求激发科学的神奇力量而不是科学的恐怖因素。让我们联合起来去探索星球、治理沙漠、消除疾病、开发深海,并鼓励艺术和商务。

18. 让双方携手在世界各个角落遵循以赛亚的命令,去“卸下沉重的负担……(并)让被压迫者获得自由”。

19. 如果小小的一点合作能驱散深深的猜疑,那么,让双方联合做一次新的努力吧,这不是追求新的权力均衡,而是建立一个新的法治世界,在那世界上强者公正,弱者安全,和平在握。

20. 凡此种种不会在最初的100天中完成,不会在最初的1000天中完成,不会在本政府任期中完成,甚或也不能在我们活在地球上的毕生期间完成。但让我们开始吧。

21. 同胞们,我们事业最终的成败不是掌握在我手中,而是掌握在你们手中。自从我国建立以来,每一代的美国人都曾应召以验证其对国家的忠诚。响应此项召唤而服军役的美国青年人的坟墓遍布全球各处。

22. 现在那号角又再度召唤我们——不是号召我们拿起武器,虽然武器是我们所需要的;不是号召我们去作战,虽然我们准备应战;那是号召我们年复一年肩负起持久和胜败未分的斗争,“在希望中欢乐,在患难中忍耐”;这是一场对抗人类公敌——暴政、贫困、疾病以及战争本身的斗争。

23. 我们能否结成一个遍及东西南北的全球性伟大联盟来对付这些敌人,来确保全人类享有更为富裕的生活?你们是否愿意参与这历史性的努力?

24. 在世界的悠久历史中,只有很少几个世代的人赋有这种在自由遭遇最大危机时保卫自由的任务。我决不在这责任之前退缩;我欢迎它。我不相信我们中间会有人愿意跟别人及别的世代交换地位。我们在这场努力中所献出的精力、信念与虔诚将照亮我们的国家以及所有为国家服务的人,而从这一火焰所聚出的光辉必能照明全世界。

25. 所以,同胞们:不要问你的国家能为你做什么,要自问你能为你的国家做何贡献。

26. 全世界的公民:不要问美国愿为你们做些什么,而应问我们在一起能为人类的自由做些什么。

27. 最后,不管你是美国的公民或世界他国的公民,请将我们所要求于你们的有关力量与牺牲的高标准拿来要求我们。我们唯一可靠的报酬是问心无愧,我们行为的最后裁判者是历史,让我们向前引导我们所挚爱的国土,企求上帝的保佑与扶携,但我们知道,在这个世界上,上帝的任务肯定就是我们自己所应肩负的任务。

## 五、练习答案及详解

### I. Vocabulary

A. Look up the following words and phrases. Select the meaning that best suits the sentence in which each appears.

1. to celebrate
2. yet to be decided or realized
3. to train to develop self-control, character
4. someone's authority and mandate would continue to be in effect
5. military strength
6. (literary) to stop (doing)
7. to extract sth. from sth.

### II. Questions on Appreciation

#### A. Organization

1. Part I (Para 1): Opening remark

Part II (Paras 2—4): General determination and assurance; new situation, new generation yet determined to lead

Part III (Para 5): Transition (from general to specific)

Part IV (Paras 6—10): Assurances to allies, friends, third world countries and the UN

Part V (Paras 11—19): Proposal to the adversary

Part VI (Para 20): Transition

Part VII (Paras 21—27): Appeal to the people of the United States and the people of the world to join in the fight

2. In the opening of the inaugural speech, Kennedy wants to make clear it is not a partisan occasion but an occasion for celebrating free elections and democracy. Because he tries to show he is the President of the Americans and thus beyond the partisan bitterness in the electoral campaign.
3. He uses a transitional sentence, "The world is very different now." at the beginning of Para 2. This indicates that the oath is still the old one but the global situation is very different now.
4. This is a one-sentence paragraph for transition, from general to specific assurances.
5. This part serves as a transition. The last sentence "But let us begin." signifies a transition to an appeal to action, to the people of the world in general and the American people in particular.
6. He says that we should know that we are doing what God wants us to do in this world, and know that God's will has to be carried out in this world by us. The implication is that we are chosen by God to do his work on earth.

It is a forceful ending. It is common practice for Presidents to end their speeches with "May God bless you", "May God continue to bless America". President Kennedy ends his speech in the same vein, asking His blessing and His help but the stress is laid on the message that the Americans are God's chosen people to do God's work on earth. This will elicit a strong response from the American people, thus making the ending more powerful.

## B. Style

1. The speech is delivered by President Kennedy as an inaugural address, which should be enough solemn and forceful. The speech fits the occasion well for it is considered as one of the best addresses which were delivered by the American Presidents. First, he is the president of American people, and wants to show them he is the one among them, he uses "we" for 30 times, "us" 11 times, "our" 20 times, but "I" for only 5 times. Second, Kennedy mentions God in the speech to express the new American goal. It shows that the goal is full of solemnity. Third, he uses some rhetorical devices to emphasize the key ideas and chooses the words carefully enough.

2. President Kennedy appeals to the people of the United States and the people of the world to join in the fight against the common enemies. He avoids Cold War rhetoric and narrow nationalism. The enemy is common enemy. The goal is "a more fruitful life for all mankind".

Kennedy is trying to show the peoples and governments in the underdeveloped world that American assistance is altruistic. Assistance is offered out of principle (because it is right), not out of political considerations.

3. (1) the "not... but" structure

not a victory of party but a celebration of freedom (Para 1)

not because the Communists may be doing it, not because we seek their votes,

but because it is right (Para 8)

not a new balance of power, but a new world of law (Para 19)

not as a call to bear arms... not as a call to battle... but a call to bear the burden (Para 22)

(2) anaphora

To those old allies

To those new states

To those peoples in the huts and villages

To our sister republics

To that world assembly of sovereign states

Finally to those nations who would make themselves our adversary

Let both sides explore

Let both sides, for the first time, formulate

Let both sides seek to invoke

Let both sides unite to heed

... let both sides join in creating

(3) antithesis

United, there is little we cannot do

Divided, there is little we can do (Para 6)

cannot help the many who are poor

cannot save the few who are rich (Para 8)

never negotiate out of fear

never fear to negotiate (Para 14)

explore what problems unite us

belaboring those problems which divide us (Para 15)

(4) parallel structure

We shall not always expect to find them supporting our view

We shall always hope to find them strongly supporting their own freedom (Para 7)

not as a call to bear arms, though arms we need

not as a call to battle, though embattled we are (Para 22)

(5) metaphor

tiger (Para 7)

beachhead and jungles (Para 19)

fire (Para 24)

### C. Choice of Words

1. And if a **beachhead** of cooperation may push back the jungles of suspicion. . .

**beachhead**: foothold; a position gained as a secure starting point for any action. Metaphors are used in this statement: beachhead and jungles, military metaphors perhaps echoing the Pacific Campaign in World War II in which Kennedy himself fought.

2. Together let us **explore** the stars, **conquer** the deserts, **eradicate** disease, **tap** the ocean depths, and **encourage** the arts and commerce.

The following collocations may not necessarily be fixed ones, but the verbs used here are the appropriate choices.

**explore**. . . stars

**conquer**. . . deserts

**eradicate**. . . disease

**tap**. . . ocean depths

**encourage**. . . arts and commerce

3. Let both sides **explore** what problems unite us instead of **belaboring** those problems which divide us.

This is a balanced statement with antithesis.

**explore**. . . unite us

**belabor**. . . divide us

**explore**: to examine carefully

**belabor**: to spend too much time and effort on

4. . . . both sides overburdened by the cost of modern weapons, both rightly alarmed by the steady spread of the deadly atom, yet both racing to alter that uncertain balance of terror that **stays** the **hand** of mankind's final war.

**stay**: (*literary*) to stop (doing)

**Hand** is used here as an example of metaphor, standing for "the launching" because in launching a nuclear war, the President needs to push the button or gives order to push the button.

5. For man holds in his **mortal** hands the power to abolish all forms of human poverty and all forms of human life.

**mortal**: (*poetic*) belonging to a human being

### V. Explain the following in your own words, bringing out any implied meanings.

1. As a result of technological development, human beings now have the power to put an end to poverty and human misery, but at the same time they also possess the power to destroy the whole world,

rendering it uninhabitable and lifeless.

2. We do not want to see or to allow the slow destruction of those human rights.
3. To the people of the underdeveloped countries living in poverty in rural areas, we are committed to helping them to rid themselves of mass poverty by their own efforts.
4. But we should not let any Communist power take advantage of this alliance for progress to expand its influence.
5. We want to make clear to the Communist powers that Americas are the Americas of the Americans. Do not attempt to penetrate into this area.
6. ... before the world is destroyed by a nuclear war launched in a preemptive attack or caused by accident.
7. Yet both sides attempt to get an edge in the nuclear arms race so as to break the mutual deterrence which has so far prevented the outbreak of a nuclear war.
8. To be ready to negotiate and establish friendly relations does not mean that we are weak or afraid. Declarations of sincere intention have to be tested by actions.
9. Let the two sides use the fruits of science for the benefit of humanity rather than using high-tech weapons to kill and destroy.
10. There have been occasions for each generation of Americans to be called upon to fight and die for their country.

VI. Translate the following into Chinese.

1. 我们今天庆祝的不是党派的胜利而是自由的选择——象征着一个时代的结束和另一个时代的开始——意味着延续与变化。
2. 如果我们团结一致,我们在一系列共同从事的事业中就可以无往而不胜。如果我们四分五裂,我们就会一事无成——因为在意见分歧、四分五裂的情况下,我们不敢迎接强有力的挑战。
3. ....一种殖民控制形式的消失,不应为另一种更为残酷的暴政所取代。
4. ....要记住,在过去,那些愚蠢地想靠与虎谋皮而得势的人最终都为虎所食。
5. ....我们重申我们的支持——不让其变成一个相互指责的论坛——加强其对新生国家和弱小国家的保护——扩大其起主导作用的领域。
6. 只有当我们的军力强大无比时,我们才有把握永不使用武力。
7. 我们永远不会由于恐惧而去谈判,但我们永不畏惧谈判。
8. 如果小小的一点合作能驱散深深的猜疑.....
9. 同胞们,我们事业最终的成败不是掌握在我手中,而是掌握在你们手中。
10. 不要问你的国家能为你做什么,要自问你能为你的国家做何贡献。



# Lesson Eight

## A Rose for Emily



### 一、课文导读

#### (一) 内容梗概

《献给艾米莉的一朵玫瑰花》是美国作家威廉·福克纳的短篇小说的代表作。这篇小说写得精致、完美,有如大理石上的雕刻图案,蕴涵着值得永久纪念的神圣意味。

这篇小说讲述了在南方清教传统下身心受到压抑而导致变态心理的艾米莉触目惊心的故事。她的父亲是一个自私又专横的家长,完全控制着她的命运。在他死后,艾米莉决心重新开始生活并爱上了霍默·巴伦,但镇上的传统力量却破坏了她的最后一个机会,因为在他们的眼里,艾米莉只是一座“纪念碑”,体现着“传统、义务、责任”,而不是一个有血有肉的、渴望并有权利过正常生活的女人。在这样的家庭和传统势力的控制下,艾米莉生活中的一切希望都被毁灭了,为了拥有巴伦,她只好将他毒死,并长年和尸体睡在一起。

在这个故事里,作家采用了哥特式手法并用一些侦探小说的技巧,加深了小说阴郁、悲惨的气氛;小说从艾米莉的去世开始,转了一圈又回到死亡,时序来回颠倒,情节曲折离奇、引人入胜,到最后才揭示了悲剧。通过艾米莉的悲惨一生,福克纳鞭挞了人性,谴责了南方的清教传统,给予艾米莉深深的同情乃至钦佩,为她献上了一朵玫瑰。

#### (二) 背景知识

##### William Faulkner



William Faulkner

William Faulkner (1897—1962) is a giant in the realm of American literature, although he never stands taller than five feet, six inches tall. More than simply a renowned Mississippi writer, the Nobel Prize-winning novelist and short story writer is acclaimed throughout the world as one of the twentieth century's greatest writers, one who transformed his "postage stamp" of native soil into an apocryphal setting in which he explored, articulated, and challenged "the old verities and truths of the heart". During what is generally considered his period of greatest artistic achievement, from *The Sound and the Fury* in 1929 to *Go Down, Moses* in 1942, Faulkner accomplished in a little over a decade more artistically than most writers accomplish over a lifetime of writing. It is one of the more remarkable feats of American literature, how a young man who never

graduated from high school, never received a college degree, living in a small town in the poorest state in the nation, all the while balancing a growing family of dependents and impending financial ruin, could during the Great Depression write a series of novels all set in the same small southern county—novels that include *As I Lay Dying*, *Light in August*, and above all, *Absalom, Absalom!*—that would one day be recognized as among the greatest novels ever written by an American.



William Faulkner



## 二、词汇与短语

### (一) 词汇

① august /ɔ:'gast/ *adj.*

inspiring feelings of respect and awe; majestic and imposing 令人敬畏的  
—He is an august elder statesman. 他是个令人敬畏的政界元老。

② cabal /kə'bæl/ *n.*

a small group of people who make secret plans 秘密小集团 【同义】 section  
—We know they had their own cabal. 我们知道,他们有自己的小集团。

③ circumvent /ˌsɜ:kəm'vent/ *v.*

to avoid a problem or rule that restricts you, esp. in a clever and dishonest way 设法克服或避免  
【同义】 evade

—They circumvent the law in dealing with that accident. 他们在处理那场意外时规避了法律的条款规定。

【派生】 circumvention *n.* 回避; 规避

④ condolence /kən'dəʊləns/ *n.*

expression of sympathy 同情; 吊唁 【同义】 commiseration  
—Please accept my condolence. 谨致吊慰之意。

【词根】 condole *v.* 吊唁; 同情

⑤ coquettish /kə'ketʃ/ *adj.*

of or like a girl or woman who merely from vanity tries to get men's attention and admiration 卖弄风情的

⑥ cuss /kʌs/ *n.*

person 人; 家伙  
—He is an awkward cuss. 他是个笨手笨脚的家伙。

⑦ divulge /dɪ'vʌldʒ/ *v.*

to make known; to disclose 泄露 【同义】 reveal  
—I cannot divulge how much it cost. 我不能把价钱泄露出来。

【派生】 divulgence *n.* 泄露秘密

⑧ edict /'ɪdɪkt/ *n.*

order or proclamation issued by an authority 诏书; 法令; 布告  
【同义】 announcement; law; proclamation

—You must obey the edicts of parliament. 你必须遵守议会通过的法令。

⑨ errand /'erənd/ *n.*

1) object or purpose of such a journey 差事 【同义】 task; duty

—I've come on a special errand. 我是专程来办一件差事的。

2) short journey to take a message, get or deliver goods, etc. 短程差使(送信、取货、送货等)

—He was tired of running errands for his sister. 他已经厌烦给姐姐跑腿了。

⑩ grimace /'grɪməs/

1) *n.* a twisting or distortion of the face, as in expressing pain, contempt, disgust, etc. 愁眉苦脸; 怪相

—He makes a grimace of pain when he is in hospital. 他住院时露出痛苦的怪相。

2) *v.* to make faces 做鬼脸

—She grimaced in distaste at the thought of it. 她一想到那个就厌恶得做出怪相。

⑪ macabre /mə'kæbrə/ *adj.*

grim and horrible, gruesome 可怕的; 恐怖的 【同义】 ghoulish; grisly

—My granny is good at macabre ghost stories. 我的祖母擅长讲令人毛骨悚然的鬼怪故事。

⑫ niche /nitʃ/ *n.*

a hollow place in a wall, often made to hold a statue 神龛; 壁龛

⑬ obesity /ə'bi:səti/ *n.*

being very fat 过度肥胖 【同义】 fatness; corpulence

—Obesity is a problem for many people in western countries. 西方国家很多人都有过度肥胖的问题。

⑭ obliterate /ə'blɪtəreɪt/ *v.*

to erase; to destroy completely 抹去; 彻底清除 【同义】 demolish; eradicate

—She tried to obliterate all memory of her father. 她极力想抹掉对父亲的回忆。

⑮ pallid /'pælɪd/ *adj.*

pale, faint in color 脸色苍白的 【同义】 colorless

—You look a bit pallid. 你看起来有点儿苍白。

【派生】 pallidly *adv.* 苍白地 pallidness *n.* 苍白

⑯ perverse /pə'vɜ:s/ *adj.*

1) (of behavior) stubbornly unreasonable (行为)任性的; 蛮不讲理的

—It would be perverse to take a different view. 持异议之见未免不近情理。

2) (of feelings) unreasonable or excessive (感情)不通情理的; 过分的

—She finds a perverse pleasure in upsetting her parents. 她以让父母担惊受怕为乐。

⑰ remit /rɪ'mɪt/ *v.*

1) to free someone from a debt or punishment 宽恕; 免除 【同义】 cancel; forgive

—His prison sentence has been remitted. 他的监禁判决已被赦免。

2) to relax 减轻

—We must not remit our efforts. 我们不能放松努力。

⑱ save /seɪv/ *prep.*

except 除了 【同义】 barring

—We know nothing about her save that her surname is Johns. 她姓琼斯, 除此之外, 我们对她一无所知。

19 select /sɪˈlekt/ *adj.*

1) carefully chosen 精选的

—Do you like the select passages of Milton's poetry? 你喜欢那本弥尔顿诗歌选吗?

2) (of a society, club, gathering, etc.) admitting only certain people; exclusive 小范围的; 不公开的

—That is a select group of top scientists. 那是一组经过挑选的高级科学家。

20 serene /səˈriːn/ *adj.*

calm and peaceful; tranquil 安静的; 宁静的 【反义】 bustling

—In spite of the panic, she remained serene and in control. 尽管人心惶惶, 她却泰然自若。

【派生】 serenely *adv.* 平静地 serenity *n.* 平静; 安静

21 silhouette /ˌsɪluˈet/ *n.*

a dark image, shadow, or shape, seen against a light background 黑色轮廓; 侧影 【同义】 outline; profile

—We can see the silhouettes of the trees against the evening sky. 我们可以看到夜空中衬托出的树木的轮廓。

22 tableau /ˈtæbləʊ/ *n.*

a striking scene or picture, frozen in time for dramatic effect 戏剧场面; 场景

—They were moved by the tableau. 他们被这个戏剧的场景感动了。

23 tarnish /ˈtɑːnɪʃ/ *v.*

1) to dull the luster of or discolor the surface of sth. as by exposure to air 因暴露于空气或潮气而失去光泽

—It is the mirror that has tarnished with age. 这是一面因年深月久而失去光泽的镜子。

2) to stain or blemish a reputation 玷污; 损害名誉

—The firm's good name was badly tarnished by the scandal. 这件丑事玷污了公司的好名声。

24 temerity /təˈmerəti/ *n.*

(*fml*) unreasonable confidence that is likely to offend someone 鲁莽; 冒失

【同义】 audacity; boldness

—He had the temerity to call me a liar. 他胆敢说我在撒谎。

25 thwart /θwɔːt/ *v.*

(*fml*) to prevent someone from doing what they are trying to do 阻挠; 阻止

—He was thwarted in his aims by bad luck. 他运气不好, 未能达到目的。

26 torso /ˈtɔːsəʊ/ *n.*

the body, not including the head, arms, or legs 人体的躯干 【同义】 trunk

—His major is curving torso. 他的专业是人体雕塑。

27 tranquil /ˈtræŋkwɪl/ *adj.*

calm, quiet and undisturbed 平静的; 安静的; 安宁的

—He leads a tranquil life in the country. 他在乡间过着宁静的生活。

【派生】 tranquility *n.* 平静; 安宁 tranquilize *v.* 使...安静; 入睡 tranquilizer *n.* 安定药; 镇静剂

28 vanquish /ˈvæŋkwɪʃ/ *v.*

to defeat (an opponent, etc.) 征服; 战胜(对手) 【同义】 conquer

—They vanquished the enemy in the battle. 他们在战斗中战胜了敌人。

29 vindicate /ˈvɪndɪkeɪt/ *v.*

1) to clear from criticism, blame, guilt, suspicion, etc. 澄清受到的疑问和责难

—The report fully vindicated the unions. 这份报告充分说明工会是正确的。

2) to show or prove the truth, justice, etc. 表明或证明属实

—Her claim to the title was vindicated by historians. 她说她有权得到这一头衔, 历史学家证明此事属实。

【派生】vindication *n.* 澄清; 证实

⑩ virulent /'vɪrələnt/ *adj.*

1) (of a poison) extremely harmful or deadly (指毒物) 剧毒的; 致命的

—He caught a virulent strain of flu. 他得了一种致命的流感。

2) (*fmI*) full of hatred, and very strongly expressed 恶意的; 仇恨的

—The film star made a virulent attack on the press. 那个影星恶意抨击新闻界。

【派生】virulence *n.* 剧毒; 仇恨

## (二) 短语

① a sort of sth.

vague, unexplained or unusual type of sth. 说不清的、难以解释的或不寻常的某类事物

—I had a sort of feeling he wouldn't come. 我隐约觉得他不会来。

② to decorate with sth.

to make sth. (more) beautiful by adding ornaments to it 装饰某事物

—Bright posters decorate the streets. 鲜艳的广告招贴画点缀着街道。

③ into (in) perpetuity

(law) for all future time 永远

—The site of the memorial is granted in perpetuity to Canada. 纪念碑所在地永远地让给了加拿大。

④ to wait upon sb.

to make a formal visit to sb. to show respect 拜访或探望某人

—He seemed to expect to wait upon his leader. 他似乎很期望去拜访他的领导。

⑤ to mount into sth.

to go up; to ascend 登上

—There is a staircase that mounts to the top of the building. 那儿有通往楼顶的楼梯。

⑥ to lead into

to show (sb.) the way, esp. by going in front 给(某人)指路;(尤指)领路

—He led the group out into the garden. 他把那些人领出去进了花园。

⑦ to lean on sth.

to rest on sth. in a sloping position for support 倚靠在某物上

—The old man leant on his stick. 那个老先生拄着根手杖。

⑧ to submerge in

to cause (sth.) to go under the surface of a liquid, the sea, etc. 使(某物)进入液面、海面等之下; 淹没

—The child submerged all her toys in the bath. 那孩子把所有的玩具都泡在澡盆里。

⑨ to turn sth. down

to reject or refuse to consider (an offer, a proposal, etc. or the person who makes it) 顶回或拒不理会  
(好意、建议等或提议的人)

—He tried to join the army but was turned down (flat) because of poor health. 他想参军,但因身体不好被断然拒绝。

⑩ to call on sb.

to make a short visit; to go to sb.'s house, etc. 拜访; 去某人家等

—Let's call on John. 让我们去拜访约翰吧。

⑪ to dispose of sth.

1) to deal or finish with sth. that presents a problem 应付、解决、了结某事物

—Their objections were easily disposed of, i. e. successfully argued against. 他们的反对言论很轻易就被驳倒了。

2) to get rid of sth. that one does not want or cannot keep 去除、处理、舍弃某物

—He was forced to dispose of (i. e. sell) his art treasures. 他被迫处理(卖)掉了自己的艺术珍藏。

⑫ to resort to sth.

to rely on 求助; 诉诸; 采取

—We should talk calmly, without resort to threats. 我们应当心平气和地说而不采取威胁手段。

⑬ to break down

1) (of sb.'s health) to become very bad (指某人的健康状况) 变得恶劣

—Her health broke down under the pressure of work. 工作的压力把她的身体弄垮了。

2) to fail; to collapse 失败; 崩溃; 瓦解

—If law and order break down, anarchy will result. 法治一垮, 就会出现无政府状态。

⑭ to cling to sb.

to hold on tightly to sb. 紧抓住或抱住某人

—They clung to each other. 他们紧紧拥抱在一起。

⑮ to fall out with sb.

to quarrel with sb. 与某人争吵

—They fell out with each other just before their marriage. 他们就在举行婚礼之前吵了起来。



### 三、课文注释

① It was a big, squarish frame house that had once been white, decorated with cupolas and spires and scrolled balconies in the heavily lightsome style of the seventies, set on what had once been our most select street. (Para 2)

The detailed description of the house reveals the identity of the Griersons as one of the richest families in the town.

**frame house:** a house made of wood

**the heavily lightsome style of the seventies:** This house was built in the 1870s after the end of the Civil War. This Gothic revival style was fancy, frivolous, and not very solemn-looking.

**select; (adj.) (fml)** choice, excellent, outstanding; only lived in, visited or used by a small number of rich people

② But garages and cotton gins had encroached and obliterated even the august names of that neighborhood; only Miss Emily's house was left, lifting its stubborn and coquettish decay above the cotton wagons and the gasoline pumps—an eyesore among eyesores. (Para 2)

The street used to house only the best families. Then great changes took place; garages and cotton gins were established on the street and their existence wiped out the aristocratic traces in that neighborhood. While the whole street was becoming modern and commercial, only Miss Emily's house remained the same. Although her house was decaying, it still assumed an air of a stubborn and frivolous girl. The cotton wagons and gasoline pumps were ugly enough, but this house, which was old, in decay, pretentious, and completely out of place, was more unpleasant to look at.

Here the author personifies the buildings on the street, especially Miss Emily's house by using words like "lifting its stubborn and coquettish decay". This detail shows that the house and its owner share the same character.

- ④ And now Miss Emily had gone to join the representatives of those august names where they lay in the cedar-bemused cemetery among the ranked and anonymous graves of Union and Confederate soldiers who fell at the battle of Jefferson. (Para 2)

When "we" visited the cemetery, we would be plunged in thought, meditating, thinking about the dead, the war, and the history.

cedar-bemused: transferred epithet

bemused: to plunge in thought; to preoccupy, usu. in the passive voice

- ⑤ Alive, Miss Emily had been a tradition, a duty, and a care; a sort of hereditary obligation upon the town, dating from that day in 1894 when Colonel Sartoris, the mayor—he who fathered the edict that no Negro woman should appear on the streets without an apron—remitted her taxes, the dispensation dating from the death of her father on into perpetuity. (Para 3)

Miss Emily had lived a long life and had become a tradition because she represented the aristocracy of the Old South that had lost out in the Civil War. She was a care because she was old, unmarried, and without family, and the people in the town felt they must take care of her. They felt that taking care of her was their duty and obligation. And this obligation passed from generation to generation as long as she lived.

- ⑥ Not that Miss Emily would have accepted charity. (Para 3)

Miss Emily would not have accepted charity. Charity would be humiliating to her.

- ⑦ Only a man of Colonel Sartoris' generation and thought could have invented it... (Para 3)

As one of the last aristocratic generation of the South, he tried to cling to the past glory, and he had the most traditional ideas about how elite white women should be deferred to...

- ⑧ When the next generation, with its more modern ideas, became mayors and aldermen, this arrangement created some little dissatisfaction. (Para 4)

This sentence indicates that by now Mayor Sartoris had died and many years had passed. Occasionally the narrator points out the exact year of a certain event, but mostly he only makes vague references of time to keep the readers guessing and sorting out an approximate chronology by themselves. Faulkner is implying that most of the time the townsfolk who make up the "we" are not very precise about dates.

with its more modern ideas: The author is frequently making contrast between the present and the past. The past is represented by the Griersons, Colonel Sartoris, Old Judge Stevens, etc. and the present is represented by the new generation, the new mayors and aldermen.

⑧... and received in reply a note on paper of an archaic shape, in a thin, flowing calligraphy in faded ink... (Para 4)

One of the class markers of cultivated femininity in her generation was an elegant wispy handwriting. Miss Emily ignored the tax notice and the formal letter from the aldermen. She only replied to the letter by the mayor. This points to the fact that she was arrogant and held herself too high to deal with ordinary people.

⑨They were admitted by the old Negro into a dim hall from which a stairway mounted into still more shadow. (Para 5)

The author is describing the inside of the house. No one could see anything very clearly inside her house and perhaps in her.

⑩She looked bloated, like a body long submerged in motionless water, and of that pallid hue. (Para 6)

In this sentence Miss Emily is being described as a dead person, drowned, bloated and pale. Both the house and the owner are in decay. Shutting herself from the outside world and living in complete self-isolation, Miss Emily seemed like a living corpse.

hue: color, a modification of a basic color

⑪“See Colonel Sartoris.” (Colonel Sartoris had been dead almost ten years.) (Para 14)

Miss Emily's insistence on their seeing Colonel Sartoris, who had been dead almost ten years, proves how she refused to acknowledge changes.

From the novel *Sartoris* we learn that the young Colonel died in 1919. So we can infer that the deputation's visit to Miss Emily should be around 1928—1929.

⑫That was two years after her father's death and a short time after her sweetheart—the one we believed would marry her—had deserted her. (Para 15)

Her sweetheart and his deserting her are mentioned here as if casually. Actually this is an important detail. The narrator will come back to it. This is one of the characteristics of Faulkner's narrative techniques—throwing out a bit of information here and there for the reader to piece together in order to get a complete picture.

⑬“Just as if a man—any man—could keep a kitchen properly,” the ladies said; so they were not surprised when the smell developed. (Para 16)

What the ladies said meant that they did not in the least believe a man, any man, could keep a kitchen properly. So when the smell developed, they believed it was because the manservant didn't keep the kitchen clean.

⑭It was another link between the gross, teeming world and the high and mighty Griersons. (Para 16)

The Griersons regarded themselves as very important and the outside world as vulgar and full of people inferior to them. They belonged to two entirely different worlds. After her father died, Miss Emily shut herself in the house, retreating to her world of the past. However, the complaints about the smell served as a link between the two different worlds and compelled her to deal with the other world.

high and mighty: talking or behaving as if you think you are more important than other people

⑮As they recrossed the lawn, a window that had been dark was lighted and Miss Emily sat in it, the light behind her, and her upright torso motionless as that of an idol. (Para 24)

This is one of the vivid images of Miss Emily the author creates in the story. Here Miss Emily sat in



the window with the light behind her. What people could see was her silhouette, a dark figure seen against a light background. The fact that she was motionless suited her rigid and stubborn personality. In this image she didn't look like a living person but an idol, or a goddess.

- ⑮ **We had long thought of them as a tableau. Miss Emily a slender figure in white in the background, her father a spraddled silhouette in the foreground, his back to her and clutching a horsewhip, the two of them framed by the back-flung front door. (Para 25)**

This sentence depicts a central image that tells several things about the relationship between father and daughter in the Grierson family. First, the positions of the father and daughter are meaningful. The father was standing in the foreground while Miss Emily was standing in the background. This shows the father's dominant position and the daughter's subordinate role. The father's spraddling adds to his image as a stern patriarchal figure. Second, the father turned his back to her. This shows he refused to listen to her, denying her wishes. Then Mr. Grierson was clutching a horsewhip, which is clearly a symbol of power, authority, and strict control. Miss Emily's slender figure suggests vulnerability, and her white dress symbolizes purity, the most valued quality of the Southern white women. The fact that the two of them were framed by the back-flung front door may be interpreted in different ways. One interpretation is that the father was blocking the door, suggesting Miss Emily was unable to walk out of the house and choose her suitor freely. Another interpretation is that the door was open for suitors but the suitors were driven away by the father holding a horsewhip.

- ⑯ **So when she got to be thirty and was still single, we were not pleased exactly, but vindicated; even with insanity in the family she wouldn't have turned down all of her chances if they had really materialized. (Para 25)**

When she got to be thirty and was still single, people in the town would have denied that they wanted such an outcome but it did confirm their predictions. Miss Emily was still single because the Griersons held themselves too high for what they were, and all the young men who had come to court Miss Emily had been driven away by the father. They knew that even though there was insanity in the family (the great-aunt Wyatt), Miss Emily wouldn't have turned down all of her chances if they had really existed.

- ⑰ **Being left alone, and a pauper, she had become humanized. (Para 26)**

Without her father's over-protection and without much money, she had become a common person like the other townspeople.

- ⑱ **Now she too would know the old thrill and the old despair of a penny more or less. (Para 26)**

Ordinary people often become excited or worried when they get a penny more or a penny less. Being poor, now she would learn to appreciate the value of money like other people in the town.

- ⑳ **When we saw her again, her hair was cut short, making her look like a girl, with a vague resemblance to those angels in colored church windows—sort of tragic and serene. (Para 29)**

It is obvious that there is something else beneath the change of appearances. In her essay, "Changing Portraits in 'A Rose for Emily'" Janice A. Powell points out, "The images in this passage reveal a woman stripped of her sexuality. In this portrait, Emily assumes the semblance of a girl instead of a sexually mature woman of thirty. Her cut hair is especially important. Since ancient times, a woman's hair has symbolized her sexuality. Emily's hair, along with her sexuality, has been cut short through her father's pride. The cut hair also introduces religious imagery, for an initiate into a nunnery shears

her hair as a symbol of her chastity. In addition, the adjectives 'tragic and serene' envisage a Madonna, a holy virgin, as an addendum to the primary image of angels who, although often depicted as women, are asexual." However, the symbolic meaning of Miss Emily's short hair is rather ambiguous. It can also indicate that with her hair cut short, Emily was now a liberated woman. She was determined to change her role as an upper-class genteel lady. A short hair usually makes a woman look stronger and more independent in character. This quality of hers can be seen in her courting with Homer Barron, a Yankee foreman, despite traditional social prejudice.

- ②1 Presently we began to see him and Miss Emily on Sunday afternoons driving in the yellow-wheeled buggy and the matched team of bays from the livery stable. (Para 30)

They were often seen going on a tour by driving in the yellow-wheeled light carriage pulled by a horse.  
the matched team of bays from the livery stable; a stable where horses and carriages can be hired

- ②2 But there were still others, older people, who said that even grief could not cause a real lady to forget noblesse oblige—without calling it noblesse oblige. (Para 31)

But there were still others, older people, who said that no matter how sad Miss Emily was (over her father's death), she should not forget she had certain obligations as a member of the nobility, though a real lady would not describe her self-restraint by the expression noblesse oblige. The implied meaning is that it should be unthinkable for Emily as part of the local "nobility" to consider marrying a man so far beneath her.

noblesse oblige; This is a French term, meaning nobility has its obligations.

- ②3 This behind their hands; rustling of craned silk and satin behind jalousies closed upon the sun of Sunday afternoon as the thin, swift clop-clop-clop of the matched team passed: "Poor Emily." (Para 32)

This reveals the change of attitude of the townspeople toward Miss Emily after her dating Homer Barron. Instead of respect they felt pity toward her now.

silk and satin; the silk and satin dresses worn by the ladies

- ②4 ... with cold, haughty black eyes in a face the flesh of which was strained across the temples and about the eyesockets as you imagine a lighthouse-keeper's face ought to look. (Para 34)

A lighthouse keeper lives a very lonely life, and extreme loneliness and solitude would show on the face. Miss Emily was here compared to a lonely lighthouse keeper.

- ②5 ... but at last the ladies forced the Baptist minister—Miss Emily's people were Episcopal—to call upon her. He would never divulge what happened during that interview, but he refused to go back again. (Para 44)
- He would never disclose what happened during his talk with Miss Emily. But we readers could infer that Miss Emily must have treated him with disdain when he came to express the community's disapproval of her public courting activities with Homer Barron. That is why he refused to have another talk with Miss Emily.

the Baptist minister; The Baptists have less formal worship services and are associated with more enthusiastic and less cultivated modes of Christianity. The town's middle class ladies belonged to the Baptist Church, and so they forced their minister to call upon Miss Emily on behalf of the town.

Episcopal; Among the various Protestant denominations in such a town the highest prestige and class standing belongs to the American branch of the Church of England, known as the Episcopal Church.

- ②6 We were a little disappointed that there was not a public blowing-off... (Para 46)

The people in the town guessed that their relationships had turned sour and so Homer Barron had left.

And they expected to see a quarrel between them. When nothing of the kind happened, they were a little disappointed. Then they began to think that perhaps he had gone to prepare for the wedding.

**blowing-off:** a loud quarrel that would signal the end of their courting

- 27 **By that time it was a cabal, and we were all Miss Emily's allies to help circumvent the cousins. (Para 46)**

By that time, the cousins had completed their mission and should leave Jefferson. Now the townspeople were taking the side of Miss Emily and made secret plans to help her deal with her cousins in a clever way.

- 28 **Now and then we would see her at a window for a moment, as the men did that night when they sprinkled the lime. . . (Para 47)**

Sometimes people would see Miss Emily lingering before the window, just like the scene which happened at the night when they sprinkled the lime to her yard.

The author wants us to think of possible connections between the disappearance of Homer Barron and the smell that the townspeople complained about.

- 29 **Now and then we would see her in one of the downstairs windows—she had evidently shut up the top floor of the house—like the carved torso of an idol in a niche, looking or not looking at us, we could never tell which. (Para 51)**

Now Miss Emily no longer went out. From time to time the townspeople would see her in one of the downstairs windows. She had evidently shut the top floor of the house. The word "evidently" shows that the townspeople were supposing that she had shut the top floor as they could not go into the house. Sitting in the window, Miss Emily looked like the carved torso of an idol for worship placed in a niche. Whether she was looking or not looking at us we could not tell and it was not important because she had ceased to be a real human being, but had completely become a sort of monument, a symbol of a tradition and hereditary obligation.

- 30 **. . . and the very old men—some in their brushed Confederate uniforms—on the porch and the lawn, talking of Miss Emily as if she had been a contemporary of theirs, believing that they had danced with her and courted her perhaps, confusing time with its mathematical progression, as the old do, to whom all the past is not a diminishing road but, instead, a huge meadow which no winter ever quite touches, divided from them now by the narrow bottle-neck of the most recent decade of years. (Para 55)**

The very old men, who were even older than Miss Emily, came to the funeral. Some of them were veterans of the Civil War, and they had put on their old Confederate uniforms to pay their last respect to this Southern lady from an aristocratic family. Standing on the porch and the lawn, they talked of Miss Emily, mistakenly thinking of her as someone of their own age, born around 1840 or so whereas she (born around 1855) was much younger than they were. They imagined they had danced with her and courted her perhaps. As the old people often do, they confused the dates and years of past happenings. To the old people, all the past should be like a road that becomes smaller as it reaches further back. But to those old Southerners, the recent past of ten years or so was like a bottleneck, a narrow passage, or a tunnel. Beyond that narrow passage, the remote past became a huge level meadow where things were pleasantly and fondly mixed up together. Like the green grass on the meadow never touched by the winter, their memories of the remote past remained blurred, sweet, romanticized, and unchanged.

- 31 **The body had apparently once lain in the attitude of an embrace, but now the long sleep that outlasts love, that conquers even the grimace of love, had cuckolded him. (Para 59)**

Just before the man breathed his last, he was lying in a position of an embrace. But death that always lasts longer than love and conquers even the pain and suffering of love had turned him into a man whose wife proved unfaithful.



#### 四、课文译文

### 献给埃米莉的一朵玫瑰花

威廉·福克纳

1. 埃米莉·格里尔森小姐过世了,全镇的人都去送丧;男子们是出于敬慕之情,因为一个纪念碑倒了。妇女们呢,则大多数出于好奇心,想看看她屋子的内部。除了一个做花匠兼厨师的老仆人之外,至少已有 10 年光景谁也没进去看看这幢房子了。

2. 那是一幢过去漆成白色的四方形大木屋,坐落在当年一条最考究的街道上,还装点着有 19 世纪 70 年代风格的圆形屋顶、尖塔和涡形花纹的阳台,带有浓厚的轻盈气息。可是汽车间和轧棉机之类的东西侵犯了这一带庄严的名字,把它们涂抹得一千二净。只有埃米莉小姐的屋子岿然独存,四周簇拥着棉花车和汽油泵。房子虽已破败,却还是桀骜不驯,装模作样,真是丑中之丑。现在埃米莉小姐也加入到那些名门望族代表的行列中了,他们沉睡在雪松环绕的墓园之中,那里尽是一排排在南北战争时期杰弗森战役中阵亡的南方和北方的无名军人墓。

3. 埃米莉小姐在世时,始终是一个传统的化身,是义务的象征,也是人们关注的对象。自 1894 年某日镇长萨特里斯上校——也就是他下了一道黑人妇女不系围裙不得上街的命令——豁免了她一切应纳的税款起,期限是从她父亲去世之日起,直到她去世为止,这是全镇沿袭下来对她的一种义务。这也并非说埃米莉甘愿接受施舍,原来是萨特里斯上校编造了一大套无中生有的话,说是埃米莉的父亲曾经贷款给镇政府,因此,镇政府作为一种交易,宁愿以这种方式偿还。这一套话,只有萨特里斯一代的人以及像萨特里斯一样头脑的人才能编得出来,也只有妇道人家才会相信。

4. 等到思想更为开明的第二代人当了镇长和参议员时,这项安排引起了一些小小的不满。那年元旦,他们便给她寄去了一张纳税通知单。二月份到了,还是杳无音信。他们发去一封公函,要她方便时到司法长官办公处去一趟。一周之后,镇长亲自写信给埃米莉,表示愿意登门访问,或派车迎接她,而所得回信却是一张便条,写在古色古香的信笺上,书法流利,字迹细小,但墨水已不鲜艳,信的大意是说她已经根本不外出。纳税通知奉还,没有表示意见。

5. 参议员们开了个特别会议,派出一个代表团对她进行了访问。他们敲敲门,自从 8 年或者 10 年前她停止开授瓷器彩绘课以来,谁也没有从这大门出入过。那个上了年纪的黑人男仆把他们接待进阴暗的门厅,从那里再由楼梯上去,光线就更暗了。一股尘封的气味扑鼻而来,空气阴湿而又沉闷,这屋子长久没有人住了。黑人领他们到客厅里,里面摆设的笨重家具全都包着皮套子。黑人打开了一扇百叶窗,这时,便更可看出皮套子已经开裂;等他们坐了下来,大腿两边就有一阵灰尘冉冉上升,尘粒在那一缕阳光中缓缓旋转。壁炉前已经失去金色光泽的画架上放着埃米莉父亲的炭笔画像。

6. 她一进屋,他们全都站了起来。一个小模小样、腰圆体胖的女人,穿了一身黑服,一条细细的金表链一直垂到腰际,下端隐没在腰带之下,一根乌木拐杖支撑着她的身体,拐杖头的镶金已经失去光泽。因为她的骨架小,换了别人只是有点丰满,而到她身上就显得肥胖了。她看上去像长久泡在死水中的一具死尸,肿胀发白。当客人说明来意时,她那双凹陷在一脸隆起的肥肉之中、活像揉在一团生面中的两

个小煤球似的眼睛不住地移动着,时而瞧瞧这张面孔,时而打量那张面孔。

7. 她没有请他们坐下来。她只是站在门口,静静地听着,直到发言的代表结结巴巴说完。他们这时才听到那块儿隐在金链子那一端的挂表滴答作响。

8. 她的声调冷酷无情。“我在杰弗森无税可纳。萨特里斯上校早就向我交代过了。或许你们有谁可以去查一查镇政府档案,就可以把事情弄清楚。”

9. “我们已经查过档案,埃米莉小姐,我们就是政府当局。难道您没有收到过司法长官亲手签署的通知吗?”

10. “不错,我收到过一份通知,”埃米莉小姐说道,“也许他自封为司法长官……可是我在杰弗森无税可缴。”

11. “可是纳税册上并没有如此说明,您明白吧。我们应根据……”

12. “你们去找萨特里斯上校。我在杰弗森无税可缴。”

13. “可是,埃米莉小姐……”

14. “你们去找萨特里斯上校。”(萨特里斯上校死了将近10年了。)  
“我在杰弗森无税可纳。托布!”黑人应声而来。“把这些先生们请出去。”

## 二

15. 她就这样把他们“连人带马”地打败了,正如30年前为了那股气味的事战胜了他们的父辈一样。那是她父亲死后两年,也就是在她的心上人——我们都相信一定会和她结婚的那个人——抛弃她不久的时候。父亲死后,她很少外出;心上人离去之后,人们简直就看不到她了。有少数几位妇女竟冒冒失失地去访问过她,但都吃了闭门羹。她居处周围唯一的生命迹象就是那个黑人男子拎着一个篮子出出进进,当年他还是个青年。

16. “好像只要是一个男子,随便什么样的男子,都可以把厨房收拾得井井有条似的。”妇女们都这样说。因此,那种气味越来越厉害时,她们也不感到惊异。那是芸芸众生的世界与高贵有势的格里尔森家之间的另一联系。

17. 邻家一位妇女向年已80的法官史蒂文斯镇长抱怨。

18. “可是太太,你让我对这件事又有什么办法呢?”他说。

19. “哼,通知她把气味弄掉,”那位妇女说,“法律不是有明文规定吗?”

20. “我认为这倒不必要,”法官史蒂文斯说,“可能是她用的那个黑鬼在院子里打死了一条蛇或一只老鼠。我去跟他说说这件事。”

21. 第二天,他又接到两起申诉,一起来自一个男的,用温和的语气提出意见。“法官,我们对这件事实在不能不过问了。我是最不愿意打扰埃米莉小姐的人,可是我们总得想个办法。”那天晚上全体参议员——三位老人和一位年纪较轻的新一代成员在一起开了一个会。

22. “这件事很简单,”年轻人说,“通知她把屋子打扫干净。限期搞好,不然的话……”

23. “先生,这怎么行?”法官史蒂文斯说。“你能当着——一位贵妇人的面说她那里有难闻的气味吗?”

24. 于是,第二天午夜之后,有四个人穿过了埃米莉小姐家的草坪,像夜盗一样绕着屋子潜行,沿着墙角一带以及在地窖通风处拼命闻嗅,而其中一个人则用手从挎在肩上的袋子中掏出什么东西,不断做着播种的动作。他们打开了地窖门,在那里和所有的外屋里都撒上了石灰。等到他们回头又穿过草坪时,原来暗黑的一扇窗户亮起了灯;埃米莉小姐坐在那里。灯在她身后,她那挺直的身躯一动不动像是一尊佛像。他们蹑手蹑脚地走过草坪,进入街道两旁洋槐树树荫之中。一两个星期之后,气味就闻不到了。

25. 而这时人们才开始真正为她感到难过。镇上的人想起埃米莉小姐的姑奶奶怀亚特老太太终于

变成了十足的疯子的事,都相信格里尔森一家人自视过高,不了解自己所处的地位。埃米莉小姐和像她一类的女子对什么样的年轻男子都看不上眼。长久以来,我们把这家人一直看做一幅画中的人物:身段苗条、穿着白衣的埃米莉小姐立在身后,她父亲叉开双脚的侧影在前面,背对埃米莉,手执一根马鞭,一扇向后开的前门恰好嵌住了他们俩的身影。因此当她年近30,尚未婚配时,我们实在没有喜幸的心理,只是觉得先前的看法得到了证实。即使她家有着疯癫的血液吧,如果真有一切机会摆在她面前,她也不至于断然放过。

26. 父亲死后,传说留给她的全部财产就是那座房子;人们倒也感到有点高兴。到头来,他们可以对埃米莉表示怜悯之情了。单身独处,贫苦无靠,她变得懂人情了。如今她也体会到多一便士就激动喜悦、少一便士便痛苦失望的那种人皆有之的心情了。

27. 她父亲死后的第二天,所有的妇女们都准备到她家拜望,表示哀悼和愿意接济的心意,这是我们的习俗。埃米莉小姐在家门口接待她们,衣着和平日一样,脸上没有一丝哀愁。她告诉她们,她的父亲并没死。一连三天她都是这样,不论是教会牧师访问她也好,还是医生想劝她让他们把尸体处理掉也好。正当他们要诉诸法律和武力时,她垮下来了,于是他们很快地埋葬了她的父亲。

28. 当时我们还没有说她发疯。我们相信她这样做是控制不了自己。我们还记得她父亲赶走了所有的青年男子,我们也知道她现在已经一无所有,只好像人们常常所做的一样,死死拖住抢走了她一切的那个人。

### 三

29. 她病了好长一段时期。再见到她时,她的头发已经剪短,看上去像个姑娘,和教堂里彩色玻璃窗上的天使像不无相似之处——有几分悲怆肃穆。

30. 行政当局已订好合同,要铺设人行道,就在她父亲去世的那年夏天开始动工。建筑公司带着一批黑人、骡子和机器来了,工头是个北方佬,名叫霍默·巴伦,个子高大,皮肤黝黑,精明强干,声音洪亮,双眼比脸色浅淡。一群群孩子跟在他身后听他用不堪入耳的话责骂黑人,而黑人则随着铁镐的上下起落有节奏地哼着劳动号子。没有多少时候,全镇的人他都认识了。随便什么时候人们要是在广场上的什么地方听见哈哈大笑的声音,霍默·巴伦肯定是在人群的中心。过了不久,每逢礼拜天的下午我们就看到他和埃米莉小姐一齐驾着轻便马车出游了。那辆黄轮车配上从马房中挑出的栗色辕马,十分相称。

31. 起初我们都高兴地看到埃米莉小姐多少有了一点寄托,因为妇女们都说:“格里尔森家的人绝对不会真的看中一个北方佬,一个拿日工资的人。”不过也有别人,一些年纪大的人说就是悲伤也不会叫一个真正高贵的妇女忘记“贵人举止”,尽管口头上不把它叫做“贵人举止”。他们只是说:“可怜的埃米莉,她的亲属应该来到她的身边。”她有亲属在亚拉巴马;但多年以前,她的父亲为了疯婆子怀亚特老太太的产权问题跟他们闹翻了,以后两家就没有来往。他们连丧礼也没派人参加。

32. 老人们一说到“可怜的埃米莉”,就交头接耳开了。他们彼此说:“你真认为是那么回事吗?”“当然是啰。还能是别的什么事……”他们是用手捂住嘴轻轻地说这句话的;轻快的马蹄驶去的时候,关上了遮挡星期午午后骄阳的百叶窗,还可听出绸缎的窸窣声:“可怜的埃米莉。”

33. 她把头抬得高高——甚至当我们深信她已经堕落了的时候也是如此,仿佛她比历来都更要求人们承认她作为格里尔森家族末代人物的尊严,仿佛她的尊严就需要同世俗的接触来重新肯定她那不受任何影响的性格。比如说,她那次买老鼠药、砒霜的情况。那是在人们已开始说“可怜的埃米莉”之后一年多,她的两个堂姐妹也正在那时来看望她。

34. “我要买点毒药。”她跟药剂师说。她当时已30出头,依然是个削肩细腰的女人,只是比往常更加清瘦了,一双黑眼冷酷高傲,脸上的肉在两边的太阳穴和眼窝处绷得很紧,那副面部表情是你想象中的灯塔守望人所应有的。“我要买点毒药。”她说道。

35. “知道了,埃米莉小姐。要买哪一种?是毒老鼠之类的吗?那么我建议……”

36. “我要你们店里最有效的毒药,种类我不管。”

37. 药剂师一口气说出好几种。“它们什么都毒得死,哪怕是大象。可是你要的是……”

38. “砒霜,”埃米莉小姐说,“砒霜灵不灵?”

39. “是……砒霜?知道了,小姐。可是你要的是……”

40. “我要的是砒霜。”

41. 药剂师朝下望了她一眼。她回看他一眼,身子挺直,面孔像一面拉紧了旗子。“噢噢,当然有,”药剂师说,“如果你要的是这种毒药。不过,法律规定你得说明做什么用途。”

42. 埃米莉小姐只是瞪着他,头向后仰了仰,以便双眼好正视他的双眼,一直看到他目光移开了,走进去拿砒霜包好。黑人送货员把那包药送出来给她;药剂师却没有再露面。她回家打开药包,盒子上骷髅骨标记下注明:“毒鼠用药。”

#### 四

43. 于是,第二天我们大家都说:“她要自杀了。”我们也都说这是再好不过的事。我们第一次看到她和霍默·巴伦在一块儿时,我们都说:“她要嫁给他了。”后来又说:“她还说服他呢。”因为霍默自己说他喜欢和男人来往,大家知道他和年轻人在麋鹿俱乐部一起喝酒,他本人说过,他是无意于成家的人。以后每逢礼拜天下午他们乘着漂亮的轻便马车驰过;埃米莉小姐昂着头,霍默歪戴着帽子,嘴里叼着雪茄烟,戴着黄手套的手握着马缰和马鞭。我们在百叶窗背后都不禁要说一声:“可怜的埃米莉。”

44. 后来有些妇女开始说,这是全镇的羞辱,也是青年的坏榜样。男子汉不想干涉,但妇女们终于迫使浸礼会牧师——埃米莉小姐一家人都是属于圣公会的——去拜访她。访问经过他从未透露,但他再也不愿去第二趟了。下个礼拜天他们又驾着马车出现在街上,于是第二天牧师夫人就写信告知埃米莉住在亚拉巴马的亲属。

45. 原来她家里还有近亲,于是我们坐等事态的发展。起先没有动静,随后我们得到确讯,他们即将结婚。我们还听说埃米莉小姐去过首饰店,订购了一套银质男人盥洗用具,每件上面刻着“霍·巴”。两天之后人家又告诉我们她买了全套男人服装,包括睡衣在内,因此我们说:“他们已经结婚了。”我们着实高兴。我们高兴的是两位堂姐妹比起埃米莉小姐来,更有格里尔森家族的风度。

46. 因此当霍默·巴伦离开本城——街道铺路工程已经竣工好一阵子时,我们一点也不感到惊异。我们倒因为缺少一番送行告别的热闹,不无失望之感。不过我们都相信他此去是为了迎接埃米莉小姐做一番准备,或者是让她有个机会打发走两个堂姐妹(那时已经形成了一个秘密小集团,我们都站在埃米莉小姐一边,帮她踢开这一对堂姐妹)。一点也不差,一星期后她们就走了,而且,正如我们一直所期待的那样,霍默·巴伦又回到镇上来了。一位邻居亲眼看见那个黑人在一天黄昏时分打开厨房门让他进去了。

47. 这就是我们最后一次看到霍默·巴伦。至于埃米莉小姐呢,我们则有一段时间没有见到过她。黑人拿着购货篮进进出出,可是前门却总是关着。偶尔可以看到她的身影在窗口晃过,就像人们在撒石灰那天夜晚曾经见到过的那样,但却有整整六个月的时间,她没有出现在大街上。我们明白这也并非出乎意料;她父亲的性格三番五次地使她那作为女性的一生平添波折,而这种性格仿佛太恶毒、太狂暴,还不肯消失似的。

48. 等到我们再见到埃米莉小姐时,她已经发胖了,头发也已灰白了。以后数年中,头发越变越灰,变得像胡椒盐似的铁灰色,颜色就不再变了。直到她74岁去世之日为止,还是保持着那旺盛的铁灰色,像是一个活跃的男子的头发。

49. 打那时起,她的前门就一直关闭着,除了她40岁左右的那段约有六七年的时间之外。在那段时期,她开授瓷器彩绘课。在楼下的一间房里,她临时布置了一个画室,萨特里斯上校的同时代人全都把女儿、孙女儿送到她那里学画,那样的按时按刻,那样的认真精神,简直同礼拜天把她们送到教堂去,还

给她们 25 分钱的硬币准备放在捐献盆子里的情况一模一样。这时,她的捐税已经被豁免了。

50. 后来,新的一代成了全镇的骨干和精神,学画的学生们也长大成人,纷纷离开了。她们没有让她们自己的孩子带着颜色盒、令人生厌的画笔和从妇女杂志上剪下来的画片到埃米莉小姐那里去学画。最后一个学生离开后,前门关上了,而且永远关上了。全镇实行免费邮递制度之后,只有埃米莉小姐一个人拒绝在她门口钉上金属门牌号,附设一个邮件箱。她怎么也不理睬他们。

51. 日复一日,月复一月,年复一年,我们眼看着那黑人的头发变白了,背也驼了,还照旧提着购货篮进进出出。每年 12 月我们都寄给她一张纳税通知单,但一星期后又由邮局退还了,无人收信。不时我们在楼底下的一个窗口——她显然是把楼上封闭起来了——见到她的身影,像神龛中的一个佛像的雕塑躯干,我们说不上她是不是在看着我们。她就这样度过了一代又一代——高贵、宁静,无法逃避,无法接近、蛮不讲理。

52. 她就这样与世长辞了。在一栋尘埃遍地、鬼影憧憧的屋子里得了病,侍候她的只有一个老态龙钟的黑人。我们甚至连她病了也不知道;也早已不想从黑人那里去打听什么消息。他跟谁也不说话,恐怕对她也是如此,他的嗓子似乎由于长久不用变得嘶哑了。

53. 她死在楼下一间屋子里,笨重的胡桃木床上还挂着床帷,她那长满铁灰头发的头枕着的枕头由于用了多年而又不見阳光,已经黄得发霉了。

## 五

54. 黑人在前门口迎接第一批妇女,把她们请进来,她们话音低沉,发出啞啞声响,以好奇的目光迅速扫视着一切。黑人随即不见了,他穿过屋子,走出后门,从此就不见踪影了。

55. 两位堂姐妹也随即赶到,他们第二天就举行了丧礼,全镇的人都跑来看看覆盖着鲜花的埃米莉小姐的尸体。停尸架上方悬挂着她父亲的炭笔画像,一脸深刻沉思的表情,妇女们唧唧喳喳地谈论着死亡,而老年男子呢——有些人还穿上了刷得很干净的南方同盟军制服——在走廊、草坪上纷纷谈论着埃米莉小姐的一生,仿佛他们是他们的同时代人,而且还相信和她跳过舞,甚至向她求过爱,他们把按数学级数向前推进的时间给搅混了。这是老年人常有的情形。在他们看来,过去的岁月不是一条越来越窄的路,而是一片广袤的连冬天也对它无所影响的大草地,只是近 10 年来才像窄小的瓶口一样,把他们同过去隔断了。

56. 我们已经知道,楼上那块儿地方有一个房间,40 年来从没有人见到过,要进去得把门撬开。他们等到埃米莉小姐安葬之后,才设法去开门。

57. 门猛地被打开,震得屋里灰尘弥漫。这间布置得像新房的屋子,仿佛到处都笼罩着墓室一般的淡淡的阴森森的氛围:褪了色的玫瑰色窗帘、玫瑰色的灯罩、梳妆台、一排精细的水晶制品和白银做底的男人盥洗用具,但白银已毫无光泽,连刻制的姓名字母图案都已无法辨认了。杂物中有一条硬领和领带,仿佛刚从身上取下来似的,把它们拿起来时,在台面上堆积的尘埃中留下淡淡的月牙痕。椅子上放着一套衣服,折叠得好好的;椅子底下有两只寂寞无声的鞋和一双扔了不要的袜子。

58. 那男人躺在床上。

59. 我们在那里站了好久,俯视着那没有肉的脸上令人莫测的龇牙咧嘴的样子。那尸体躺在那里,显出一度是拥抱的姿势,但那比爱情更能持久、那战胜了爱情的煎熬的永恒的长眠已经使他驯服了。他所遗留下来的肉体已在破烂的睡衣下腐烂,跟他躺着的木床黏在一起,难分难解了。在他身上和他身旁的枕上,均匀地覆盖着一层长年累月积下来的灰尘。

60. 后来我们才注意到旁边那只枕头上有人头压过的痕迹。我们当中有一个人从那上面拿起了什么东西,大家凑近一看——这时一股淡淡的干燥发臭的气味钻进了鼻孔——原来是一绺长长的铁灰色头发。



## 五、练习答案及详解

### I. Vocabulary

A. Look up the following words and expressions. Select the meaning that best suits the sentence in which each appears.

1. (*fml*) except for
2. (*fml*) choice, excellent, outstanding; only lived in, visited or used by a small number of rich people
3. (accent on the second syllable) inspiring feelings of respect and awe; imposing and magnificent; worthy of respect because of age and dignity, high position, etc.
4. to bring into being; to found, originate, or invent
5. an official public proclamation or order issued by authority; decree
6. to call on or visit (esp. a superior) in order to pay one's respects, ask a favor, etc.
7. a covering that can be pulled down over a window; window shade
8. color, a modification of a basic color
9. on the written documents
10. morally degraded
11. the dignity to show that she was unaffected by the outside world
12. a plate for holding the money collected during a church service
13. behaving in an unreasonable way and regularly doing the opposite of what people expected her to do

### IV. Questions on Appreciation

1. Stories written then are usually told by a person who knows everything at any moment. It is called the omniscient (all-knowing) narrator. In "A Rose for Emily" he chooses "we", the people of the town, as the collective narrator. The first sentence of the story says, "When Miss Emily Grierson died, our whole town went to the funeral..." In the following parts "we" frequently appear as the narrator.

"We" are the ordinary people of the town, representing the gossip of the town. They are, most of the time, not participants but observers of the events. They are rather detached from Miss Emily and therefore different from the "ladies" or "older people" mentioned in Para 31 who are more socially involved with Miss Emily and thus tending to be more judgmental. The townspeople are mainly interested in keeping track of the events and sharing the information with people coming from outside the town. Yet, as people living in a small town in the South, they have their own values and attitudes. So inevitably there are gaps in the narration that are bound to cause confusion on the part of the readers or the listeners of the story. That leaves a lot of room for reader participation.

2. Para 2 provides details about the setting of the story—the place being the southern town of Jefferson and the time being after the South lost in the American Civil War. From the descriptions of the appearance of Miss Emily's house we learn something about her family and her character, and from the visible changes on the streets over the years we get to know something about the historical and social changes that were taking place then. While the whole street was becoming modern and commercial, only Miss Emily's house remained the same. Although her house was decaying, it still assumed an air of a stubborn and frivolous girl. The cotton wagons and gasoline pumps were ugly enough, but this house, which was old, in decay, pretentious, and completely out of place, was more

unpleasant to look at. Here the author personifies the buildings on the street, especially Miss Emily's house by using words like "lifting its stubborn and coquettish decay". This detail shows that the house and its owner share the same character.

Faulkner uses the figurative language to describe the place where Emily lives. The house is a perfect mirror image of the owner who is supposed to be stubborn and coquettish and deliberately detaches herself from the communal life in this small town. Moreover, the impression of the house, hence Emily the owner and the life she lives is not quite pleasant because it has decayed or deteriorated in the course of time.

Miss Emily is being described as a dead person, drowned, bloated and pale. Both the house and the owner are in decay. Shutting herself from the outside world and living in complete self-isolation, Miss Emily seemed like a living corpse. Also, there are some descriptions of her gold chain and gold head of an ebony cane. Gilt and gold suggest wealth. To tarnish means to lose luster, to discolor and to grow dull. This word "tarnish" can also mean to besmirch or sully (a reputation, honor, etc.). The repeated use of the word underlines the fact that the Grierson family used to be rich and august but now it has lost its splendor.

Another example is the design of her watch. The gold chain was the chain of the watch. The fact that it vanished (disappeared) into her belt means that the watch was hidden under her belt and therefore invisible. In Para 7 the narrator tells us, "Then they could hear the invisible watch ticking at the end of the gold chain." Pay attention to the symbolic meaning of the watch. If the watch vanished into her belt, that means she did not look at the watch. The watch is a symbol of time. In his novel *The Sound and the Fury*, Faulkner also uses watches and clocks as symbols of time. Just as one of the characters in that novel tried to smash a watch to stop time, Miss Emily, by making her watch invisible, tried to ignore the passage of time as well as any changes brought about by the passage of time.

3. Miss Emily's personality was warped which the author shares sympathy to her. Born into an aristocratic family of the South, Miss Emily was proud, self-important and obstinate like the other Griersons. As a lady from such a family she enjoyed a high but obsolete social status. On the one hand she was placed on a pedestal for people to admire as if she were perfect. She was closely watched by the community and was always expected to bring honor to the town and set a good example for the young. She was viewed as a representative of the Southern tradition, "an idol in the niche". Dominated by her father, she was robbed of all opportunities for a happy marriage and thus for a normal woman's life. So when her father died, she was still single at the age of 30. After she began to court with Homer Barron, a Northern laborer, she was accused of being a disgrace to the town and a bad example to the young people. The patriarchal and social pressure warped her character. She tried hard to cling to the past, which meant privilege and glory to her. She cut herself off from the changing world and lived in complete self-isolation over the years. She was transformed from a subordinate young lady controlled by her domineering father to a middle-aged woman courting a laborer against the accusations of the community and then to a murderer who not only killed her lover but also kept the corpse in her house and even sometimes lay down beside the remains of the dead body. For such a woman, the townspeople had mixed feelings—she was "dear, inescapable, impervious, tranquil, and perverse". For better or worse, she is the embodiment of the social conditions at that time. Through telling this story and exploring the character of Miss Emily, Faulkner reveals his ambivalent relationship to the

South, of which he feels proud and ashamed at the same time. Barricaded in her house, Emily has frozen the past to protect her dreams. In fact Emily's life is a tragedy in that her defiance of the community, her refusal to accept change and her extreme pride have pushed her to abnormality and insanity. She has been twisted by forces that she cannot control.

4. The story is not narrated in chronological order. Time is actually an essential mystery in Faulkner's novels. His handling of time in this story is also noteworthy. The whole story is a portrait of Miss Emily's refusal to change. To highlight the thematic concern, Faulkner constantly shifts the focus of attention to the retrospect of Emily's life by way of flashbacks. Emily Grierson dies at the very beginning of the story. Then there goes the recollection of Emily's refusal to pay the tax in 1926. The time of the second part jumps back to some thirty years ago, during which her father dies and she kills Homer Barron two years after that. When Emily buys arsenic, the time is over a year after they have begun to say "Poor Emily"; then for six months she does not appear on the streets. The fourth part deals with things that happen in 1897 and after 1897. In the last part, the time turns back to the year of 1940 when Emily dies at seventy-four. After her funeral, the town people go to her room and all the secrets have been revealed. The displacement in the chronological time sequence allows the narrator to tell the story in a most dramatic way and to fill in useful background details. Moreover, this structure helps reinforce one of the themes—the relation of the individual and his action to the past, present, and future.
5. From Para 57 to the end of the story we see how perfectly Faulkner is able to create an atmosphere often found in a Gothic novel. Gothic novel is a type of novel characterized by horror, violence, supernatural effects, and a taste for the medieval, usually set against a background of Gothic architecture, especially a gloomy and isolated castle. "A Rose for Emily" contains some characteristics of Gothic fiction. The author's purpose is to create an atmosphere best suited for portraying the perverse character of Miss Emily and telling an appalling story about her.

We can read the story as merely a piece of Southern Gothicism. For in this story, Miss Emily poisoned her lover in her bride room, and every day she lay beside the corpse. The dim light and the dust of her house which had no connection with outside world imparted a suitably sinister and terrifying atmosphere. Meanwhile, the reason that the story happened was the conflict between the two local cultures. We can hear the voice of the Southern culture which is the basic of the story.

6. "A Rose for Emily" is a very rich and complicated text. We can see the plot of the story evolves around many conflicts—the conflict between Mr. Grierson and his daughter, the conflict between Miss Emily and Homer Barron, the conflict between Miss Emily and the community of the town, and the conflict between the past and the present. The reader's different focus on these conflicts may lead to different conclusions about the meaning of the story. In other words, there may be different interpretations. On one level, for instance, the story may be read as a murder story in which the disappointed bride killed the bridegroom. But we know this could not be the great writer's sole purpose of writing this story. On a symbolic level, the conflict between Emily and Homer Barron may be viewed as a clash between the South and the North, represented by Miss Emily and Homer Barron respectively. However, with such an interpretation one runs the risk of oversimplifying the thematic richness of the work. On a psychological level, the story explores the inner world of a human being, the main character's conflict with the established codes of conduct and her conflict with her own heart.

Still on another level, the story shows how the past and present clash and what a great impact the past has made on the present. It tells what it is like to live in the American South between the 1860s to the 1930s when the South had to digest the loss of the war.

The implication of *A Rose for Emily* is many-fold. First of all, this is a story about the decline of the South, especially the Southern aristocratic class. In this story, Emily, brought up in that aristocratic tradition by her strict father, represents the old values. However, when the younger generation becomes the backbone and the spirit of the town, her family's privileges are challenged. Secondly, the story can also be read as a dramatization of the conflict between the two different value systems and two social orders, i. e. the new and the old, the North and the South, represented respectively by Homer Barron and Miss Emily Grierson. From the stubborn, eccentric Miss Grierson we find how the backward South struggles to resist the progressive and materialistic civilization of the North. Another reading of the story sheds light on the clash between the present and the past, a dilemma the modern man feels when he lives virtually in memory. Emily gets used to the old way of life, enjoying all those aristocratic advantages. However, when the old values are gradually cast away by the new generation, she cannot adjust herself to the changed society. Finally she is in self-closure and dies in misery as the prisoner of the past glory and a victim to the conflict between the past and the present.

The story is also about the black man's virtue. The Negro who takes care of Emily Grierson and tends to all the housework stays with the family until the last moment of Emily's life. After her death, he disappears permanently because on one hand he wouldn't want to tell the family secret he knows, and on the other he has fulfilled all his duty to serve the last Grierson. In Faulkner's opinion, the Blacks are more faithful and loyal and closer to the nature than the civilized Whites. Thus in them lies the hope.

7. It obviously shows in the structure of the story. The story is divided into 5 parts. The first part is about Miss Emily's funeral, with a flashback to the family's former pride and glory. The second is about Emily's stinking and decaying house, in which she received her early strict education. The third part is about a day laborer, Homer Barron, who had a good time with Emily until her kin made an interference with them. In the fourth part, Emily goes to a drugstore to buy arsenics with which she kills Homer and keeps his corpse in an attic room. Now she seldom goes out and finally dies. In the last part, the black servant opens the door to the outsiders so that they get a chance to see the room where Homer's body is kept. The story is not narrated in chronological order. The readers must collect the information from different part. This technique makes readers think by the thought floating of the author.

#### V. Write a brief bio or give a 10-minute presentation of William Faulkner.

When we talk about William Faulkner's life, the most important fact is that he was born and bred in the American South and lived there almost all his life.

On November 14, 1888, the local newspaper in Jackson, Mississippi reported a news story: "A terrible tragedy was enacted at Ripley on Tuesday afternoon of last week—the widely-and-well-known Col. W. C. Faulkner being the victim." Col. Faulkner had run for the Mississippi legislature and had been elected. But before he took office he was shot dead by his rival. Col. Faulkner had been a local hero and a legendary figure. He was a pioneer in Mississippi, organized a regiment to fight for the South in the Civil War, practiced law after returning from the battlefields, bought a large

plantation, built the first railroad in his hometown, and wrote a novel, which became a national best-seller. This "widely-and-well-known" Col. W. C. Faulkner was William Faulkner's great-grandfather. On September 25, 1897, Faulkner was born to this distinguished family. He spent his youth in Oxford, a small town in Mississippi. Although the old colonel had died before Faulkner came into this world, the boy grew up listening to all sorts of stories about his great-grandfather and other people in his hometown. The stories the Negro nanny told him and the gossip he heard from the townspeople resting and chatting on the small downtown square provided Faulkner with an oral tradition of storytelling as an important part of his education.

During World War I Faulkner served with the Royal Canadian Air Force. After the armistice in 1918 he returned to Oxford, and for some time he led a life in a rather listless way. He attended the University of Mississippi but left the university within a year; he tried his hand at poetry but without much success; he went north to the cultural metropolitan city of New York, but was driven back home soon by loneliness. He became a postmaster, but in less than three years he resigned from this post. All this time, Faulkner had been reading first whatever interested him and, later, the great poets and novelists. In New York, Faulkner met Sherwood Anderson, a famous writer, and then when he traveled to New Orleans in 1925 he gained entry into this artistic center through Anderson. Inspired by Anderson, Faulkner began to write novels.

Faulkner wrote 19 novels and nearly a hundred short stories. The setting of 15 novels and the majority of the short fiction is the American South. In them the author tells stories about people from a small region in Mississippi, a fictional place the author calls Yoknapatawpha County. He even drew a map of the place and gave specific details about the population there.

His major works include novels *The Sound and the Fury* (1929), *As I Lay Dying* (1930), *Light in August* (1932), and *Absalom, Absalom!* (1936). Because the setting of most of his works is the American South, Faulkner is regarded as a regional writer. But the word "regional" is misleading because Faulkner deals with some of the major universal themes in literature so profoundly that he is read and recognized nationally and internationally. As far as writing techniques are concerned, Faulkner is among the greatest experimentalists of the 20th century novel. His effective use of the stream of consciousness, multiple points of view, symbolism and imagery place him among the rank of the greatest modern writers along with James Joyce and Virginia Woolf. In 1950 Faulkner received the Nobel Prize for Literature.

**VI. Explain the following in your own words, bringing out any implied meanings.**

1. The street used to house only the best families. But then great changes took place; garages and cotton gins were established on the street and their existence wiped out the aristocratic traces in that neighborhood.
2. It would not be true to say that Miss Emily would have accepted charity.
3. What the ladies said meant that they did not in the least believe a man, any man, could keep a kitchen properly.
4. The Griersons regarded themselves as very important and the outside world as vulgar and full of people inferior to them. They belonged to two entirely different worlds. However, the complaints about the smell served as a link between the two different worlds and compelled Miss Emily to deal with the outside world.

5. The next day the mayor received two more complaints. One of them was from a man who came and pleaded to the mayor in a shy and timid way.
6. People in the town felt that the Grierson family regarded themselves more important than they really deserved to be. The fact that Miss Emily's great-aunt, old lady Wyatt, had gone crazy had to do with this blind, excessive self-importance.
7. Ordinary people often become excited or worried when they get a penny more or a penny less. Being poor, now she would learn to appreciate the value of money like other people in the town.
8. But there were still others, older people, who said that no matter how sad Miss Emily was (over her father's death), she should not forget she had certain obligations as a member of the nobility, though a real lady would not describe her self-restraint by the expression *noblesse oblige*.
9. We were glad because the two cousins were even more stubborn and self-important than Miss Emily.
10. And the very old men confused the dates and years of past happenings. To the old people, all the past should be like a road that becomes smaller as it reaches further back. But to those old Southerners, the recent past of ten years or so was like a bottleneck, a narrow passage, or a tunnel. Beyond that narrow passage, the remote past became a huge level meadow where things were pleasantly and fondly mixed up together. Like the green grass on the meadow never touched by the winter, their memories of the remote past remained blurred, sweet, romanticized, and unchanged.

#### VII. Translate the following into Chinese.

##### A. Phrases

1. 丑中之丑
2. 他制定了这则法令
3. 房间里灰尘弥漫,散发着因长久不用而产生的气味
4. 一条细细的金表链一直垂到腰际,下端隐没在腰带之下
5. 一个身材高大、皮肤黝黑、精明能干的男人
6. 从马车店租来的配套的栗色马
7. 临时工
8. 呈拥抱的姿势

##### B. Sentences

1. 男人们去是出于一种敬慕之情,因为一个纪念碑倒下了。女人们则大多数出于好奇心,想看看埃米莉小姐的房子里面到底是什么样子的,因为除了一个做花匠兼厨师的老男仆之外,起码有 10 年光景谁也没进去看看这幢房子了。
2. 不过,现在埃米莉小姐也加入到那些名门望族代表的行列中了,他们沉睡在雪松环绕的墓园之中,那里尽是一排排南北战争时期杰弗森战役中阵亡的南方和北方的无名战士墓。
3. 埃米莉小姐在世时,一直是传统的化身,履行责任和给予关照的对象,这是全镇人沿袭下来的一种义务……
4. 老男仆把他们引进光线黯淡的门厅,厅里的楼梯通向更加阴暗的楼上。
5. ……他们落座时,一股细细的灰尘在大腿周围慢慢扬起,尘粒在房间里唯一的太阳光束中缓缓地旋转着。
6. 因为她的骨架小,换了别人只是有点丰满,而到她身上就显得肥胖了。
7. 于是,第二天午夜之后,有四个人穿过爱米丽家的草坪,像夜盗一样绕着屋子潜行,沿着墙角一带以及在地窖的通风处使劲地嗅着,其中一人从背在肩上的袋子里不时掏出什么东西,不断做着播种的

动作。

8. 他们连葬礼也没派人参加。

● 9. 艾米莉就那样瞪着他, 她的头向后仰, 以便能与他对视, 一直看得他转移了目光, 走进去取了砒霜并包好。

10. 不时地, 我们在楼下的窗口能看见她的身影, 显然她已经封闭了楼上。她的身影就像供奉在神龛里的一尊佛像的躯体, 也许她在看着我们, 也许没有, 我们也搞不清楚。

# Lesson Nine

## The Bluest Eye (Excerpts)



### 一、课文导读

#### (一) 内容梗概

托尼·莫里森是当代美国文坛一位举足轻重的人物,与其他美国黑人作家不同的是,莫里森没有直接抨击种族歧视,而是着力描写在白人的强势文化下,黑人文化的瓦解与崩溃。《最蓝的眼睛》是莫里森的第一部小说;主人公皮克拉是一个生活苦楚的黑人姑娘,她梦想拥有蓝色的眼睛,从而扭转自己目前的生活境遇。然而所有梦想均告幻灭,被亲生父亲强暴的她不仅永远失去了幸福,而且在绝望中陷入了疯狂。

本课摘录的是小说中最生动的部分。这一部分描写了一些具有白人血统的黑人姑娘极力向白人靠拢,极力使自己区别于其他黑人。在几个女孩中的悲剧故事中,小说集中刻画了皮克拉的悲剧,通过描写她被冤枉杀死白人同学家里的猫而被同学的母亲赶出来的情节,深刻地反映了植根于白人头脑之中的种族歧视观念以及以皮克拉为代表的混血黑人姑娘的真正身份和悲剧命运。

#### (二) 背景知识

##### Toni Morrison

Now known as Toni Morrison, Chloe Anthony Wofford was born in Lorain, Ohio, on February 18, 1931. She graduated with Honors from Lorain High School and entered Howard University, where she changed her name to Toni. She earned a B. A. in English in 1953. In 1955, she earned a M. A. in English from Cornell University. In 1964 Morrison and her husband divorced, and she moved with her two sons to New York.

Morrison's first novel is *The Bluest Eye* (1970). The novel recounts the tragic story of Pecola Breedlove, an eleven-year-old black girl who desires for blue eyes more than anything else. Her second novel, *Sula* (1973), chronicles the friendship between Nel Wright and Sula Peace from 1919 to 1965. The next novel, *Song of Solomon* (1977), was a best-seller. *Tar Baby* (1981), whose publication put Morrison on the cover of Newsweek and catapulted her to even more popular and critical acclaim. Morrison's singular achievement in fiction occurred in 1987, when she published *Beloved*, for which she



Toni Morrison



won the Pulitzer Prize in 1988. In 1992 Morrison published another novel, *Jazz*. Then in 1998, she published *Paradise*.

In 1993, she won the Nobel Prize in Literature and became the first African American to win the prize.



## 二、词汇与短语

### (一) 词汇

① bully /'buli/ *v.*

to frighten or hurt 恐吓; 欺负

② contempt /kən'tempt/ *n.*

feeling that sb. /sth. is completely worthless and cannot be respected 轻视; 蔑视

【反义】respect; admiration

③ depiction /dɪ'pɪkʃən/ *n.*

showing as a picture 描绘

—depiction of modern life 对现代生活的描绘

④ dime /daɪm/

coin of the U. S. and Canada worth ten cents 美国、加拿大的 10 分铸币

—a dime a dozen 十分便宜; 几乎一文不值

⑤ enunciation /ɪnʌnsi'eɪʃən/ *n.*

saying or pronouncing clearly 说明; 阐明

—the enunciation of one's opinions 发表意见

⑥ etch /etʃ/ *v.*

to use a needle and acid to make on a metal plate from which copies may be printed 蚀刻

【同义】engrave

—She enjoys etching. 她喜欢蚀刻。

⑦ fretful /'fretful/ *adj.*

irritable or complaining, esp. about small and unimportant things 烦躁的; 发牢骚的

【同义】irritated; annoyed 【反义】calm

—a fretful child 烦躁的孩子

⑧ grant /grɑnt/

1) *v.* to agree to give or allow 同意; 批准 【同义】approve 【反义】prohibit; forbid

—They granted him permission to go. 他们批准他去。

2) *n.* thing given for a particular purpose, esp. money from the government 授予物; 拨款

—He is applying for the student grants. 他正在申请学生助学金。

【派生】grantee *n.* 被授予人 grantor *n.* 授予人

⑨ introvert /'ɪntrəvɜ:t/ *n.*

person who is more interested in his own thoughts and feelings than in things outside himself, and is often shy and unwilling to speak or join in activities with others 内向的人

—Introverts are not popular in social life. 在社交生活中, 内向的人不受欢迎。

【派生】introversion *n.* 内向; 内省 introversive *adj.* 内向的; 内省的

⑩inviolable /ɪn'vaɪələbl/ *adj.*

that must not be violated or dishonored 不可侵犯的; 不可违背的

⑪metaphorical /ˌmetə'fɒrɪkəl/ *adj.*

of or like a metaphor 隐喻的

—a metaphorical expression 隐喻的说法

⑫momentarily /ˌmɒməntə'ri/ *adv.*

for a very short time; at once 短暂地; 瞬间地; 立即 【同义】instantly

⑬mutilation /ˌmju:tɪ'leɪʃən/ *n.*

damaging or being damaged 损伤; 残缺 【同义】damage; injury; destruction

—to suffer great mutilation 遭受巨大损伤

⑭proportion /prə'pɔ:ʃən/ *n.*

comparative part or share of a whole 部分; 局部 【同义】part; fraction 【反义】whole

—a large proportion of the earth's surface 大部分地球表面

⑮recess /rɪ'ses/ *n.*

1) period of time when work or business is stopped, esp. in Parliament, the law courts, etc. 休会期;

休庭期; 暂停期间

—the summer recess 暑假

2) break between classes at school (学校的) 课间休息

⑯satiety /sə'taɪəti/ *n.*

condition or feeling of being satiated 满足; 饱足 【同义】satisfaction; content

⑰seep /si:p/ *v.*

to leak, drip or flow out slowly through small openings 渗出; 漏出 【同义】penetrate

—water seeping through the roof 水从房顶渗下来

【派生】seepage *n.* 渗出物; 漏出物

⑱singé /sɪndʒ/ *v.*

to burn sth. slightly on its surface or edge 烧焦或烫焦 【同义】scorch

—a singed rug 烧焦的地毯

⑲slither /'slɪðə/ *v.*

to slip or slide as on a slope 不稳地滑动或滑行

—to slither down an icy slope 摇晃地沿冰斜坡滑下

⑳sly /slai/ *adj.*

1) acting or done in a secret, often cunning and deceitful way 狡猾的; 狡诈的

【反义】frank; honest

—a sly trick 狡诈的伎俩

2) suggesting that one knows sth. secret 会意的; 会心的 【同义】understanding

—a sly smile 会心的一笑

㉑soufflé /su:'fleɪ/ *n.*

any of several baked foods, a dish prepared with white sauce and egg-yolks and some additional ingredients 蛋奶酥

—a spinach soufflé 菠菜蛋奶酥

② **surfeit** /'sɜːfɪt/ *n.*

too great an amount 过量; 过度

—a surfeit of food 暴饮暴食

③ **unabashed** /ʌnə'beɪʃt/ *adj.*

not embarrassed or ill at ease 不害羞的 【同义】shameless 【反义】shameful; ashamed

(二) 短语

① **to wipe away**

to clear or remove sth. by wiping 擦净; 擦掉

—The boy wipes away the tears at the sight of his mother. 小男孩一看到妈妈就擦干了眼泪。

② **for fear of**

in case 唯恐

—We spoke in whispers for fear of waking the baby. 我们小声说话, 唯恐吵醒婴儿。

③ **to remove... from**

to take sth. /sb. away from one place to another place; to get rid of 移开; 去除

—He slowly removed his hand from her shoulder. 他慢慢地把手从她肩膀上移开。

④ **to seep over**

to flow slowly and completely 漏渗出来遍及各处

—Oil is seeping over the ground. 满地是油。

⑤ **to be anxious about**

to be worried about; to be concerned about 焦虑; 担心

—Mother was anxious about the feeble child. 母亲担心体弱多病的孩子。

⑥ **to indulge sb. in sth. /doing sth.**

to allow sb. to have whatever one likes or wants 迷恋于...; 沉湎于...

—He was indulged in chatting on the Internet. 他迷恋于网上聊天。

⑦ **to keep from doing sth.**

to prevent from doing sth. 避免做某事

—Students should keep from dozing off in class. 学生不应该在课堂打瞌睡。

⑧ **to share sth. with sb.**

to have sth. in common 分享; 共享

—She shares a flat with her colleague. 她与同事一起住。

⑨ **to travel in packs**

to travel carrying a number of things wrapped or tied together, esp. on the back 背包旅行

—He climbed the mountain with his belongings in packs. 他背包爬山。

⑩ **to take a shortcut**

to take a route that makes a journey, walk, etc. shorter 走捷径; 抄近路

—There's no shortcut in learning English. 英语学习无捷径可言。

⑪ **to suck in one's breath**

to take air into the lungs and send it out 呼吸

—An oxygen tent can help the patient suck in his breath. 氧气罩可以帮助病人呼吸。

⑫ **in an effort to do sth.**

to try one's best to do sth. 努力做某事

—He was in an effort to buy a flat for his family. 他尽力为家人买一套房子。

**⑬ to be distracted from**

to stop concentrating on sth. 分散注意力于…

—He was distracted from the problems for a while. 他暂时忘却了那些烦恼。



### 三、课文注释

**① They say “Aiken” and you see a white butterfly glance off a fence with a torn wing. (Para 1)**

The implied meaning is that life in the Deep South seems romantic and fills them with sentimental nostalgia, although life there is not easy.

**to glance off:** to hit a surface at an angle and then move away from it in another direction

**② The sound of it opens the windows of a room like the first four notes of a hymn. (Para 2)**

When one sings a hymn, the very first four notes will fill one's heart with an air of freshness, just like opening a window of a room. The sound of the four-syllable name of Meridian has the same effect.

**③ Perhaps because they don't have home towns, just places where they were born. But these girls soak up the juice of their home towns, and it never leaves them. (Para 2)**

This is perhaps because they only have places of birth, but not places where they feel at home and which they identify themselves with. But these girls are strongly influenced by their home towns, and the influence stays with them forever even after they leave their home towns.

**to soak up:** to take in

**④ Such girls live in quiet black neighborhoods where everybody is gainfully employed. Where there are porch swings hanging from chains. Where the grass is cut with a scythe, where rooster combs and sunflowers grow in the yards and pots of bleeding heart, ivy, and mother-in-law tongue line the steps and window-sills. (Para 2)**

In the black neighborhoods, everyone has a good and steady job, things are arranged for leisure, and many plants are grown to make a pretty house.

**⑤ They have put in the window the cardboard sign that has a pound measure printed on each of three edges—10 lbs., 25 lbs., 50 lbs.—and No ICE on the fourth. (Para 2)**

In the days without refrigerator, people bought ice for keeping food cool. Every day people could put up a cardboard sign in the window to tell the iceman if they needed ice and how much. They could turn the edge with different weight or No ICE shown to the iceman.

**⑥ These particular brown girls from Mobile and Aiken are not like some of their sisters. (Para 2)**

In a small town, the black people usually live close together with a few blocks in a neighborhood. They have a strong sense of neighborhood, or community. The women call one another “sister”. The brown girls from places like Mobile and Aiken are different from the other girls of their own race and feel superior to them.

**⑦ They sing second soprano in the choir, and although their voices are clear and steady, they are never picked to solo. (Para 2)**

Although their voices are clear and steady, the brown girls in our story can only sing the second not the first soprano, not picked to perform a solo because the solo performer, who plays the leading role

in the choir, should have not only a good voice, but also great passion. The brown girls may have the former but not the latter.

- ⑧ They go to land-grant colleges, normal schools, and learn how to do the white man's work with refinement: home economics to prepare his food; teacher education to instruct black children in obedience; music to soothe the weary master and entertain his blunted soul. (Para 3)

Coming from relatively better-off families, they usually go to land-grant colleges or normal schools. The purpose of such education is to prepare them to serve the white man with refinement. They major in home economics to do housekeeping for their masters. They are educated to be teachers so that they will teach the black children to be obedient. They are trained in music in order to entertain the white masters.

land-grant colleges: 政府拨地建造的大学

home economics: 家政

- ⑨ Wherever it erupts, this Funk, they wipe it away; where it crusts, they dissolve it; wherever it drips, flowers, or clings, they find it and fight it until it dies. (Para 4)

Wherever and whenever this Funk bursts out, the brown girls will do their best to stifle it. Then it emerges again, and they will kill it again. The brown girls have to fight the battle constantly all their lives because funkiness comes back naturally.

- ⑩ The laugh that is a little too loud; the enunciation a little too round; the gesture a little too generous. (Para 4)

They make sure that they don't laugh too loudly, don't speak with their mouths opened too round, and don't make too generous gestures.

- ⑪ There will be pretty paper flowers decorating the picture of his mother... (Para 5)

The paper flowers imply that these girls' way of life is not natural but artificial, in contrast to the Funk.

- ⑫ As long as his needs were physical, she could meet them—comfort and satiety. (Para 11)

If his needs were physical, she could meet them. She could make him comfortable and give him enough or even more than enough to satisfy his physical needs.

to meet one's needs: to make sb. feel satisfied

- ⑬ Geraldine did not talk to him, coo to him, or indulge him in kissing bouts, but she saw that every other desire was fulfilled. (Para 11)

Geraldine failed to give her baby tender, motherly love.

bout: a period of time taken by some activity

- ⑭ More than anything in the world he wanted to play King of the Mountain and have them push him down the mound of dirt and roll over him. (Para 13)

He was used to playing with black boys, and he experienced pleasure in playing with them.

King of the Mountain, “山大王”的游戏, 游戏者极力爬到山顶并阻止他人爬到山顶

- ⑮ When the mood struck him, he would call a child passing by to come play on the swings or the seesaw. (Para 14)

When he was in a mood, he would invite any child he saw to play on the swings or the seesaw.

when the mood struck him: when a mood occurred to him

- ⑯ She kept her head down as she walked. He had seen her many times before, standing alone, always alone,

at recess. Nobody ever played with her. Probably, he thought, because she was ugly. (Para 15)

The black girl kept her head down, showing she was very timid and frightened. She was very lonely, too. At recess kids played together, but nobody ever played with her. She was "ugly" because she was very black. All the kids, including Pecola herself, thought so because all of them were educated to internalize the white values that dictate standards of beauty.

**17 Junior was laughing and running around the room clutching his stomach delightedly. (Para 36)**

Junior was laughing so hard that his stomach ached. So he was running around the room clutching his stomach delightedly.

**18 The blue eyes in the black face held her. (Para 40)**

What Pecola desired most was a pair of blue eyes. Now she saw the blue eyes in the black face of the cat and she was attracted by them.

**19 She had seen this little girl all of her life. (Para 48)**

Geraldine had seen black girls like Pecola at many places and many times in the past.

**20 Eyes that questioned nothing and asked everything. (Para 48)**

It is an ambiguous sentence. On the one hand, they were so ignorant that they didn't ask why their lives were so miserable. On the other hand, they were so poverty-stricken that their eyes showed desires for anything that could make their lives easier.

**21 The end of the world lay in their eyes, and the beginning, and all the waste in between. (Para 48)**

In the eyes of these girls one could see that they had no hope for the future and that their life would be nothing but a waste.

**22 The girls grew up knowing nothing of girdles, and the boys announced their manhood by turning the bills of their caps backward. (Para 49)**

Being poor, girls grew into young women without wearing girdles to make their figure look slimmer and more elegant. When the boys grew up, they just began to wear their caps with the bills turned backward to indicate that they had become adults.

**23 "You nasty little black bitch. Get out of my house." (Para 50)**

Geraldine, who was supposed to have good manners, here used a very strong swearword for Pecola and ordered her to get out of her house at once. She hated this helpless black girl so much because this little girl reminded her of her racial origin and racial identity which she had been trying so hard to forget.

**24 ... Jesus looking down at her with sad and unsurprised eyes. . . (Para 52)**

Although Jesus Christ felt sad and was sympathetic to Pecola, he was not surprised at what had happened in the house because he had seen too many tragedies in the world.

**25 Outside, the March wind blew into the rip in her dress. She held her head down against the cold. But she could not hold it low enough to avoid seeing the snowflakes falling and dying on the pavement. (Para 53)**

When Pecola walked away from the house in cold wind, she tried to keep the cold out. The snowflakes were falling and became unseen on the pavement.



## 最蓝的眼睛(节选)

托尼·莫里森

1. 她们来自姆拜、爱肯、新港纽斯、马里他和梅里第。当你读出这些地名时,它们的发音会让你联想到爱。每当你询问她们的故乡在哪里时,她们总会歪着头说“姆拜”,这会使你有一种被吻的感觉;如果她们说“爱肯”,你仿佛会看到一只折了翅的白蝴蝶飞过篱笆墙。而当她们说“那加道什”时,你会想说“是的,我愿意。”(西方婚礼仪式上的许诺)你也许不了解那些城镇的状况,但是你会喜欢她们张开嘴唇轻轻地说出那些名字时所带动的气流。

2. 梅里第。它的声音犹如赞美诗起始的四个音符般开启房间的窗。极少有人可以带着如此俏皮的感情说出自己故乡的名字。也许因为她们不曾有故乡,那些地方只是她们的出生地。但是她们深受故乡的影响,而且这种影响永远挥之不去。她们是瘦弱的棕色肌肤的女孩,可以长时间地盯着梅里第、姆拜、爱肯和巴顿罗格后院的蜀葵。而她们比蜀葵还要细,还要高,还要安静,就像蜀葵的根深深植入土中,秆也相当坚挺,只有顶部的花在风中微微点头。而且她们的眼睛可以根据天空的颜色来判断时间。这些女孩生活在恬静的黑人居住区,在那里,人人都有一份不错的工作,摇椅由铁链悬挂于游廊,青草用镰刀修剪得很整齐,院子里种着鸡冠花和向日葵,台阶和窗台上排列着一盆盆的荷包牡丹、常春藤和“婆(岳)母的舌头”(一种热带多年生植物,其少量汁液滴入饮料便会麻痹人的声带)。这些女孩从水果商的货车上购买西瓜和四季豆。她们在窗上挂了一块硬纸板做的牌子,上面的三边分别写着10磅、25磅、50磅,第四边写着“不要冰块”以提示送冰人她们要冰的数量。这些来自于姆拜和爱肯的女孩与她们的姐妹不同。她们不会烦躁不安,不会紧张,也不会尖叫,她们没有映衬衣领的可爱的黑色脖颈,即便没有衣领也是如此,她们的眼睛也并不迷人。这些红糖色姆拜女孩并不会引起他人注意。她们像黄油蛋糕一样甜美而普通。她们拥有纤细的脚踝与细长的双脚。她们使用中产阶级白人所使用的卫浴产品沐浴、除尘、刷牙、柔肤。因此,她们的身上散发出木材、油墨、香草的香味。她们用发胶将头发梳平,并在两侧分开。到了晚上,她们将头发卷在牛皮纸中,在头上围起印花头巾,在睡觉时还要把双手交叉放在胸前,她们不饮酒、不吸烟、不起誓,而且耻辱于性。她们在唱诗班中唱“第二女高音”,尽管她们的声音清亮浑厚,她们却无缘独唱。她们站在第二排,身穿浆过的白色衬衫以及由于熨烫而发紫的蓝色裙子。

3. 她们就读于政府拨地建造的大学以及师范学院。她们学习如何把服务白人的工作做得更加细致:学习家政是为了给他们烧饭做菜;学习当老师是为了教育黑人孩子顺从;学习音乐是为了让疲惫的主人身心放松,为他那已麻木的灵魂提供消遣。其余的课程是在摆放摇椅和盆栽荷包牡丹的温暖的家完成的,即如何做到举止得当。她们认真培养节俭、耐心、高贵的道德与礼貌的举止等素质。总之,要改掉低俗的气质:激情、本性与各种人类感情的可怕的低俗。

4. 无论这种低俗何时显现,她们都要将其剔除;无论它在哪里出现,她们都要将其化为乌有;无论它在哪里泄露、发展、反复出现,她们都会一直与之战斗直至它不复存在。她们会将这场战斗进行到底。她们要确保自己没有笑得过于大声,说话时嘴没有张得过大,也没有做出过于慷慨的姿态。她们收紧臀部,以免走路时过于摇摆;她们从不将口红涂满整个嘴唇,以免显得嘴唇过厚,她们还非常非常担心自己的发际。

5. 她们似乎从未交过男朋友,但是却纷纷结婚。有些男人关注这些女孩,因为他们知道,如果把这样的女孩娶回家,他的床单会被洗得像煮过一样白,在室外杜松灌木丛上晾干并且用大熨斗熨得很平整。她们会用漂亮的纸花来装饰婆婆的相片,并在前厅放一大本《圣经》。她们的丈夫对于一切都很放心。他们知道他们的工作服会在星期一补好、洗净、熨平,他们星期日所穿的衬衫会在门框上的衣挂上迎风招展,洗得洁白而且已经浆过。他们看着她们的手便知道她们要做什么样的饼干,他们能够闻到咖啡香和烤火腿的味道,上面还有裹着少量黄油的白色熏谷粒。她的臀部使他们确信她们可以让孩子顺利出生。他们是对的。

6. 他们所不知道的是,这个相貌平平、褐色皮肤的女孩将一点一点地筑起她的小巢,把家变成属于她自己的、不可侵犯的小天地。她守护着家里的一草一木,甚至对她的丈夫都有所防范。她会默默地把油灯放回原处,在食物吃光后立刻收拾餐桌,一旦油脂粘在门把手上她会立刻擦干净。她只需斜眼看他一下,他就知道该到房后的走廊去抽烟。孩子们会立刻意识到不能到她的院子里取回他们的球。但是男人们并不知道这些事情。他们也不知道她把自己的身体交给他时还有所保留。

7. 有时她会吧感情倾注在动物身上。也许猫会喜欢她的井井有条、精确细致与一成不变:能够与她一样干净且安静。猫会静静地趴在窗台上用他的目光抚摸她。她可以把猫搂在怀中,让他的后爪蹬住她的胸部,前爪扒住她的肩膀。她会抚摸猫柔滑的皮毛,感受皮毛下顺从的躯体。当她轻轻地抚摸猫时,他会满意地舔着毛、伸着懒腰、张开嘴巴。于是她接受了一种奇异却快乐的感情,这种感情源于他在她手中扭动着身躯,假装高兴地眯着眼睛。当她下厨房时,他会围在她的小腿周围,有时他的绒毛飞到大腿上,让她插在面团里的手为之一颤。

8. 或者,在她坐在那里阅读《自由杂志》中的“提高思想境界”时,猫会跳到她的大腿上。她喜欢抚摸那小山般的绒毛并且让猫的体温慢慢扩散直至传入她大腿的私密之处。有时杂志滑落,她的双腿微微张开,也许他们一起换姿势,一起入睡,直至四点钟,闯入者下班回家并且急于想知道晚饭吃些什么。

9. 猫也一直知道他是她的最爱,甚至在她的孩子出生之后,因为她确实顺利地生下了孩子。但只是一个孩子。一个儿子,名叫朱尼尔。

10. 这样一个来自于姆拜、梅里第或爱肯的女孩的腋窝和大腿根处都不出汗,她的身上散发着木材和香草的味道,她在家政系做蛋奶酥,随丈夫路易斯迁居到俄亥俄州的洛雷。她就是杰拉尔丁。在那里她安了家,熨平衬衫,将荷包牡丹栽入盆中,与猫嬉戏,生养路易斯·朱尼尔。

11. 只要杰拉尔丁能够满足他身体上的需要,使他舒适、满足,她就不允许婴儿朱尼尔哭闹。她给他梳头、洗澡、搽油、穿鞋。杰拉尔丁不与他说话,不哄他,也不会沉溺于亲昵地亲吻他,但是她确保其他需要都已得到满足。不久孩子便发现了母亲对待自己与对待猫的不同行为。随着年龄的增长,他学会如何将对母亲的仇恨转移到猫的身上,并且快乐于看着猫遭受折磨。然而猫却活了下来,因为杰拉尔丁极少出门,而且可以在朱尼尔折磨他时有效地安抚这只小动物。

12. 杰拉尔丁、路易斯、朱尼尔以及猫住在华盛顿·厄温学校操场的隔壁。朱尼把运动场看做是自己的,小学生们都羡慕他有这么多自由,可以晚些起床,可以回家吃午饭,放学后还能占有运动场。他讨厌看到秋千、滑梯、猴子爬杆和跷跷板都是空荡荡的,而且尽力使孩子们多留一会儿。他的母亲要他与白人孩子一块玩,不喜欢他与黑鬼一块玩。他的母亲曾经向他说明有色人种和黑鬼的区别,黑鬼很容易被认出来。有色人种干净而且安静;黑鬼又脏又吵。他属于前者,他穿着白衬衫、蓝裤子;他的头发剪得很短,紧紧贴着头皮,这样就显不出像羊毛般卷曲的样子,发缝是理发师特意修出来的。冬季,母亲在他脸上涂些乳液防止皮肤变成灰色。即使他皮肤白皙,也可能变成灰色。有色人与黑人的界线有时并不分明,一些微妙的、能暴露秘密的迹象可能造成这一界线模糊不清,所以要时时当心才是。

13. 朱尼尔总是喜欢与黑人孩子一起玩。他最喜欢玩“山大王”的游戏,喜欢被他们推下山坡,让他们滚在自己身上。他喜欢让他们结实的身體压在他身上,闻他们黑人身上的野味……并且顽皮地随便



说“操你妈”。他喜欢和他们坐在马路边上,比谁的折叠刀最锋利,谁的唾沫吐得最远,弧线最好。在厕所他想与他们分享尿得又远又长的荣誉。男孩贝和P·L·曾是他的偶像,渐渐地他同意了母亲的观点,认为男孩贝和P·L·都不太适合他。他只是和拉尔夫·尼森斯基玩,拉尔夫长他两岁,带着眼镜,整日游手好闲。朱尼尔越来越喜欢欺负女孩子。女孩子们容易尖叫、逃跑。当他看到女孩子们摔倒在地并露出灯笼裤时,他就有说不出的开心。当她们站起来时,满脸通红、表情扭曲,他倒感觉不错。黑人女孩不是他侵袭的对象。她们背着包到处走,一旦他朝她们扔石头,她们会追逐并抓住肇事者,直至把他打昏。他向母亲说了谎,说这事是男孩贝干的。他的母亲非常不安,而父亲仍然在阅读《洛雷周刊》。

14. 当他心血来潮时,他会邀请过路的孩子一起荡秋千、玩跷跷板。如果那个孩子不愿意,或者匆匆离开,朱尼尔就会朝他身上扔沙砾。他变成了一个神射手。

15. 当他在家里感到无聊或者受了责骂时,运动场就成了他的全部欢乐所在。有一天,正当他无所事事的时候,他看见一个黑人女孩正抄小道儿穿过操场。她走路时总是低着头。他曾见过她多次,在课间休息时总是一个人站着。没有人跟她玩。他想,也许是因为她长得丑。

16. 现在朱尼尔对她喊道,“嗨!你在我的院子里干什么?”

17. 女孩站住了。

18. “除非我发话,否则没有人能进这个院子。”

19. “这不是你的院子,是学校的院子。”

20. “但是我掌管整个院子。”

21. 女孩准备走开。

22. “等一下。”朱尼尔朝她走去。“如果你愿意可以在这里玩。你叫什么名字?”

23. “皮克拉。我不想玩。”

24. “来吧。我不会打扰你。”

25. “我得回家了。”

26. “嗨,你想看点什么吗?我有些东西给你看。”

27. “不。是什么?”

28. “到我家里来吧。我就住在这里。来吧。我给你看看。”

29. “要给我看什么?”

30. “一些小猫。我有一些小猫。如果你喜欢可以挑一只。”

31. “真的是小猫?”

32. “是的。来吧。”

33. 他轻轻拉她的裙子。皮克拉开始走向他的家。当他发现她并不反对时,朱尼尔兴奋地向前跑,只是偶尔停下来转回身叫皮克拉快走。他为她打开门,用微笑来鼓励她。皮克拉爬上阳台楼梯,站在那里止步不前,不敢跟随他。房子的光线有些昏暗。朱尼尔说,“这里没有人。妈妈出去了,爸爸还在上班。不想看看小猫吗?”

34. 朱尼尔打开灯,皮克拉踏进门。

35. 太漂亮了,她想。多漂亮的房子。餐厅的桌上放着一本红色烫金的圣经。到处摆放着镶边的小垫——椅子的扶手上、椅背上、大餐桌的中央和小餐桌上。窗台上摆着盆栽植物。墙上挂着耶稣基督的彩色画像,框上镶着最漂亮的纸花。她想慢慢地欣赏每一件东西,但是朱尼尔一直在说,“嗨,快来。快来。”他把她拉进另一个房间,甚至比第一个房间更漂亮。房间里装饰着更多的小垫,一盏带有绿色和金色灯座、白色灯罩的大灯。地上还铺着地毯,地毯上印着暗红色的大花。她深深地沉浸在对花的欣赏之中,突然,朱尼尔喊到:“给你!”皮克拉转过头。他尖叫道,“给你猫!”并且把一只大黑猫朝她的脸上扔去。她又惊又怕,倒吸了口气,这时她感到嘴巴里有猫毛。那猫抓她的脸和胸,拼命想站稳,然后敏捷地

跳到地面上。

36. 朱尼尔大笑着,边绕着圈跑边捂着笑痛的肚子。皮克拉摸着脸上的抓伤,感到眼泪从脸庞滑落。当她向门口走去时,朱尼尔突然跳到她面前。

37. “你不能走。你是我的犯人。”他说。他的眼神既快活又冷酷。

38. “你让我走。”

39. “不!”他把皮克拉推倒在地,跑出房门,并用力扣住门。皮克拉用力拍门,这让他笑得更厉害了。他尖声笑着,几乎喘不过气来。

40. 眼泪很快涌了出来,皮克拉用手捂住脸。当感到柔软的毛茸茸的东西在脚踝周围时,她跳了起来,发现原来是那只猫。他围在她的两腿左右。她立刻忘却了恐惧,俯身用泪水打湿的手抚摸那只猫。那猫蹭她的膝盖。他周身乌黑,深沉的细腻的黑色,他那双直视鼻子的双眼是蓝绿色的。灯光使那双眼发出冰蓝色。皮克拉抚摸着猫的头,他发出哀鸣声,快乐地咂着舌。黑猫脸上的蓝眼睛吸引了她的注意力。

41. 由于没有听到她的呜咽,朱尼尔感到奇怪,于是他打开门,看见她正蹲在地上抚摸猫背。他看见那只猫伸着头,眯着眼。每当他的母亲抚摸那只猫时,他都会显现这种表情。

42. “你这只死猫!”他的声音突然变了。他用一个既别扭又有把握的动作抓住猫的一条后腿,开始在头顶上一圈一圈地抡。

43. “住手!”皮克拉尖叫道。那只猫没被抓住的爪子变得僵硬,时刻准备抓住任何可以使它恢复平衡的物体,它的嘴巴大张着,眼睛闪着一道道恐怖的蓝光。

44. 皮克拉尖叫着奔向朱尼尔的手。她听见连衣襟在腋窝处撕裂了。朱尼尔极力将她推开,但是她抓住了抢猫的手臂,他们俩都摔倒了,朱尼尔倒下去时撒开了抓猫的手,那猫在转了一半时突然被放开了,结果,它结结实实地摔到了窗户上。它不稳地滑下来,摔在了沙发后面的散热器上。它不动了,只是抽动了几下。只留下烧焦的毛皮的味道。

45. 杰拉尔丁打开门。

46. “这是谁?”她的声音温和,好像在问一个相当合理的问题,“这个女孩子是谁?”

47. “她杀了我们的猫,”朱尼尔说。“看。”他指着散热器,那只猫躺在那里,蓝色的眼睛紧闭着,只留下一张茫然、发黑、无助的脸。

48. 杰拉尔丁走到散热器前拾起猫。他无力地瘫在她的怀里,但是她仍然用脸抚摸着猫的绒毛。她打量着皮克拉,看见她穿着又脏又破的裙子,头上扎着小辫子,有几根已经散开了,头发乱糟糟的,鞋上沾满了泥土,廉价的鞋底中露出一团胶块,袜子也是脏兮兮的,其中一只还在走路时滑到了脚后跟。她看见安全别起裙子的折边。她的目光绕过隆起的猫背看她。她曾见过很多像皮克拉这样的女孩,她们泡在姆拜的酒馆里,趴在城郊长盒式房屋的阳台上,抱着纸袋坐在汽车站,跟母亲大声说话,而母亲总是让她们“住嘴!”她们头发蓬乱,衣冠不整,鞋子松垮,满身是灰。她们曾以极其疑惑不解的眼神盯着她,眼神无知却贪婪。她们还恬不知耻地盯着她看。她们的眼中没有未来,只有颓废的生活。

49. 这样的女孩比比皆是。她们三三两两地坐在街角,抢占可爱的、整洁的有色孩子的座位,以便拥挤地坐在教堂的长椅上;她们在操场上出丑,在廉价店打破东西,在街上突然蹿到你的前面,冬天在人行道的斜坡上故意弄出冰来。这些女孩长大成人了却不知胸带为何物,而男孩子把鸭舌帽的帽檐转到后脑勺就算宣布自己是大人了。她们居住的地方寸草不生,花儿凋谢,树木枯萎。满眼皆是废弃的罐头盒和轮胎。她们喜欢吃凉拌黑芽豆和橙味爆米花。她们像苍蝇一样盘旋,像苍蝇一样栖息。眼前这一只就落在了她的家里。她的目光跃过隆起的猫背看着。

50. “滚出去”,她说,她的声音很微弱。“你这个令人讨厌的小黑婊子。从我的家里滚出去。”

51. 那猫颤动了一下,抽动着尾巴。

52. 皮克拉一边退出那房子,一边盯着这座漂亮的金色与绿色的房子中的美丽奶棕肤色的妇人透过猫毛与她说话。漂亮女人在说话时发出的气流吹动了猫毛,说出每个字时的呼吸都会分开猫毛。皮克拉转身走向前门,看见耶稣正在天堂用悲伤而又触变不惊的眼神望着她,他棕色的长发在中间分开,快乐的纸花围绕着他的脸庞。

53. 外面三月的风吹进了她撕破的衣裙。她垂着头,顶着冷风。不过,头垂得再低,她也看得到雪花纷纷飘落到人行道上并立刻消融。



## 五、练习答案及详解

### I. Vocabulary

A. Look up the following words and phrases. Select the meaning that best suits the sentence in which each appears.

1. the essence of anything; power and influence
2. Native to woodlands, bleeding heart is a common garden perennial plant with the unique flowers which resemble tiny pink or white hearts with drops of blood at the bottom.
3. It refers to the colleges which were founded as of the 1860s by such government land grants on condition that they offer instruction in agriculture and the mechanical arts. They are now supported by the individual States and they cost less than the more prestigious private colleges.
4. a science and art of homemaking, including nutrition, clothing, budgeting and child care
5. the state of being satiated
6. smooth slope, track or chute down on which children can play at sliding
7. an arrangement of horizontal and vertical bars erected as in a playground for children to climb on, swing from, etc.
8. long plank, balanced on a center support, and with a person sitting at each end, which can rise and fall alternately
9. revealing what is meant to be kept a secret
10. fame or honor
11. to take interest in sb./sth.
12. a long, narrow house with rooms arranged one behind the other
13. five-and-ten-cent store where supposedly everything costs only a few cents
14. the peak or visor of a cap

### IV. Questions on Appreciation

1. In Para 1, the author uses the names of some places, such as Mobile, Aiken, etc., to refer to a character type of the brown girls. They come from these places, so they bear the characters of people there. In Para 2, "And like hollyhocks... and still." gives us a vivid picture of what the brown girls look like. By describing the house arrangement in detail, we get an idea of the neighborhoods in which the brown girls live. Besides this, the author also mentions some brand names of the toilet articles they use in order to show that the brown girls live well-off lives. In Para 3 and 4, the author depicts their school education which made them more alienated from their black cultural heritage and their attempt to get rid of funkiness. In Para 5, the author describes the house of a man who has married a

brown girl. From these details, we learn that brown girls are good at house economics. In short, the writer reveals their characters by describing vivid and concrete details.

2. In Para 1, the author refers to a character type resulting from the brown girls' home towns. In Para 2, the author gives a general picture of who these brown girls are, what they are like, and how they live. In Para 3, the author shows the brown girls' school education. In Para 4, the author shows that the brown girls have not only assimilated the way of life but also the ideology of the white middle-class. In Para 5, the author shows the brown girls' skills in keeping a household.
3. The brown girls live in a quiet black neighborhood where flowers and plants are grown and well looked after; the porch is suitable for rest. In the room, they can afford ice for keeping food cool. Moreover, the toilet articles they use are often used by well-off middle classes of white people. More important, they can afford to go to land-grant colleges and attend the choir, which provides them with more choices to get along with white people.
4. Because the author wants to narrow down to a particular girl in Para 10. After the last sentence of Para 5 "And they are right", the author begins to narrow down to one particular girl.
5. In her stifled womanhood, she denies herself of normal sensual experience and therefore can only find occasional sensual delight in a cat.
6. No. It is ~~hatred~~ that makes Junior kill that cat. The source of his hatred toward the cat basically comes from his hatred toward his mother, Geraldine, because Geraldine shows much more affection to the cat than to him. Therefore, the killing fully reveals Geraldine's abnormal sensual and emotional experience.
7. Yes. "Affection" is applied mainly to such feelings as are also inclinations or likings and the word therefore sometimes suggests desire or striving. So "affection" is suitable for Geraldine's feeling for her cat. "Love" has various meanings. It can refer to warm liking or affection, sexual affection: it can also refer to strong liking for something and God's benevolence towards mankind. "Attachment" means affection.
8. There's really a radical discrimination against black people, for example. "They straighten their hair with Dixie Lotion" to get rid of the feature of black people. In choir, they only stand in the second row, no matter how beautifully they sing, they are not allowed to sing solo. They try to "get rid of the funkiness" which alienates them from white people. What they learn at school is all devoted to their white masters. And they call themselves colored people, while call black people niggers. They try to get close to white people and keep away from niggers. By showing these details, the author makes the racial discrimination behind them conspicuous.

**V. Explain the following in your own words, bringing out any implied meanings.**

1. This is perhaps because they only have places of birth, but no places where they feel at home and which they identify themselves with. But these girls are strongly influenced by their home towns, and the influence stays with them forever even after they leave their home towns.
2. The brown girls try hard to repress their emotions and passions. However, these natural human emotions cannot be wiped out totally. Sometimes they will emerge and burst out. And they will develop, become stronger and stay with them. So whenever and wherever this funk bursts out, the brown girls will do their best to stifle it.
3. If his needs were physical, she could meet them. She could make him comfortable and give him enough

or even more than enough to satisfy his physical needs.

4. Geraldine had seen black girls like Pecola at many places and many times in the past.

5. On the one hand, they (girls like Pecola) were ignorant and uncomprehending. They did not ask question why their lives were so miserable. On the other hand, as they were poverty-stricken and practically had nothing, their eyes revealed their desire for anything that could make their lives easier.

6. In the eyes of these girls one can see that they were in despair, without any hope for the future, and that their life was nothing but a waste.

7. As the girls were growing into young women, they had never worn girdles to make their figure look slimmer, and thus more elegant; and when the boys grew up, they just began to wear their caps with the bills turned backward to indicate that they had become adults.

#### VI. Translate the following into Chinese.

##### A. Phrases

1. 他们可以根据天空的颜色判断是什么时间了
2. 每个人都有一份好工作
3. 用铁链悬挂的游廊摇椅
4. 像小山一样的软毛
5. 她散发出木头和香草的味道
6. 避免显出像羊毛般卷曲的样子
7. 当他心血来潮时
8. 他用微笑鼓励她

##### B. Sentences

1. 她们在窗上挂了一块硬纸板做的牌子, 上面的三边分别写着 10 磅、25 磅、50 磅, 第四边写着“不要冰块”。
2. 她们就读于政府拨地建造的大学以及师范学院。她们学习如何把服务白人的工作做得更加细致: 学习家政是为了给他们烧饭做菜; 学习当老师是为了教育黑人孩子顺从; 学习音乐是为了让疲惫的主人身心放松, 为他那已麻木的灵魂提供消遣。
3. 她只需斜眼看他一下, 他就知道该到房后的走廊上去抽烟。
4. 当她轻轻地抚摸他时, 他会满意地舔着毛, 伸着懒腰, 张开嘴巴。
5. 朱尼尔把运动场看成是自己的, 小学生们都羡慕他有这么多自由, 可以睡懒觉, 可以回家吃午饭, 放学后还能控制运动场。
6. 他最喜欢玩“山大王”的游戏, 喜欢被他们推下土山坡, 让他们滚在他身上。
7. 她深深地沉浸在对花的欣赏之中, 突然, 朱尼尔喊道, “给你!”
8. 皮克拉拼命拍门, 这让他笑得更厉害了。他尖声笑着, 几乎喘不过气来。
9. 不过, 头垂得再低, 她也看得到雪花纷纷飘落到人行道上并立刻消融。

# Lesson Ten

## Notes on the English Character



### 一、课文导读

#### (一) 内容梗概

阐述一个民族的性格特点并非易事,每个人对于某个民族的性格特点都会各持己见。面对这个庞杂的论题,作者在文章开篇就巧妙地将讨论范围限定在英国男性中产阶级之内。作者出身于中产阶级家庭,因此深谙中产阶级特性的他将这一阶级作为论述中心,从而使论点与论据都更具有说服力。在多部小说中,作者都以略带讽刺的口吻一针见血地指出处在中上层阶级与上层阶级的英国人缺乏追求激情与直觉的本能,然而,他们也相信,想象力、神秘主义与对本性的敏感性可以使英国人的性格有所改观。

本篇文章具有明显的现实主义意义,作为一名英语学习者,我们必须认识到学习某种语言与了解与之相关的民族和文化是密不可分的。而且,随着全球化进程的加快,增进各国间的交流与了解也是势在必行的。

#### (二) 背景知识

##### 1. E. M. Forster

E. M. Forster was a famous English novelist and prose writer, who wrote many popular novels dealing with conflicts between people and cultures. He was born into a typical middle class family, thus his works are mainly about the very aspect with which he was familiar. Some of his best-known works—including *Where Angels Fear to Tread* (1905), *A Room with a View* (1908), and *Howards End* (1910)—were recently adapted into films.



E. M. Forster

##### 2. Jane Austen

English author Jane Austen (1775—1817) crafted satirical romances set within the confines of upper-middle-class English society. Her books were known for their sharp attention to the details of everyday life, and her skillful treatments of character and situation marked Austen as an astute observer of human nature. *Pride and Prejudice* (1813), one of her best-known works, follows Mrs. Bennet's attempts to find a suitable husband for each of her five daughters.



Jane Austen



## 二、词汇与短语

### (一) 词汇

① **abysmal** /ə'bizmə/ *adj.*

extremely bad; extreme 极坏的; 极端的 【反义】 neutral

—abysmal manners 恶劣的态度

② **adjure** /ə'dʒʊə/ *v.*

to command; to appeal earnestly 恳切或郑重地命令或要求 【同义】 order

—I adjure you to tell the truth. 我要求你说实话。

【派生】 adjuration *n.* 恳请; 祈求

③ **annuity** /ə'nju(:)ɪti/ *n.*

a payment of a fixed sum of money at regular intervals of time, esp. yearly 年金; 养老金

【同义】 pension

—a modest annuity 微薄的养老金

【派生】 annuitant *n.* 领养老金者

④ **barrister** /'bærɪstə/ *n.*

(in English law) lawyer who has the right to speak and argue as an advocate in higher lawcourts (英国法律中)(有权在高等法院出庭辩论的) 律师; 诉讼律师 【同义】 advocate; attorney

⑤ **caper** /'keɪpə/ *v.*

to jump or run about playfully 蹦蹦跳跳; 跑来跑去 【同义】 hop

—to caper in the field 在田野中蹦蹦跳跳

⑥ **concession** /kən'seʃən/ *n.*

conceding; thing granted or yielded, esp. after discussion 让出; 妥协; 让步 【同义】 surrender

—to make concessions 做出让步

⑦ **copiously** /'kəʊpiəsli/ *adv.*

existing or being produced in large quantities 丰富地; 多产地 【同义】 plentifully; abundantly

—to make notes copiously 做详实的笔记

⑧ **fag** /fæg/ *v.*

to do work for senior students at a British public school 公学中低年级学生为高年级学生服务; 做非常劳累的工作

⑨ **gesticulate** /dʒe'stɪkjuleɪt/ *v.*

to make movements with your arms and hands 做手势示意或强调 【同义】 sign; motion

—He was gesticulating at me, but I could not understand. 我不明白他的手势。

【派生】 gesticulation *n.* 姿势; 手势

⑩ **guffaw** /gə'fɔ:/ *v.*

to laugh loudly 哄笑

—He disguised himself as a clown and made the students guffaw. 他的小丑打扮惹得同学们哄堂大笑。

⑪ *impecunious* /ˌɪmpɪˈkjuːniəs/ *adj.*

having no money; poor; penniless 一贫如洗的

—an impecunious man 穷光蛋

【派生】*impecuniosity* *n.* 贫穷

⑫ *imperturbable* /ˌɪmpə(:)ˈtɜːbəl/ *adj.*

not excitable; calm 不易受搅扰的; 冷静的 【反义】*touchy*

—*Imperturbable* people never easily get upset. 冷静的人从不会轻易变得不安。

⑬ *incidental* /ˌɪnsɪˈdentl/ *adj.*

small and relatively unimportant; accompanying 次要的; 附属的; 伴随的

【同义】*minor*; *supplementary* 【反义】*major*; *significant*

—*incidental* expenses 杂费

⑭ *indifferent* /ɪnˈdɪfrənt/

having no interest in sb. /sth. 冷漠的; 满不在乎的

⑮ *infamy* /ˈɪnfəmi/ *n.*

the state of being evil or well-known for evil things 丑事; 邪恶; 恶名 【同义】*wickedness*; *disgrace*

【派生】*infamous* *adj.* 无耻的; 声名狼藉的 *infamize* *v.* 使声名狼藉

⑯ *insidious* /ɪnˈsɪdiəs/ *adj.*

operating in a slow or not easily operant manner; more dangerous than seems evident 隐伏的; 暗中为

害的 【同义】*latent* 【反义】*conspicuous*

—*insidious* diseases 潜伏的疾病

⑰ *kingly* /ˈkɪŋli/ *adj.*

good enough for a king, or typical of a king 国王的; 威严的 【同义】*majestic*

—a kingly prince 具有国王风范的王子

⑱ *liability* /ˌlaɪəˈbɪlɪti/ *n.*

1) being responsible by law 法律责任 【同义】*obligation*; *responsibility*

—*liability* of debts 债务责任

2) being likely to do sth. 倾向; 可能性 【同义】*possibility*; *likelihood*; *tendency*

—the *liability* of being fined 被罚款的可能性

⑲ *mishap* /mɪsˈhæp/ *n.*

a small accident or mistake that does not have very serious result 不幸; 不幸事故

【同义】*misfortune*; *adversity* 【反义】*luck*; *fortune*

—a slight mishap 小事儿

⑳ *muddle* /ˈmʌdl/ *v.*

to put sth. into disorder 弄乱; 使某人糊涂 【同义】*confuse*

—to muddle up the dates 弄乱日期

㉑ *munificence* /mjuːˈnɪfɪsns/ *n.*

(*fml*) great generosity 慷慨 【反义】*meanness*

—gift of *munificence* 慷慨馈赠

㉒ *perfidy* /ˈpɜːfɪdi/ *n.*

acting in a treacherous or disloyal way 背叛; 背信弃义

【派生】*perfidious* *adj.* 不忠实的; 背信弃义的



⑳ plague /'pleɪg/ *n.*

any deadly infection that kills many people 瘟疫

—The cholera has reached plague proportions. 霍乱已酿成瘟疫之灾。

㉑ ravine /rə'veɪn/ *n.*

deep narrow steep-sided valley between mountains 沟壑; 深谷

㉒ reticence /'retɪsəns/ *n.*

the quality or state of being restrained and reserved; having an understated quality 保留感情或思想

—to display certain reticence 显示出保留态度

㉓ scarlet /'skɑːlɪt/ *adj.*

1) of sin, sinful 罪恶的 【同义】 evil; wicked 【反义】 kind

—scarlet woman 荡妇

2) bright red 猩红的; 鲜红的

—She blushed scarlet. 她羞得脸通红。

㉔ wrench /rentʃ/

1) *n.* a sudden feeling of anguish, grief, etc. as at parting with sb. 痛苦的离别或分开

—Leaving home was a terrible wrench for him. 他觉得离开家十分痛苦。

2) *v.* to twist or pull sb. /sth. violently away from sth. 猛拉或猛扭 【同义】 drag

—to wrench his arm away 挣开他的手臂

(二) 短语

① in power

in control over 掌权

—After he was in power, he moved to a new house. 他掌权以后, 搬到了新家。

② to bottle up

to hide sth. from others 掩盖; 掩饰

—He failed to bottle up his infamies. 他无法掩盖他的丑事。

③ to be plunged in

to fall into sth. 陷入

—We were plunged into despair. 我们陷入绝望。

④ to make a fuss about

to pay particular and often excessive attention to sb. /sth. 大惊小怪

—Don't make too much fuss about trivial things. 不要因小事而大惊小怪。

⑤ to buck up

to cheer up 振作起来; 振奋精神

—Buck up, you're hopeful. 振作起来, 你还是有希望的。

⑥ to give away

to give sth. to sb. free of charge 免费赠送

—He gave most of his money to charity. 他把大部分钱都捐给了慈善组织。

⑦ to be supposed to be

to be considered to be 被认为是

—He was supposed to be an expert in child psychology. 他是儿童心理学方面的专家。

⑧ to be guiltless of

to be innocent of 无辜的;清白的

—The suspect was set free, because he was guiltless of murder. 因没有犯谋杀罪,嫌疑犯被释放。

⑨ in the domain of

in the field of 在...领域内

—He was a layman in the domain of political science. 在政治学领域他是个门外汉。

⑩ to deprive sb. of

to take sth. away from sb. 剥夺

—He was deprived of civil rights. 他被剥夺了公民权。

⑪ to be out of one's mind

to be mad 发疯

You must be out of your mind if you think I'm going to lend you £50! 你认为我会借给你 50 英镑,你准是疯了!

⑫ to be accused of

to be said guilty 被指控

—He was accused of theft. 他被指控盗窃。



三、课文注释

① I had better let the cat out of the bag at once and record my opinion that the character of the English is essentially middle class. (Para 1)

He means that he is coming to the point at once, that is, the character of the English is essentially the character of the middle class. In this way the speaker is able to catch the attention of the audience immediately.

to let the cat out of the bag: to let a secret be revealed (It is an idiom.)

② There is a sound historical reason for this, for, since the end of the eighteenth century, the middle classes have been the dominant force in our community. (Para 1)

The speaker points out that his opinion is supported by a good historical reason, that is, the middle classes have been the dominant force in Britain since the end of the 18th century.

③ They gained wealth by the Industrial Revolution, political power by the Reform Bill of 1832; they are connected with the rise and organization of the British Empire; they are responsible for the literature of the nineteenth century. (Para 1)

The speaker lists three aspects that show how the middle classes have become dominant in the British community.

**the Industrial Revolution:** A term applied to the social and economic changes that mark the transition from a stable agricultural and commercial society to a modern industrial society relying on complex machinery rather than tools.

**the British Empire:** It refers to overseas colonies ruled by Great Britain.

④ But it is on the middle classes that the eye of the critic rests—just as it rests on the poor in Russia and on the aristocracy in Japan. (Para 1)

The middle classes draw most attention of the critic, just as Russians pay attention to the poor, while

Japanese pay attention to the noble.

- ⑤ Saint George may caper on banners and in the speeches of politicians, but it is John Bull who delivers the goods. (Para 1)

As Saint George is a hero, his image often appears on banners, and his name is often mentioned in the speeches of politicians. But John Bull is the tradesman and delivers the goods we need in our daily life while making money at the same time.

- ⑥ How perfectly it expresses their character—far better, for instance, than does the university, into which social and spiritual complexities have already entered. (Para 2)

Secondary school children are free from social or spiritual complexities, which emerge only in the university. But the public school system perfectly expresses the character of the English middle classes which by implication lack social and spiritual complexities.

- ⑦ With its boarding-houses, its compulsory games, its system of prefects and fagging, its insistence on good form and on *esprit de corps*, it produces a type whose weight is out of all proportion to its numbers. (Para 2)

The English public schools have four unique features. First, all boys live in boarding houses. Second, sports and games are organized and compulsory as part of the school curricula. Third, older students have special duties to help control younger students while the latter must run errands for the former. Lastly, great emphasis is placed on good form and team spirit. These features enable the public school students to have disproportionately great influence.

boarding-house: a house where room and meals can be provided for pay 寄宿之所

compulsory games: organized games as part of the school curriculum 必修游戏

compulsory: obligatory 强制的, 义务的

- ⑧ If through some mishap he does not become a manual worker or an artist. (Para 3)

Only by a mistake could a public school product become a manual laborer, who works with his hands, or an artist, Forster's own destiny.

- ⑨ They remember with regret that golden time when life, though hard, was not yet complex; when they all worked together and played together and thought together, so far as they thought at all; when they were taught that school is the world in miniature and believed that no one can love his country who does not love his school. (Para 3)

They often felt sorry for losing the golden days. At that time, life was hard but simple; students get on well with each other. In their heart, school is worth their most love.

- ⑩ And they prolong that time as best they can by joining their Old Boys' society; indeed, some of them remain Old Boys and nothing else for the rest of their lives. (Para 3)

They regret that golden time is over when they leave school and have to go forth into the world. So they try to make that memorable time last longer. The way of doing so is to join the Old Boys' society. Some of them remain as naïve as boys for the rest of their lives. They try to hold on to youth and never grow up, never become mature.

- ⑪ It is nothing to them that the remark is inapplicable historically and was never made by the Duke of Wellington, and that the Duke of Wellington was an Irishman. (Para 3)

It does not matter to them that the remark is not historically accurate and was not made by Duke of Wellington, and that the Duke of Wellington was not even an Englishman; but an Irishman.

- ⑫ And they go forth into a world that is not entirely composed of public-school men or even of Anglo-Saxons, but of men who are as various as the sands of the sea. . . (Para 3)

They enter into a society of diverse personalities.

- ⑬ But my friend spoke as an Oriental, and the Oriental has behind him a tradition, not of middle-class prudence but of kingly munificence and splendor. (Para 7)

But my friend expressed his view as a member of the Oriental countries. They are nourished by a tradition of great generosity and richness, which is different from the English tradition of middle-class prudence.

- ⑭ True love in this differs from gold and clay,  
That to divide is not to take away. . . (Para 7)

In this aspect, true love is different from material things such as clay or even gold which can be divided and taken away. Yet if we share true love, it will never diminish.

These two lines are from an excerpt from Shelly's poem "Epipsychidion" (1821).

True love in this differs from gold and clay,  
That to divide is not to take away,  
Love is like understanding, that grows bright,  
Gazing on many truths; tis like thy light,  
Imagine! Which from earth and sky,  
And from the depths of human fantasy,  
As from a thousand prisms and mirrors, fills  
The Universe with glorious beams, and kills  
Error, the worm, with many a sun-like arrow  
Of its reverberated lightning.

- ⑮ I will now descend from that dizzy and somewhat unfamiliar height, and return to my business of notetaking. (Para 8)

I will now come down from the high position of representative which makes me dizzy and is unfamiliar to me, and return to my role as your commentator on the characteristics of the Englishman. The tone is half ironic and half humorous.

- ⑯ We have here a clear physical difference between the two races—a difference that goes deep into character. (Para 8)

People can see clearly there is a physical difference between the Englishmen and Frenchmen, and that difference has a deep impact on character, or is reflected in character.

- ⑰ The Frenchmen responded at once; the Englishmen responded in time. (Para 8)

The Frenchmen responded immediately, while the Englishmen responded after a period of time.  
in time; early or soon enough to do sth.; after a certain period of time 及时; 过一段时间

- ⑱ Their instinct forbade them to throw themselves about in the coach, because it was more likely to tip over if they did. (Para 8)

They were very practical and by instinct they knew if they threw themselves about in the coach, they would be more likely to cause the coach to lose balance and turn over, thus adding to the danger.

- ⑲ It acts promptly and feels slowly. Such a combination is fruitful, and anyone who possesses it has gone a long way toward being brave. (Para 8)

The Englishman's nervous system acts promptly and feels slowly. The combination of the two qualities is useful, and anyone who has this combination is most likely to be brave.

**fruitful**; effective 硕果累累的; 成果显著的

**to go a long way**; be helpful to 有助于...

- ②⑩ Since literature always rests upon national character, there must be in the English nature hidden springs of fire to produce the fire we see. (Para 9)

As literature is based on national character, there must be in the English nature hidden resources of passion that have produced the great romantic literature we see.

- ②⑪ ... and that he might do well to take the criticism to heart and profit by it. (Para 11)

It's helpful for him to think about other's criticism.

**might do well**; had better 最好

**to take sth. to heart**; to take sth. seriously 认真对待

- ②⑫ But she has a merciless eye for questions of conduct, and the classical example of two English people muddling themselves before they embark upon a wrong course of action is to be found in the opening chapters of *Sense and Sensibility*. (Para 13)

Observing action, she was cold-minded and sharp-minded. First chapters of her novel *Sense and Sensibility* told us how the two Englishmen became muddled before taking a wrong course.

**to have an eye for**; to have an appreciation for 对...的鉴赏力

**to embark upon**; to begin doing sth. 开始着手某事

- ②⑬ From villainies such as these the average Englishman is free. (Para 16)

Common Englishmen don't have such villainies.

**free from**; without the problem or trouble of 免除; 没有

- ②⑭ The cats are all out of their bags, and diplomacy cannot recall them. (Para 19)

I have already made all my opinions known to you, and being diplomatic cannot unsay what has been said.

- ②⑮ The nations must understand one another, and quickly; and without the interposition of their governments, for the shrinkage of the globe is throwing them into one another's arms. (Para 19)

The nations must come closer to each other freely, because the world is becoming smaller.

**shrinkage**; contracting 萎缩; 缩水; 缩小, 这里并不是指世界范围的缩小, 而是指人们的联系更加紧密了。



#### 四、课文译文

### 英国人的性格特点

E·M·福斯特

1. 首先,我最好和盘托出并且点明我的观点,从根本上来说,英国人的性格特点是中产阶级的性格特点。此观点拥有详实的历史渊源,因为自18世纪末起中产阶级就成了英国社会的主导阶级。中产阶级凭借工业革命发家,凭借1832年的《改革法案》掌权,他们与大英帝国的崛起和构成休戚相关,他们也

是19世纪文学的缔造者。稳重、谨慎、正直、高效、缺乏想象力、虚伪是每个国家中产阶级的特点,然而在英国,上述特点也是全体英国人的特点,因为只有英国的中产阶级掌权长达150年。拿破仑无礼地称我们为“店老板民族”。而我们更喜欢称自己为“伟大的商业民族”,后者听起来更有尊严,但是二者在本质上是相同的。当然,英国社会还包括其他阶级:贵族阶级与贫苦阶级。然而,批评家的眼睛只盯着中产阶级,正如他们只盯着俄国的贫苦阶级与日本的贵族阶级一样。俄国的典型形象是农民和工人,日本的典型形象是武士,英国的典型形象是布尔先生,他头戴高顶大礼帽,身穿合体的衣服,挺着大肚皮,数着银行的大笔存款。圣·乔治也许会蹦蹦跳跳地举起标语,发表政治演说,而约翰·布尔则会去送货。如果吉本的观点是正确的,甚至圣·乔治也曾戴上高顶大礼帽;他是一位军队物资承包商,并且供应质量低劣的熏肉。最终的结果都是一样的。

2. 其次,正如中产阶级是英国的核心一样,公学制度是中产阶级的核心。这种超乎寻常的体制具有地域性,它还没有扩展到英伦三岛。爱尔兰和苏格兰都不存在这种体制(这两个国家不在我的调查之列),尽管这样有利于其他优秀体制的出现,比如仅限于美国某些学校所采用的阿里加体制,因为它产生于安格鲁—萨克逊中产阶级,而且只能在上述阶级中实行。英国公学制度比充满社会与精神复杂性的大学更充分地体现了中产阶级的特性。学生寄宿、必修运动项目、高年级同学在差使低年级同学为自己办事时必须对其行为负责,以及高度重视身材与团队精神是英国公学制度的四大特点,正是这些特点使公学的影响力远远超过其数量。

3. 毕业后,男生们要么立刻开始工作、参军、从商或者移民,要么进入大学深造,经过三至四年的学习后从事律师、医生、公务员、教师或记者等职业。(如果他们无缘体力工人或艺术家)在各个行业中,他们是否接受过良好的教育将对他们产生影响。回忆也会影响他们。许多人都把在学校的日子视为人生中最快乐的时光。他们带着遗憾的心情怀念那段金色时光。那时生活虽然艰苦,但还不算复杂;那时他们一起学习、一起游戏、一起思考,如果说他们思考的话。他们受到的教导告诉他们,学校是个微型世界。他们相信,一个人如果不爱自己的学校,那就不可能爱自己的国家。而且他们通过加入“老朋友”社团尽量使那段岁月延长,事实上他们中某些人一生都没有离开这个社团。他们认为学校万事好。他们崇拜学校并引用这样的评论来赞誉学校:“打赢滑铁卢战役的基础是在伊顿公学的球场上奠定的。”他们并不在乎这句评论在历史上是不适用的,也不在乎它并不是惠灵顿公爵发表的,而且惠灵顿公爵是一位爱尔兰人。他们反复引用这句评论,因为它表达了他们的情感;他们认为,即使惠灵顿公爵没有这样说,他也应该这样说,即使他不是英国人,他也应该是英国人。他们所生活的社会并不是完全由公学学生或安格鲁—萨克逊人组成的,而是由形形色色的人组成的,对于这个社会中的财富与难以捉摸的东西,他们完全摸不着头脑。他们进入社会时,体魄健美,智力一般,却感情匮乏。而恰恰就是感情匮乏使英国人在国外遇到了许多困难。感情匮乏并不是冷酷无情。这一差别相当重要,也是我下一个论点的基础。

4. 并不是英国人没有感情,而是英国人害怕有感情。在公学中他们已被教导感情是有害的。他们不应该表现出大喜大悲,甚至在谈话时不应该把嘴巴张得过大,否则他们的烟斗会从口中掉落。他们必须掩饰自己的情绪,或者仅在特殊场合才可以表达自己的感情。

5. 从前(这是一件轶事),我与一位印度朋友到欧洲度假,为期一周。我们玩得很愉快,当一周结束时我们都感到十分难过。然而在分别时,我们的行为却是截然相反的。我的朋友完全陷入了绝望。他认为假期结束了,所有的幸福也将随之而去,而且痛苦的日子将一直持续至世界末日。他将伤心表达到了极点,到了无以言表的程度。然而在我身上则表现出强烈的英国人特征。我想到我们可以在一至两个月以后再次见面,如果我们在此期间有话要说,可以通信,而且在这种情况下我认为这不值得大惊小怪。这并不是生离死别。“振作起来,”我说,“振作起来。”他拒绝振作,于是我任由他陷入郁闷。

6. 这件事的结尾更说明问题。因为当我们于次月见面时,我们的谈话对了解英国人的性格大有裨

益。一开始我便指责朋友。我告诉他不应该在这种小事上牵动并体现出这么多感情,这并不妥当。“妥当”这个字眼儿激怒了他。“什么?”他大声说道,“你是不是像分配土豆一样分配你的感情?”我不喜欢土豆这个比喻,但是沉思片刻后我说,“是的,我是这样;而且,我认为应该这样。小事需要的感情少,大事需要的感情多。我希望我的感情分配得当。我也许是像分配土豆一样分配感情,但是要胜过你像桶里的水一样乱溅。”他不喜欢水桶这个比喻。“如果你是这样想的,那么我们绝交,”他喊道,然后离开了房间,而后又立刻转回来,补充说道,“不——但是你对于感情的整个态度是错的。感情与妥当无关。感情只在于是否真诚。我碰巧是个感情丰富的人,于是我流露我的感情。你是否应该感情丰富这并不重要。”

7. 这些话给我留下了深刻印象。然而我不能同意他的看法,并且要说明我与他一样重视感情,只是表达的方式不同而已。如果我在小事上随意挥洒感情,我害怕在大事上无感情可施,比如破产、人生危机这样的大事。注意“破产”一词,我是作为慎重的中产阶级一员讲这番话的,而且我们总惦记着欠债就一定要偿还。然而我的朋友是从东方人的角度出发的,而且东方人背后的传统不是中产阶级的谨慎而是皇帝般的慷慨大方与丰富多彩。东方人认为自己的财富是取之不尽、用之不竭的,正如约翰·布尔认为他的财富是无穷无尽的。对于物质资源,东方人的态度显然是不明智的。金钱并不是无穷尽的。如果我们花费或让出我们全部的金钱,我们便身无分文,而且必须承担后果,这经常是令人不悦的。但是,就精神财富而言,东方人也许是对的。感情或许是取之不尽、用之不竭的。我们表达感情越充分,我们所要表达的感情就越丰富。

真爱不同于黄金和泥土,

分享不会使之减少……

雪莱写道。无论怎样,雪莱相信精神财富是无穷无尽的;他相信我们可以大量地、充满激情地在各种场合表达我们的情感;而且我们无论怎样表现悲哀和欢乐都不过分。

8. 我已通过上面的轶事描绘出一个典型的英国人了。现在我将从这个眩晕又不熟悉的高度降下来,继续评论英国人的性格特点,关于英国人迟钝的特点。英国人表面上冷漠而且无感情,因为他们确实迟钝。每当有事发生,英国人会迅速弄清楚事情的来龙去脉,但是他们需要一段时间才能在感情上做出反应。从前一辆马车正驶过阿尔卑斯山,车上坐着英国人和法国人。拉车的马脱缰,马车在冲过桥时刮到了桥上的石头,马车来回摇晃,险些跌进桥下的沟壑。法国人极度恐惧:他们肆意尖叫,慌张地挥动双臂胡乱冲撞。而英国人则相当镇静地坐着。一小时后,马车停在一家小旅馆前换马,此时情形发生了逆转。法国人完全忘却了危险,快乐地闲谈着;而此时英国人则刚刚感受到危险,其中一个人还因患了精神分裂而必须卧床休息。由此可见,两个民族在身体上存在明显差异,正是这一差异对其性格特点产生了重大影响。法国人的反应迅速及时,而英国人则需要过一段时间才能做出反应。英国人迟钝而又实际。英国人的本能制止他们在马车中摇来摆去,因为如果他们这样做,就更容易翻车。英国人注意的是我们应该一再注意的事实。当灾难来临时,英国人的本能是去做最先能做的事,并且尽量推迟感情的到来。因此英国人在紧急情况下异常镇静。无疑他们是勇敢的,这一点毋庸置疑,但是勇敢的性格归功于精神功能,而英国人的神经系统是为身体上的紧急情况而准备的。英国人行动迅捷,感觉迟缓。二者的结合的确有用,具备这一结合的人多半都很勇敢。动作结束时,英国人才会有感觉。

9. 这里有一个更重要的结论——最重要的一点。如果英国人天性冷漠,他们如何能够创造出伟大的文学,尤其是诗体文学?就散文而言,英国文学不是一流的;是诗使英国文学与希腊、波斯或法国文学齐名。然而英国文学却被视为非诗体文学。原因何在?拥有伊丽莎白体戏剧和湖畔诗人的民族绝不是一个冷漠、无诗情画意的民族。冰不能生火。由于文学总是以民族特征为基础,因此,英国特性中肯定隐藏着激情的源泉,这样才会创造出我们读到的火一般的文学作品。我们常常在周围熟悉的人身上寻找热情的同情心、浪漫、想象力,但往往无功而返。然而,这些品质肯定存在于英国整体民族之中,否则

我们不可能有如此热情奔放的英国国歌。只是一颗有待发展的心,而不是一颗冷酷的心。

10. 问题在于英国人的性格并不容易理解。英国人的性格彰显着简约的气质,它标榜自己简明,然而我们越探究它,遇到的问题就越多。人们往往认为东方是神秘的,其实西方也是神秘的。乍一看东西方都不会展现自身的本质。我们知道从远处看海是什么样子:颜色单一,水面平平,似乎里面不可能有鱼类动物生存。但是,如果我们沿船舷向海底望去,我们会看到十几种颜色,海水一层深似一层,鱼儿在里面游来游去。大海犹如英国人的性格特点——看似波澜不惊,实则不然。大海的最深处和各种各样的颜色就像英国的浪漫主义和敏感性。我们没料到能在英国人的特性中找到这些特点,但它们确实存在。现在继续我的比喻,鱼是英国人的感情,总想游到水面,只是不知道如何才能实现。多数情况下我们看到它们在深处游动,形体扭曲,模糊不清。有时它们成功地游到水面,我们便会欢呼:“哇,英国人是有感情的!他们的确会感受!”偶尔我们会看到那美丽的文鳐鱼完全跃出海面,跳到空中,沐浴在阳光下。英国文学如同一条文鳐鱼。它表明,在表层下面,在人们不易注意到的地方,生命一天天地延续着;同时它也证明在咸咸的、不适于居住的海水中存在着美丽和情感。

11. 现在让我们回到陆地。我们将以英国人对于批评的态度为起点。英国人不会被批评惹恼。他们聆听,也许根本没听,一笑了之,并说,“噢,那家伙在嫉妒”;“噢,我已经适应了萧伯纳似的老把戏,它们伤害不到我。”英国人从来不去想那人可能有点嫉妒但他批评得对,不会认真考虑别人的批评并从中受益。英国人从不认为自己还需要进步,改进只是说说而已,他们极度自满。东方和欧洲的其他国家总是因自身不够完美而不安。因此,他们憎恶批评。批评伤害了他们,他们迅速而又愤怒的回答常常掩饰了他们追求进步的决心。而英国人却不这样。他们根本没有不安的感觉。让批评家们去叫嚣吧,英国人认为自己在遇到困难时所采取的“宽容的幽默态度”并不是真正的幽默,因为幽默受到了傻笑和哄堂大笑的限制。

12. 此前我曾暗示英国人有时是虚伪的,现在我有责任展开这个相当痛苦的话题。虚伪是向我们提出的最重要的指控。德国人野蛮,西班牙人残忍,美国人肤浅等等;然而我们是虚伪的英国,虚伪的岛屿,这里的人们一手拿着圣经,一手握着手枪建立了大英帝国,两手同时拥有财政特许权。这项指控公正吗?我想是公正的;但是当我们进行指控时,我们必须清楚何为虚伪。虚伪是否意味着有意识的欺骗?如果是,那么英国人是无辜的,英国人中不存在文艺复兴式的反派人物。虚伪是否意味着无意识的欺骗?糊涂虫?如果是,那么我相信英国人是有罪的。当一个英国人被引入歧途时,他几乎总是从犯糊涂开始。公学教育没有赋予学生清楚的头脑,而且他很容易使自己的思维混淆。我们在神学领域看到了这一倾向,在行为学领域是否也如此?

13. 这里把简·奥斯汀作为权威来引用似乎有些奇怪,但是简·奥斯汀已经在她有限的范围内非凡地洞察了英国人的思维。她的世界是有限的,然而她的性格从未尝试任何重罪。但在观察行为问题时,她的目光尖锐无情。她的小说《理智与情感》的前几章提供了一个经典例子,使我们看到两个英国人在走上一条错误道路之前是如何先犯糊涂的。老达什伍德先生刚刚去世。他有过两次婚姻,第一次婚姻为他留下一个儿子约翰,第二次婚姻为他留下三个女儿。他的儿子富有,而比他长寿的第二个妻子和三个女儿则贫困。他把儿子叫到病榻前,郑重地将一家人托付给他。备受感动的年轻人答应了父亲的要求,并暗下决心给每个妹妹 1000 英镑,随后喜剧性的情节开始了。由于约翰·达什伍德向妻子宣布了自己慷慨的意图,而太太当然不同意让别人来剥夺自己儿子的财产。于是 1000 英镑减少为 500 英镑。即使这个数目也太多了,那么向继母支付赡养费会不会减少失财的痛苦?会的,但是减少痛苦会增加支出,因为“她现在相当强壮、健康,而且还不到 40 岁”。现在付 50 英镑也许更好,“而且,我认为,我也完全履行了对父亲的诺言。”最好什么都不给,反正父亲已经死了。最终什么都没有,什么都没有,甚至没有帮四位身无分文的女士搬运家具。

14. 那么,约翰·达什伍德家的人是伪君子吗?这要取决于我们对于虚伪的定义。当他积蓄力量并



逐渐向好的意图努力时,这个年轻人不会意识到他邪恶的冲动。甚至他那性格更加糟糕的妻子也是自欺欺人的。她认为老达什伍德先生在临死前一定是疯了。她只想着自己的儿子,当然母亲想着自己的孩子是天经地义的。她的头脑一片混乱,总之一句话,她可以拒绝支付让女士们雇车的钱,而后她便可以说她们不愿意雇车,自然无需支付任何费用。诚然,其他国家的人也会犯糊涂,然而约翰·达什伍德的思维状态是典型的英国人的思维方式。英国人头脑迟钝,甚至犯错误也需要一段时间,而其他国家的人则迅速犯错。

15. 民族缺陷如同民族疾病一样是存在的,也许可以把二者等同起来。我一直在想,英国的民族疾病应该是癌症和痼疾——发展缓慢、隐伏危害、容易被误诊,而南部常见的疾病应该是霍乱和瘟疫,它们会使一个健壮的人在一天之内遭遇死亡。约翰·达什伍德夫妇应该患有道德痼疾,他们在未察觉患病的情况下日渐崩溃。既然他们的罪恶不是夸张的或猛烈的,你便不能称他们为恶棍。

16. 下面来谈论一下对英国人的其他指控。比如,英国人被指控狡诈、残忍与狂热。我认为这些指责是名不副实的,因为狡诈和残忍是有意识的罪恶。人们知道自己做错了,仍然一意孤行,就像塔图夫或者雅阁一样。他出卖朋友因为他喜欢如此。他折磨犯人,因为他喜欢看流血。他向恶魔顶礼膜拜因为他喜欢恶而不喜欢善。普通的英国人没有这样的恶行。他的性格阻碍他上升到一定高度,同时也不会让他堕落到如此糟糕的地步。正因为普通的英国人不会成为神秘主义者,因此他们也不会成为恶棍;他们既不为世界造就预言家,也不给世界带来无政府主义或者宗教与政治的狂热分子。

17. 当然有些英国人是残忍、狡诈的,你只需把目光转向政坛便可见公共耻辱的实例,比如美莎大屠杀。然而,没有人从政坛或是军队中寻找民族精神,你结识的英国人越多,你就越相信这些指责从总体上说是虚假的。然而外国评论家经常这样指责英国人。原因何在?部分原因在于他们被英国人性格特点上的某些确实的弱点惹恼了,于是他们愤怒地将这些弱点统统归结为残忍,以便把问题简单化。道德的愤慨是可以接受的,但总是出现在不合时宜的场合。英国人和英国评论家均沉溺于此。他们都发现了许多乐趣。缺陷在于当他们徜徉于其中时,世人丝毫没有变得更精明或更愚蠢。

18. 上述各点的关键之处在于英国人的性格是不完整的。任何一个民族的性格特点都是不完整的。我们必须世界某个角落寻找某些特性,而到其他角落去寻找其他特性。然而,英国人性格不完整的方式使外国观察者感到特别烦恼。英国人的性格有一个糟糕的表面——自满、缺乏同情心、矜持。糟糕的表面下还有很多情感,却从不为英国人所用。此外英国人还有许多聪明才智,但它往往被应用于树立偏见而不是消除偏见。具有这些性格特点的英国人是不会受欢迎的。我只想重申:英国人本身并不邪恶,也并不冷漠。一切都是体制的错。

19. 我希望并相信我们可以在未来的20年中亲眼目睹一个巨大变化,看到英国人的性格特点变得更普遍、更可爱。中产阶级的不可一世也许会终结。我们无法确定工人阶级会引入哪些新的因素,但是,无论如何他们将不会在公学体制下受教育。上述各点是赞扬还是指责英国人的性格并不是一成不变的。它们是一个追求真知的学生的笔记,将珍视他人的协助。我相信真相的伟大并且认为应该将其推广。我不相信官方的谨慎与缄默。秘密已经公开,外交也无法将其挽回。各民族必须互相了解,而且要快,不要政府的插手与干预,因为世界在缩小,这使得各国不可避免地要进行接触。理解上述笔记只是一点微薄的贡献——一个小说家对英国人性格的印象。



## 五、练习答案及详解

### I. Vocabulary

A. Look up the following words and phrases. Select the meaning that best suits the sentence in which each appears.

1. to let a secret be revealed
2. having no interest in sb./sth.
3. independent schools supported by funding through the private sector and through tuition rates
4. having everything needed; best of the kind
5. to give shape or structure to sth.; outward physical appearance
6. deliberately not to allow oneself to show a strong feeling or emotion, to hold in or suppress emotions
7. a technical term, meaning the amount of debt that is owed
8. thing granted or yielded, esp. after a discussion, argument, etc.
9. to put sth. into disorder
10. small and relative unimportant

### IV. Questions on Appreciation

1. No. Forster narrows down the discussion of the English nation to the male members of middle classes, for he was born and raised in a middle-class family and therefore knows the section well.
2. Forster puts emphasis on the middle classes at the very beginning of the essay. And then he expounds the public school system in Britain and the effect it has on the middle-class boys. On the basis of it, Forster illustrates some examples to present English characters.
3. It's about the lasting effect of the public school education on the middle-class Englishmen. On leaving school, they go forth into the realistic world with well-developed bodies, fairly developed minds and undeveloped hearts. This paragraph expounds the historical reason of English characters.
4. At the end of Para 3, "... on it my next note will be based." clearly tells us what will be discussed next. At the end of Para 3 the author says, "The different is important." At the beginning of Para 4, "For it is not that ..." explains the reason immediately. In Para 8 the author presents another note, a note on the slowness of the English character. Actually this note is related to the previous one. The author points out that the Englishman appears to be cold and unemotional because he is really slow. Again he uses an anecdote to illustrate his point. The tone continues to be a bit ironical and humorous. In this way, the two comparatively independent parts are skillfully combined with a smooth transition.
5. In the author's opinion, "undeveloped heart" means that they will not easily express their emotions. Emotions should only be used on appropriate occasions.
6. In Para 8, the author discusses the character of slowness. First, the author explains what is "slowness", and then he gives example to expound the character and the reasons for it.
7. Metaphor. For example, "That sea is the English character", "The depths and colors are the English romanticism and the English sensitiveness" and "English literature is a flying fish."
8. The author quotes the plots of *Sense and Sensibility* to illustrate hypocrisy and hypocrites, and how to deal with real hypocrites and acceptable hypocrites.
9. The intention of the author is to let nations have a better understanding of each other and come closer

to each other, which is shown at the end of the essay. Since the author's notes are both unauthoritative and open for discussion and criticism.

**V. Explain the following in your own words, bringing out any implied meanings.**

1. As Saint George is a hero, the patron of arms, symbolizing chivalry, his image often appears on banners, and his name is often mentioned in the speeches of politicians. Saint George is used as a symbolic figure for political purposes. But John Bull is a tradesman and he delivers the goods we need in our daily life while making money at the same time.
2. The English public schools have unique features. First, all boys live in boarding houses. Second, sports and games are organized and compulsory as part of the school curricula. Third, older students have special duties to help control younger students while the latter must do jobs for the former. Lastly, great emphasis is placed on good form and team spirit. These features enable the public school students to have disproportionately great influence.
3. Pay attention to my use of the word "bankrupt", a word related to business. This reveals my identity as a member of the commercial nation, who would be careful and sensible enough to avoid any risks of failing to pay their debts.
4. But my friend expressed his views as a member of the Oriental countries. They are nourished by a tradition of great generosity and richness, which is different from the English tradition of middle-class prudence.
5. In this aspect, true love is different from material things such as clay or even gold which can be divided and taken away. Yet, if we share true love, it will never diminish.
6. In the above anecdote, I have become an example of the Englishmen for the moment. That put me in a high position which makes me dizzy and is unfamiliar to me. I will now come down from that height and return to my role as your commentator on the characteristics of the Englishman.
7. The Englishman's nervous system acts promptly and feels slowly. The combination of the two qualities is useful, and anyone who has this combination is most likely to be brave.
8. As literature is based on national character, there must be in the English nature hidden resources of passion that have produced the great romantic literature we see.
9. That kind of criticism is just like Bernard Shaw's attacks. It is nothing new and I'm used to these tricks and jokes; they won't do any harm to me.
10. The Englishmen think they have a tolerant and humorous attitude toward criticism. In fact it is not so, because their attitude is limited by uncomfortable laughter, which indicates that beneath the surface of their tolerant humorous attitude, they are uneasy. When they try to be humorous and brush aside criticism, they would titter and guffaw. Such uncomfortable laughter is a sign of uneasiness.
11. I have already made all my opinions known to you. What is said is said, and being diplomatic cannot unsay what has been said.

**VI. Translate the following into Chinese.**

**A. Phrases**

1. 大腹便便
2. 银行存款很多
3. 像海里的沙粒一样各有不同

4. 偿还债务
5. 在车厢里跌跌撞撞
6. 认真对待批评并从中受益

#### B. Sentences

1. 但是,(在英国)最吸引评论者关注的是中产阶级,正如在俄国人们关注的是穷人,在日本人们关注的是贵族一样。
2. 英国公学制度比大学更充分地表现了英国中产阶级的特性。社会与精神的复杂性已经进入大学。
3. 在上述事业中,他是否受过良好的教育,深深地影响着他。
4. 他们带着遗憾的心情怀念那段黄金岁月。那时,生活虽然艰苦,但还不算复杂。那时,他们一起学习、一起游戏、一起思考,如果说他们思考的话。他们受到的教导告诉他们,学校是个微型世界。他们相信,一个人如果不爱自己的学校,那他就不可能爱自己的国家。
5. 他们进入社会时,体魄健全,智力一般,感情匮乏(身体锻炼得十分结实,大脑的开发一般,而心的发育则不健全)。
6. 他将伤心表达到了极点,到了无以言表的程度。但是我身上则表现出强烈的英国人特性。
7. 无论怎样,雪莱相信精神的财富是无穷无尽的,他相信我们可以大量地、充满激情地在各种场合表达我们的情感,我们无论怎样表现悲哀和欢乐都不过分。
8. 法国人的反应迅速及时,而英国人则需要过一段时间才能做出反应。
9. 它(英国人的神经系统)行动迅速,感觉迟缓。这二者的结合的确有用,具备这一结合的人多半都很勇敢。
10. 但是在观察行为问题时,她的目光尖锐无情。她的小说《理智与情感》的前几章提供了一个经典例子,使我们看到两个英国人在走上一条错误道路之前是如何先犯糊涂的。
11. 普通的英国人没有这样的恶行。他的性格会阻碍他上升到一定的高度,同时也不会让他堕落到如此糟糕的地步。
12. 各民族必须互相了解,而且要快,不要政府的插手与干预,因为世界在缩小,这使得他们不可避免地要进行接触。

# • Lesson Eleven

## Beauty



### 一、课文导读

#### (一) 内容梗概

《美》是斯科特·拉塞尔·桑德斯 1998 年出版的《寻找希望》一书中的一章。

文章从对女儿婚礼场景的回忆展开。作者以细腻的笔触描述了婚礼中许多闪亮的细节：长长的礼服、薄薄的面纱、伊娃阳光下闪耀的头发和幸福的脸庞；伴娘和花童手中美丽的花束，以及作者伴女儿步入教堂时夹杂着紧张不安和兴奋欣喜的心情。

接着作者的笔锋一转，将婚礼上女儿闪亮的美同自然界和宇宙间的美进行比较，从而切入正题。由“美是肤浅的”、“情人眼里出西施”两个熟悉的谚语开始，作者对什么是美进行了详尽透彻的阐述。作者认为美是对自然和自然法则的展示和理解，“对美的感受是对宇宙中无处不在的秩序与能量的共鸣”。这恰好印证了英国诗人济慈的诗：“美即真理，真理即美——一切尽在此，这世上你们每人都知道，你们每人所必须知道的也尽在此。”

文章充满诗意，语言精练，论述有力，给人以轻松愉快的阅读享受。

#### (二) 背景知识

##### 1. Western Wedding Ceremony

The western wedding is usually held in a church, but sometimes outdoor. The bride wears a beautiful, long white wedding dress. She traditionally wears “something old, something new, something borrowed and something blue”. The groom wears a formal suit or tuxedo. As the ceremony begins, the groom and his attendants stand with the minister, facing the audience. Music signals the entrance of the bride’s attendants, followed by the beautiful bride. The young couple repeats their vows after the minister, promising to love each other “for better, for worse, for poorer, for richer, in sickness and in health”.

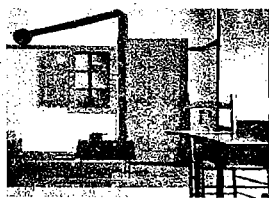


Western Wedding Ceremony

##### 2. Shaker Furnishings and the Shakers

This deacon’s room in one of the restored buildings of Hancock Shaker Village, near Pittsfield, Massachusetts, exemplifies the austerity and simplicity of Shaker furnishings and utensils. The Shakers,

a Quaker sect that originated in Great Britain in about 1750, flourished in the United States in the early part of the 19th century. Membership was closed in 1964, however, and by the 1980s, only two active Shaker communities remained in the United States: at Sabbathday Lake, Maine, and at Canterbury, New Hampshire. The religious group was called Shakers mostly because they used to shake their bodies as part of their religious rituals in the early days.



Shaker Furnishings



## 二、词汇与短语

### (一) 词汇

#### ① botch /bɒtʃ/ *v.*

to spoil sth. by poor or clumsy work (笨手笨脚地) 弄坏某事物 【同义】 bungle; fumble  
—The actor botched his lines. 那演员把台词念糟了。

#### ② break /breɪk/ *v.*

to dash apart, as a wave in the shore 波涛冲撞  
—the sound of waves breaking on the beach 波涛冲撞着海滩的声音

#### ③ bun /bʌn/ *n.*

1) (esp. woman's) hair twisted into a tight knot at the back of the head (尤指女子的) 发髻  
—to wear one's hair in a bun 把头发盘成发髻  
2) small round sweet cake 小而圆的甜面包或点心

#### ④ blissful /'blɪsfəl/ *adj.*

extremely happy 极幸福的; 极快乐的 【同义】 joyful  
【词根】 bliss *n.* 极大的福气; 喜悦

#### ⑤ congregation /ˌkɒŋɡrɪ'geɪʃən/ *n.*

a gathering of people, esp. in a church 教堂会众  
【派生】 congregational *adj.* 会众的; 公理会的

#### ⑥ creation /kri'eɪʃən/ *n.*

1) the birth of the universe and everything in it 创世  
2) all created things 所有的创造物; 天地万物

#### ⑦ crystallize /'krɪstəlaɪz/ *v.*

1) to become or cause to become clear and definite 变得清晰而明确; 使具体化  
—Reading your book helped crystallize my views. 阅读你的著作有助于澄清我的思想。  
2) to form or make sth. into crystals 使结晶  
【派生】 crystallization *n.* 结晶; 结晶体; 具体化

#### ⑧ denizen /'denɪzn/ *n.*

person or type of animal or plant living or growing permanently in a place 长久生长于某地的人或动植物 【同义】 inhabitant; occupant  
—polar bear, denizen of the frozen north 北极熊, 北极冰天雪地的老住户

#### ⑨ enthrall /ɪn'tʃrɔːl/ *v.*

to capture the whole attention of (sb.); to please greatly 使极愉快; 迷住 【同义】charm; captivate  
—enthralled by her beauty 被她的美色迷住

【派生】enthraling *adj.* 动人的

⑩entrance /in'tra:ns/ *v.*

to fill with rapture or delight 使某人着迷; 狂喜

—They were completely entranced by the music. 他们完全陶醉在音乐里。

⑪exhilarate /ig'zɪləreɪt/ *v.*

to make (sb.) feel very happy or lively 使(某人)愉快或活跃

—Speed had always exhilarated him. 他总是服了苯丙胺就感到兴奋。

【派生】exhilaration *n.* 愉快; 兴奋

⑫facade /fə'sa:d/ *n.*

1) (*fml*) front (of a building) (建筑物的) 正面

2) (*fig*) outward appearance, esp. a deceptive one 外表(尤指虚伪的)

—Squalor and poverty lay behind the city's glittering facade. 这城市表面繁华, 背后却隐藏着肮脏和贫困。

⑬festival /'festɪvəl/ *n.*

(day or time of) religious or other celebration 节日; 节期

—Christmas and Easter are Christian festivals. 圣诞节和复活节是基督教的节日。

【派生】festivity *n.* 欢宴; 欢庆

⑭fickle /'fɪkl/ *adj.*

often changing 易变的; 无常的 【同义】capricious 【反义】constant

—fickle fortune 变幻莫测的命运

【派生】fickleness *n.* 多变

⑮grain /greɪn/ *n.*

1) essential quality 质地 【同义】texture

—a stone of fine grain 质地细的石头

2) pattern made by the lines of fibers in wood, or of layers in rock, coal, etc. 纹理

—to cut a piece of wood along the grain 把木头顺着木纹切断

⑯infatuation /ɪn,fætʃu'eɪʃən/ *n.*

foolish or unreasoning passion or affection, often a transient one 迷恋; 痴情 【反义】odium

—This is only a passing infatuation, not to be taken too seriously. 这只是一时的迷恋, 不必太认真。

⑰iridescent /ɪrɪ'desnt/ *adj.*

1) showing colors like those of the rainbow 彩虹色的

2) changing colors as its position changes (因位置改动) 变色的

—jewels sparkling with iridescent colors 闪烁着奇光异彩的珠宝

⑱oblivious /ə'blɪvɪəs/ *adj.*

unaware or not noticing sth. 未觉察; 不注意; 忘记 【反义】mindful; vigilant

—oblivious of one's surroundings 不注意周围事物

【派生】obliviousness *n.* 遗忘; 无知觉

⑲plausible /'pləʊzəbl/ *adj.*

(of a statement, an excuse, etc.) seeming to be right or reasonable (指陈述、借口等) 似乎正确的; 似

有道理的 【反义】 implausible

—She could not find plausible explanation for its disappearance. 她无法解释清楚它何以不翼而飞。

【派生】 plausibility *n.* 似正确或有理

⑳ poised /pɔɪzd/ *adj.*

self-assured; calm or serene 泰然自若的; 自制的 【同义】 composed

—a poised manner 沉着的态度

㉑ predilection /ˌprɪdɪˈlekʃən/ *n.*

(*fml*) special liking (for sth.) 特殊爱好; 偏好 【同义】 preference; partiality

—a predilection for Japanese food 对日本食物的偏爱

㉒ primal /ˈpraɪmə/ *adj.*

1) first or original 最初的; 原始的 【同义】 primitive

—the loss of their primal innocence 他们原有的天真素质的丧失

2) chief or the most important 主要的; 首要的 【同义】 primary

—of primal importance 至关重要的

㉓ ravishing /ˈrævɪʃɪŋ/ *adj.*

causing great delight or joy; enchanting 迷人的; 使人欣喜若狂的; 可爱的 【同义】 delightful; lovely

—You look simply ravishing in that dress! 你穿上那件连衣裙真漂亮!

㉔ sizzle /ˈsɪzl/ *v.*

1) (*infml*) to make the hissing sound 发咝咝声

—sausages sizzling in the pan 锅里的香肠发出咝咝的声音

2) (*fig*) a sizzling hot day 炎热的一天

【派生】 sizzler *n.* 大热天

㉕ skim /skɪm/ *v.*

to move or glide lightly (over a surface) 掠过或擦过(某物的表面)

—aircraft skimming the roof-tops 从屋顶上掠过的飞机

㉖ streak /stri:k/ *v.*

1) to make long, thin marks on or in 在某物上加条纹

—to have one's hair streaked 把头发染成一缕缕不同的颜色

2) (*infml*) to move very fast (in the specified direction) 飞快地(向某方向)移动

—The children streaked down the street as fast as they could. 孩子们拼命地沿街飞跑。

㉗ tilt /tɪlt/ *v.*

(to cause sth.) to move into a sloping position (使某物) 倾斜 【同义】 tip

—Don't tilt your chair or you'll fall over! 别翘椅子, 不然你会摔倒的!

㉘ tingle /ˈtɪŋɡl/ *v.*

1) to have a slight pricking, stinging feeling in the skin 皮肤感到轻微的刺痛

—The slap she gave him made his cheek tingle. 他挨了她一个嘴巴, 脸上热辣辣的。

2) (*fig*) to be affected by an emotion 受(某种情绪)的影响

—to tingle with excitement 感到兴奋

㉙ unerring /ʌnˈɜːrɪŋ/ *adj.*

not making mistakes or failing or missing the mark; consistently accurate 准确无误的

—his unerring sense of direction 他准确无误的方向感



⑩ zone /zəʊn/ *v.*

to assign as or to a particular area 将(某事物)划成或划归某区域

• 【派生】zonal *adj.* 分成区的;划成范围的

(二) 短语

① to fuss over sb.

to pay excessive attention to sb. 过于注意某人

—He's always fussing over his grandchildren. 他对孙儿们过于操心。

② to tuck sth. into sth.

to draw (sth.) together into a small space 将(某物)缩拢起来塞入狭小空间

—The nurse tucked her hair under her cap. 那护士把头发拢起来塞进帽子里。

③ to summon sth. up

to call forth; to evoke sth. 使事物浮现于脑际;唤起某事物

—a smell which summons up memories of my childhood 使我回忆起童年往事的一种气味

④ to pore over

to read or study carefully 钻研;审视

—She was poring over an old map of the area. 她正在查阅该地区的旧地图。

⑤ to well up

(as of a feeling or tears) to rise to the surface, ready to overflow 流出;涌出

—Tears welled up in her eyes. 她泪盈于睫。

⑥ by one's own light

according to one's own opinion, standards or abilities 按照自己的观点、标准或能力

—We can't blame him; he did his best by his own light. 我们不能责怪他,他已尽力而为了。

⑦ out on a limb

(*colloq*) in a precarious or vulnerable position or situation; at a disadvantage 孤立而脆弱;没有支持者

—to leave sb. out on a limb 弃某人于孤立无援的境地

⑧ to balk at sth.

to be reluctant to tackle sth. because it is dangerous, difficult, unpleasant, etc. (因困难、危险、乏味等)不愿从事某事

—His parents balked at the cost of the guitar he wanted. 他想要那个吉他,但他父母看到吉他的价格却踌躇不决。

⑨ to have a say in sth.

to have the power to decide sth. 有决定权

—I have a say in the management of the business. 我在业务管理方面有决定权。

⑩ to lust after/for sb./sth.

to have a strong wish or desire for 对某人(某事)有强烈的欲望

—He lusted for revenge. 他渴望复仇。

⑪ shy of/on sth./sb.

short of sth./sb. 少、缺某物/某人

—We've plenty of wine, but we are shy on beer. 我们有很多葡萄酒,但啤酒不够。



### 三、课文注释

① But how can I walk slowly while my heart races? (Para 12)

But how can I walk slowly when I am in such an excited mood?

② ... so I can make up to my darling for anything she may have lacked in her girlhood. (Para 12)

My daughter may feel she has missed something when she was young. If so, I wish I could make compensation to her now before she is married.

to make up for sth. : to compensate for sth. 补偿、赔偿、弥补某事

③ ... our cue to show ourselves. (Para 12)

The music signals that it is time for us to enter.

④ And so, lifting our feet in unison, we go. (Para 12)

And we start moving down the aisle in the same way and at the same time.

The sentence is vivid and humorous. The effect is achieved through inversion and choice of words such as "lifting", "in unison".

⑤ The glow of happiness had to cool before it would crystallize into memory. (Para 13)

With the passing of time, you will feel a bit more detached from the happy event and then you can recall the things more clearly and they will stick in your mind.

Metaphors are used here and the basic concept is the cooling of heat.

⑥ I believe the energy they speak of is holy, by which I mean it is the closest we can come with our instruments to measuring the "strength of God". (Para 14)

The author thinks the energy is holy because he believes that with modern instruments this is the nearest we can succeed in finding out how powerful God is.

holy: sacred 神圣的

⑦ As far back as I can remember, things seen or heard or smelled, things tasted or touched, have provoked in me an answering vibration. (Para 16)

From what I can recall, things I have seen, or heard, or smelled, or tasted, or touched, that is, perceptions I get from my five senses, have stirred appreciative responses in me.

an answering vibration: A vibration cannot answer; rather, it is the person who feels a response that reflects the external stimulus.

⑧ A wedding gown will eventually grow musty in a mothproof box; flowers will fade, and the glow will seep out of the brightest day. (Para 20)

The clothes made for the occasion of wedding, though kept in a box specially treated to repel moths, will have a moldy smell as time goes on; flowers will gradually lose their color and die and even the brightest day will grow dim.

⑨ ... I feel certain that genuine beauty is more than skin deep, that real beauty dwells not in my own eye alone but out in the world. (Para 20)

Real beauty is not merely my subjective judgment, but an actual, objective existence.

to dwell in/at: to live as an inhabitant of or reside at (a place) 住; 居住

⑩ ... I must go out on a speculative limb if I am to speak about the qualities in the world that call it forth. (Para 21)

If I am to discuss what are the characteristic elements of the world which produce beauty, I am in a very vulnerable position because I have to take a risk at speculating or guessing.

**to call sth. forth:** to cause sth. to appear or be shown 使某事物显现

**⑪... it gives us a glimpse of the underlying order of things. (Para 21)**

It makes us aware of the way that life and the world are organized.

**⑫ That grain runs through our own depths. (Para 21)**

That essential quality has become a part of our innermost selves.

**grain:** essential quality, an image derived from the grain in the wood when it is cut

**⑬ Before I climb out any farther onto this limb, let me give biology its due. (Para 22)**

Before I go any further in my speculation, I would like to give recognition to the role of biology.

**⑭ The gravity that draws a man and woman together, leading each to find the other ravishing, carries with it a long history of sexual selection, one informed by a shrewd calculation of fertility and strength. (Para 23)**

The force that pulls a man and woman together, making each find the other attractive, has behind it a biological standard of choosing a partner of the other sex formed over long period of evolutionary time. This standard is inspired by subtle consideration of capability of giving birth to children and being physically strong.

**ravishing:** causing great joy or delight; seductive 迷人的; 令人陶醉的

**to inform:** to animate; to guide 驱动; 引导

**⑮ And I would have balked at the suggestion that my caveman ancestors had any say in my dawning desire, although now I can hear their voices grunting. Go for the lush hair, the swelling rump. (Para 23)**

Back then I would have denied that my genes which had been passed down from my early ancestors who lived in caves played an important role in the beginning of my sexual desire, but now I find that idea more credible.

**⑯ Yet I persist in believing there is more to this tingle than an evolutionary reflex. (Para 25)**

An evolutionary response cannot adequately explain why there is this physical feeling of excitement. There must be another more important reason—beauty.

**there is more to... than... cannot fully explain... 不足以说明...**

**⑰ I am looking for the sheer bliss of looking. (Para 27)**

When I look at Jupiter, I am only enjoying the pleasure of watching.

**⑱... you cannot pursue the laws of nature very long without bumping into beauty. (Para 32)**

The study of the law of nature will inevitably lead to the discovery of beauty.

**⑲ You can do science without believing in a divine Legislator, but not without believing in laws. (Para 34)**

As a scientist you can carry on your study of nature without believing there is a Creator, a God who started everything, but you have to admit and recognize that the universe is governed by a set of rules. There is a balanced construction involved; “without believing”; “not without believing”.

**⑳ So I keep gesturing. (Para 36)**

So I keep writing, as I consider words as gestures.

**㉑ Because the Creation puts on a nonstop show, beauty is free and inexhaustible... (Para 37)**

Since the birth of the universe, everything in it has revealed its own wonder continuously. Unlike ordinary commodities which cost money and whose supply is limited, “beauty” is free and inexhaustible.

② Or have we stumbled onto a deep congruence between the structure of our minds and the structure of the universe? (Para 39)

Or does it mean that accidentally we have come to a stage of perceiving harmony between the working of our minds and the working of the universe?

③ Beauty feeds us from the same source that created us. (Para 40)

When God created us, He also created beauty. The writer avoids using the word "God" because he wants us to think of it.

④ I find in that affinity a profound source of meaning and hope. (Para 40)

This close relationship makes us see life is meaningful and worth living.



#### 四、课文译文

### 美

斯科特·拉塞尔·桑德斯

1. 记忆中,教堂的门厅里,我等在伊娃的身旁准备担当新娘父亲的角色。她一只手挎着我的臂弯,同时,三个伴娘手忙脚乱地在她身上忙着,或整理薄薄的面纱,或铺平象牙色长长的拖裙,或将一络散落的头发卷塞到发髻里。她蜜糖色的头发在阳光下闪耀着。我穿着一双租来的专利皮革制成的鞋,身上是一件笔挺的黑色礼服,笨拙地站在一群漂亮的女士中间,就像一只被白鸽包围的乌鸦。我意识到她们是如此美丽并非因为她们手捧花束身着丝质裙装,而是因为婚礼使得时间的脚步放慢了下来,慢得即便是傻瓜也看得到她们的光彩。

2. 伊娃担心我们可能会像在排练时那样走得太快,便徒劳地试图教我一种滑动的芭蕾舞步,以便在步入教堂时使用。

3. “爸爸,真的很简单,”她说。我却一遍又一遍地搞砸。

4. 走在优雅的女儿身旁,我担心自己会像个从海外战场归来的受伤退伍兵,摇晃不稳。

5. 然而伊娃看起来兴高采烈,充满自信。一方面相信她自己会走得优雅,这一点她睡梦中都做得得到。另一方面她对站在众人面前庄严允诺同马修·艾伦共度此生也信心百倍。那位男士正远远地等在过道的另一头,紧张不安难以掩饰。我和伊娃都熟识的一位好朋友穿一件黑色教士袍、身披圣带泰然自若地站在礼台上。他曾在我们划独木舟穿越美加边界湖区时做我们的向导。他笑得很夸张,整个脸颊抵住眼镜的圆边。

6. “这是一位快乐的教士,”伊娃说。

7. “他相信婚姻,”我回答。

8. “我也相信。记得马特和我计算过,把你和妈妈及他的父母的婚龄加到一起,可以说我们的父母结婚已有 58 年了。”

9. 伊娃松开我的胳膊,抬手到颈边碰触那串珍珠项链——那是她从我 30 年前的新娘鲁思那儿借到的。

10. 我想说,爱可以持久,却没说出来,害怕我的声音会颤抖。伊娃把空下来的手又放回到我的臂弯里握紧。她挎住的是我的左臂,紧贴着我紧张跳动的心。在她自己的左臂中,稳稳地抱着一大束花——雏菊、百合、万寿菊、金鱼草。她左手拿一块比利时蕾丝手帕,也是从鲁思那儿借来的,以备擦眼泪。

时用。

11. 管风琴奏起巴赫的《基督，人们期望的快乐》，预示着伴娘即将进入大厅。这几个美丽的着深蓝色的女孩子轻快地穿过通道。花童们在人群面前畏缩着躲到了后边，在她们母亲的推搡下才蹦蹦跳跳地冲到前面，像抱幼苗一样抱着手中的花叶。

12. 最后，门厅里只剩下新娘和新娘的父亲。伊娃对我耳语道：“记住，不要走得太快。”可是，我心跳得这么快，怎么能走得慢？我已经忘记了她试图教我的芭蕾舞步。我想让仪式暂停下来，这样，我可以练习舞步，我们可以再次去野外划独木舟，我们还可以坐在海边平滑的岩石上谈论生命的奥秘，我还可以为我亲爱的女儿童年时的缺憾做出补偿。可是，仪式不会暂停。管风琴奏出普塞尔的《志愿者号角》，示意我们该出场了。我们走到大厅入口，200多张面孔转过来，闪亮的目光盯住了我们。伊娃侧脸仰头看我，扬起嘴角带出一丝笑容说道：“爸爸，我们开始吧。”就这样，齐举步，我们入场。

13. 婚礼是在伊娃和马修的老家，印第安纳州布鲁明顿市举行的。那是七月的一个酷热的星期六。如今，在九月初，我仍能回忆起那闪亮一天中的诸多细节，而婚礼当天我只意识到自己在经历快乐。快乐的热烈只有在冷却后才能够在记忆中清晰定格。

14. 原谅我用宇宙来做比喻，但我不禁想起了物理学家的说法。如果我们追溯宇宙的起源到原始大爆炸，我们就会发现众多的事物逐渐合并成简单的事物，而且越往前追溯，事物就变得越简单，最后到创世那一刻时，就只剩下那一片浑然一体的能量了。虽无法检验他们的方程式，但我认为物理学家是正确的。我相信他们提到的能量是神圣的，之所以这样说是因为这是我们用仪器所能测量到的最近似“上帝的力量”的事物。我还认为这种原始的能源继续在给我们提供能量，直接地是通过上帝创造的万物，间接地是通过美的感受。当婚礼进行曲响起，伊娃挎着我的臂弯，我们并肩站在一起时我感受到的喜悦就是一种美所带来的兴奋，同我在九月的夜晚，倾听着蟋蟀的歌唱，仰望着银河，走过露珠点点的草地时感受到的喜悦是一样的。

15. 由于哈勃太空望远镜的锐眼，我们今天观察到的银河及太空中的其他星体都更为清晰，甚至可以观察到它们在大气层外部的运行。譬如说，利用太空望远镜发回的信息，我在计算机屏幕上显示了一张被云团包围着的木星的图像，就像一个杂色的线团。然后，我又显示了猫眼星云，一颗闪烁的氢星被灼热的红色漩涡所包围，整个世界就像老虎身上闪耀的五彩斑纹。这种炙热的强光3000年前开始向地球进发，当时我的亚述祖先正处于全盛时期。在时间上追溯得更远一些，我又显示了距地球7000光年的秃鹰星云，三股尘埃就如三匹后脚站立的黑马，身上闪烁着新星的光芒。我研究类星体生成星系的图像，这些星系如同玩具风车一样旋转，超新星周围是一条条由星体遗骸组成的闪闪发光的带状物。我一直不断地探索宇宙的开始，一直追溯到你、我、我的女儿、她的新婚丈夫以及天空中大量闪闪发光的星星汇合成最初的原始大耀光。

16. 九月凉爽的早晨，我一直在研究两套照片，一套来自遥远的天际，一套来自伊娃的婚礼。我在试图弄清楚为什么这些不同的形象——超新星和闪亮的女儿，旋转的星系和颤动在花束——都在我心中激起了同样喜悦的旋律。婚礼结束并没有多久，这种感觉在我心中异常强烈，事实上这种感觉常常会有。就我所能回想起的，无论是所见、所听、所闻，还是所品尝或所触摸的事物，都曾激起我回应的共鸣。引发激情的也许来自倾泻在北美松松针上的月光，或是蜻蜓尾部变幻不定的色彩，或是梯背椅窄窄的轮廓，或是手工制作罐体上的釉彩。它可能来自一声鸟鸣、一段巴赫奏鸣曲或石上一流流水。它可能来自一行诗、某个人的脸庞、面包的香味、树枝或琴弓的摇摆。它可能来自高山日出的壮观场面，也可能仅仅源自不起眼的冰柱晶莹的柱尖，但不管是何种起因，每次我心中都会涌起同样的感激和惊叹。

17. 通向我书房楼梯上响起的谈话声、飘过的乐声、街道上的嘈杂声，都会不时激起那把倾斜着放在我的门后墙上的吉他的和弦共鸣。就这样一次又一次地，外部世界总会激起我回应的和弦——那不是一种任意的和弦，而是混合了优雅、振奋、简洁和敬畏各种音符的一种特别的和弦。这种感觉如辨别鲁

思的声音或确定我的心跳一样清晰,准确无误。当乌鸦高声鸣叫,当流星划过夜空,当故事自然发展到结局,当孩子把一支箭头放到我的手掌,当女儿在婚纱后向我微笑,那一刻我感到平和、自在和满足。我在我自己和我所见到的事物间的短暂面对中感受到了和谐。最能准确恰当描述这种共鸣感和内外和谐的字,就是美。

18. 我应该如何解释这种共鸣感? 感官给我带来的激情是否让我对这个世界有所了解呢? 是美揭示了小自我和大世界之间的紧密关系,还是由于我追求事物的内在含义而主观地这么认为呢? 也许正如生物学家所认为的,我对各种事物所做出的回应仅仅是在遵循古老的进化法则。或许,同我的吉他一样,我也只是一个可以被各种力量拨动的音乐盒。

19. 我必须承认有两个警句一直萦绕在我脑海里。我一次又一次地听到,美是肤浅的,情人眼里出西施。极美的外表下可能隐藏丑陋,这千真万确,许多英俊的恶棍或美丽的恶毒女子都证明了这一点。最漂亮的蝴蝶、蘑菇和青蛙中都包括了最具毒性的一种。同样正确的是,我们的审美会受到成长环境、所受教育及文化时尚的影响。我的一位邻居在他的庭院里立了一只半透明塑料制的粉色火烈鸟和一只穿工装裤水泥制的鹅,而我在院中种了春白菊、天南星和掌叶铁线蕨。我们两个人都在依照我们各自的标准追求美。

20. 如果美可以在画版上再现,就一定不会是肤浅的吗? 如果美就像灯泡那样,可以开与关,就一定不会是一种错觉吗? 婚纱最终会在防蛀的箱子中发霉,花儿会凋谢,最明亮的一天也终会暗淡。我确信我们会被表面假象所蒙蔽,也会被我们易变的观察所误导。但我不会忘记,我和鲁思结婚已 30 年,我看着女儿成长已 24 年,看着儿子成长已 20 年,这些我深爱的人使我懂得了一种更富希望的可能性。冬去春来,我蹲在蕨类植物旁边,观察它们如何破土而出,我研究吸吮着花蕊蜜汁的凤蝶的翅膀,观察在天上高高飞翔的一群群大雁。还有我读过的书、听过的乐曲,一次又一次让我充满新鲜喜悦感的想法。与充满美的人、地方和创作的作品生活在一起,使我深信真正的美绝不肤浅,这种美也不仅存在于我的眼中,而是客观地存在于我们身外的世界。

21. 我可以充满信心地谈论我对美的感受,但是若要让我谈论使美产生的事物的特质,我只能进行不充分的推断。因而,这也许是很不充分的推断。但我想说,一种生物、一种举止、一种地貌、一行诗或一段乐曲、一道科学公式或其他美丽的事物,之所以看起来美丽,是因为它们能让我们窥见事物隐含的秩序。星系的旋涡同裙摆的旋转的类似并非偶然,它们都遵循着宇宙的本质。这种本质存于我们的内在。我们认为美的事物总是与我们内心的感觉相吻合。很多时候,我们都生活在愿望和理性的矛盾中。当我们发现美的时候,矛盾消失,内在和外在形象获得了统一。

22. 在我还未推论得太远之前,让我将生物学提到讨论中来。很可能基因在我们追求美的过程中起到了重要作用。或许我们在男人、女人身上或在艺术、风景、天气中发现的某些美的特征正是那些使得我们的祖先得以生存下来的事物。换言之,如果早期人类中某些人在看到驯鹿、闻到暴风雨的气息、听到潺潺流水或触摸到优美的腰身时都不会激动兴奋,那么,他们带着毫无感知的基因消亡似乎公平合理。

23. 有谁能怀疑生物学以及文化在培养我们的感知力方面所起到的重要作用呢? 令男人、女人发现对方迷人从而走到一起的吸引力,是在漫长的进化过程中精明估算生育能力和体魄是否强壮而形成的一种性感选择。记得在读初一时,一个春雨天,我很诧异地意识到我邻座的女孩突然很强烈地吸引了我。我的注意力牢牢地固定在了玛丽·凯的金色长发上。卷曲的波浪披在椅背上,发梢扫过她绿色格子裙下鼓起的臀部,这是我从未注意到的。虽然现在我意识到那时她的确很美,但在 12 岁的年纪,我不会认为玛丽·凯很美。那时我也不会承认我的遥远祖先在我的初始欲望中扮演了一定的角色,虽然现在我能够听到他们的低语:选择浓密的头发,选择丰满的臀部。

24. 如果我们坐车穿越郊区,观察一下占地好几英亩的起伏的草坪、点缀其间的树丛及偶尔出现的

池塘,我们所看到的不就是人类最早居住的非洲热带大草原的忠实翻版吗?在区域法许可的地方,展开的绿色中还会经常点缀着牧养动物,温顺肥壮,它们是还在奔跑的未来晚餐。在世界各地,从新德里到纽约,不论在绘画中或公园里,这种水塘、遮阳树和草地的组合随处可见。这一切看起来都好像我们是在依照深存于我们基因中的一幅丰饶大地的图画来塑造我们周围的环境。

25. 也许在任何一种情况下,比如在我们对爱人或自然环境的迷恋中,都会有一种生理上的吻合感,我们对外部世界的共鸣和热切兴奋的反应也融入其中,这就是我所谓的美。然而我坚信除了进化作用之外,这种兴奋中还包含了一样更为重要的东西。否则,我们如何解释,天性中会对每一个性感女子都有强烈愿望的男士,为何还会日复一日地受到同一个女子的吸引?而我又为何要在庭院中种上无法食用的花?

26. 不论我们追溯远古到多远,我们都能找到对设计充满热情的证明——罐钵外部的装饰、衣服上的串珠及洞穴顶部的彩绘。人类遗址上曾发现过 30,000 万年前的骨制的笛子。因而,我们用有韵律的呼吸回应大地的呼吸;我们用创造的美回应发现的美。我们的耳朵可以很精确地探知食肉动物或猎物的行踪,但这并无法解释为什么我们在听到格历高利圣歌或德尔塔布鲁斯时会感动。我们的眼睛也许比猿略为进化,可以发现任何猎物而毫发无损,但这也很难解释为什么我们会着迷于萨格椅的线条、丢勒的雕刻或木星的图片。

27. 事实上,木星是九月星空最亮的一颗,昏暗中闪烁在东南上空。在没有望远镜来显示行星的环绕云层和月亮的光晕时,这样的光亮一定使我们的祖先目眩。我们得知许多文化中的观星人都记载了星体运行,是因为他们的观察记录流传了下来。他们如此忠诚地观察是因为他们相信行星及恒星控制他们的命运,还是因为他们沉迷于夜晚的肃穆?我无法代表他们发言。但是,当我通过肉眼、双目望远镜或哈勃望远镜传来的放大图片来观察木星时,我并不是在为早晨的天气状况寻找线索,也不是在寻求一种神圣的心境,这正如我凝视女儿的照片并不是为了研究我的基因的未来一样,我只是在寻找纯粹的观看喜悦。

28. 已淡入记忆洋溢着幸福的婚礼上,在我和伊娃沿过道步入大厅时,我不时地抬头看她,竭力使我笨拙的脚步跟上她优雅的步伐。投在她脸上的光透过面纱散发着光芒。人群中轻微的躁动,如拍击鹅卵石的波浪,伴我们走向神坛。这一过程似乎很漫长,却又好像结束得太快。准备好抑或是未准备好,我们已经站在了中心舞台上,穿深蓝色的伴娘在左侧,马修和穿黑色的伴郎在右侧。我的心脏剧烈跳动,就像袋中的小鸟。

29. 牧师——我们曾经的独木舟旅行向导,先把目光投向我们两人,使我们的心绪平静下来。然后,他高声问肃静的人群:“谁来佑福这一婚姻?”

30. 我吞咽了一下确认我的喉咙还在,然后大声说:“家庭佑福这一婚姻。”

31. 我迈步退后,将伊娃的手从我的臂弯抬起,放在马修的臂弯处。我们昨天排练时,这个动作看起来那么微小,而今天它却显得意义重大。这样,我的这部分角色结束了。我离开神坛,小心地绕过伊娃长长的拖裙,回到鲁思身旁我的座位上。鲁思正用手帕擦拭着眼睛。我握住她没拿手帕的那只手——灵巧而又熟悉。还有一个月我们就已结婚 30 年整。我想同她再次步入婚姻的殿堂。尽管我的心一直在狂乱地跳动,我并没有感觉到想哭。现在我坐在我的新娘身旁,听伊娃声音呜咽地诵读誓词。当我听到那声呜咽,泪水涌了上来,但比泪水来得更快的是喜悦。

32. 从我认识或了解的科学家那里(包括伊娃和鲁思),我得出如下的判断:在追求自然法则的过程中,一个人很快就会发现美。“我不知道和你在落日中见到的是不是同一种美,”一个朋友告诉我,“但感受是一样的。”这位朋友是个物理学家,职业生涯中很长时间都在揭秘星体内部的玄妙。他给我讲述第一次领悟狄拉克量子作用方程式或爱因斯坦相对论方程式时的兴奋。“它们非常美,”他说,“你马上就看得出它们肯定正确,或至少接近真理。”我问他是什么使理论变得美丽。他答道:“简洁、对称、优雅和

力量。”

33. 大自然为什么会遵守这些美的原理？目前还没有明确答案。正如爱因斯坦所说，关于宇宙最难理解的就是它是可理解的。居住在一颗普通星球上的一种生命短暂的两足动物能够计算光速、列出原子结构或计算黑洞引力，是否难以想象？我们还远未了解世间的万物，但我们又的确对自然规律了解很多。一代又一代的人发现规律、验证规律，并吃惊地发现自然界认可这些规律。一名建筑师在薄脆的图纸上设计图案，而她的建筑在地震中可以岿然不动。我们将人造卫星发射到轨道用以在洲际间传递信息。我用来写字的机器包含着千百个对物质世界如何运转的洞悉，每一个迅速呈现在屏幕上的字母都证实了这一点。同时，我在通过镜片看屏幕，镜片遵循的是由牛顿首先详尽阐述的光学原理。

34. 牛顿相信，辨识宇宙的种种模式就是在追寻上帝的创造之手。今天多数的科学家认为造物者的概念是不一定的假说，或者认为这一概念无从考证。他们赞同牛顿提出的宇宙是由一系列连贯的法则统治的观点，同时，他们又无法说明这些特定的法则是如何开始统治世界的。一个人若不相信神圣造物者的存在，可以研究科学；一个人若不相信法则，却无法研究科学。

35. 我的青年时代一直在攀登数学的高峰。登上山坡的一半时，我摇摇晃晃地停下来，呼吸稀薄的空气，这时，距离我能够理解爱因斯坦或狄拉克的等式的高度还相差很远。如今，我可以加、减、乘，并在手边没有计算器的情况下做长除法；我还可以在急需的情况下做代数、几何，甚至三角几何。这便是我对数字语言了解的仅存硕果。然而，我依然记得匆匆瞥见的数学排列，醒目美丽，如满天繁星。

36. 在我试图描述美的时候，就会充分意识到语言的局限性。当然，语言也可以创造出自己的可爱之处，但是，它无法传达我们所领会到的世界的真正风采，正如照片也无法形象地捕捉山鹰的异常敏捷或超新星陨落时的威力。伊娃的婚礼相册仅仅体现了婚礼本身的些许光彩。图片和文字所能做的，只是让我们不要忘记那些激动人心、稍纵即逝的辉煌时刻。所以，我会一直写作。

37. 托马斯·默顿在观察中写道：“大自然中的一切都会带给我们天堂般的美妙感受。”大自然的鬼斧神工在不断上演，带给我们免费而又无穷尽的美。只是我们需要一定的素养才能体会到一些并不显而易见的美。原始大爆炸已过了150亿年左右，大爆炸的痕迹仍以背景辐射的形式存留在宇宙中间，只比绝对零度高几度。因此，我相信对美的感受是对宇宙中无处不在的秩序与能量的共鸣。测量背景辐射需要精密仪器；衡量美需要敏锐的智慧和五官。

38. 任何有视觉的人都会在看到一张面孔或一朵花时感受到喜悦。然而，一个人必须有一定的素养，才能体味数学、物理和对弈的美，才能领略大树结构的美、小鸟羽翼图案的美、吹笛子时呼吸颤动的美。人类历史上，年轻人常常从上辈人那里学会专注的素养。只有专注，我们才会充分欣赏从量子作用到百纳被的种种形态。

39. 这种专注带有明显的进化优势。因为，识别不同的形态，帮助了我们的祖先选择伴侣、寻找食物和躲避食肉兽。所有的物种都有同样的进化优势，然而，唯独人类能够作曲、玩字谜游戏、用石头雕刻塑像、测绘时间空间地图。是我们将进化所需的精明观察发展到了极端，还是我们不经意间取得了宇宙运行和我们的大脑思维间的高度一致？

40. 我确信美不仅是生理需求，也不仅仅是文化惯例。它无时无刻不在我们的身边和体内流动，形式丰富多样，早已远远超出了单纯进化的需要。这并不是说美同生存没有关系，相反，它同生存密切相关。美与我们同源并滋养着我们。美令我们想起花的枝干使枝叶繁茂的塑造力和我们双手的塑造力。美使我们再次相信大自然的慷慨。美在我们的小智慧和宇宙的大智慧间建立了一种亲密感，从而使我们确信，人类就是为了在这宏伟的地球上和神奇的宇宙中精彩生活而生。我在这种亲密中找到了生命的意义和希望的无穷源泉。宇宙中，美无处不在，也许的确需要我们的关注和回应，需要我们敏锐的双眼、充盈的心和丰富的头脑，唯此，创世才圆满。





## 五、练习答案及详解

### I. Vocabulary

A. Look up the following words and phrases. Select the meaning that best suits the sentence in which each appears.

1. to become or cause to become clear and definite
2. the birth of the universe and everything in it
3. in a favorable sense, suggesting an unassuming character in which there is an absence of pride and assertiveness
4. (as of a feeling or tears) to rise to the surface, ready to overflow
5. to put (plants, seeds, etc.) in the ground to grow
6. opinion, standards or life philosophy
7. (*colloq*) in a precarious or vulnerable position; at a disadvantage
8. essential quality
9. to dash apart, as a wave in the shore

### IV. Questions on Appreciation

A. How many sections can the essay be divided into? What is the main idea of each section? Work out an outline.

- |                         |  |
|-------------------------|--|
| Part I (Paras 1—13)     | Eva's wedding and the author's feeling   |
| Part II (Paras 14—17)   | the same kind of thrill coming from observation of space, so the feeling is not unique |
| Part III (Paras 18—21)  | beauty subjective or objective existence   |
| Part IV (Paras 22—27)   | the role of biology  |
| Part V (Paras 28—31)    | returning to the wedding scene   |
| Part VI (Paras 32—35)   | theories as a reflection of beauty   |
| Part VII (Para 36)      | words and photos inadequate to convey the feeling experience                           |
| Part VIII (Paras 37—39) | training needed to perceive beauty   |
| Part IX (Para 40)       | concluding remark  |

B. Find out the difference in meaning and/or connotation of the underlined words in the following three groupings.

1. glow *v.* : to show brilliant, conspicuous color  
*n.* : light given off as a result of great heat  
*n.* : brightness of skin color, as from emotion  
 gleam *n.* : reflected brightness, as from a polished surface; a faint light  
 spark *n.* : any flash or sparkle of light like a glowing bit of matter thrown off by a fire  
 glimmer *n.* : a faint, flickering light  
 shimmer *v.* : to shine with an unsteady light, forming a wavering image, as by reflection from waves of water  
 flicker *v.* : to shine unsteadily as a candle in the wind  
 blaze *v.* : to shine brightly, like a flame

dazzle *v.* : to overpower or dim the vision with very bright light or moving lights

glare *n.* : a steady, unpleasant, bright light

radiance *n.* : the state of sending out rays of light; the state of shining brightly

2. glide *v.* : to move smoothly and easily, as in skating

stagger *v.* : to move unsteadily, characterized by a loss of balance and failure to maintain a fixed course

dash *v.* : to move swiftly or impetuously

skip *v.* : to spring forward lightly and quickly, leaping on alternate feet

stumble *v.* : to walk or go in an unsteady or awkward manner, as from age, weakness, etc.

skim *v.* : to move along swiftly and lightly over a surface

stride *v.* : to walk with long steps, esp. in a vigorous or swaggering manner

process *v.* : to go in an orderly manner

chase *v.* : to follow quickly and persistently in order to catch or harm

scramble *v.* : to move with difficulty, hastily or awkwardly

3. glimpse *n.* : a very brief passing look, sight or view

*v.* : to catch a brief, quick view of, as in passing

glance *v.* : to cast a momentary look

*n.* : a quick or brief look

gaze *v.* : to look intently and steadily, as in wonder, delight, or interest

stare *v.* : to look fixedly with wide-opened eyes, as in surprise, curiosity, abstraction, etc.

C. Comment on the diction, image, rhetorical device or tone of the following.

1. (1) A crow with black feathers among white doves will present a sharp contrast. The author is in black and is stiff and awkward and maybe even appear quite out of place in the suit among those women dressed in silk with bright colors. The contrast is as sharp as the contrast between a crow and doves.

(2) Simile is used here. The author maybe is thinking of patriotic parades in which war veterans may march even if crippled by their wounds. If he were to appear that way, it would mar the elegance of this marriage ceremony and his march down the aisle with his daughter.

(3) Metaphors are used here and the basic concept is the cooling of heat.

(4) The word "like" is used in this sentence to introduce simile.

(5) The strong light is compared to "fierce glare".

(6) Again simile is used here.

(7) The image in the metaphor is carried through here, since "chord" and "notes" both refer to music.

(8) Metaphor is used.

(9) Metaphor is used.

(10) Simile is used in the sentence.

(11) Simile is used in the sentence.

(12) Metaphor is used here.

(13) Metaphor is used.

2. Inversion is used in (1)(2)(3).

3. (1) Parallel structure is used.

(2) The whole paragraph is very poetic. It comes from three devices:

- a. image: the sheen of moonlight in the needles of a white pin  
     icicle's jeweled tip (the word "jeweled" created an image of shining light)  
     the purl of water over stone (the image of murmuring water)
- b. choice of words: spinning galaxies and trembling bouquets (comparison)  
     an answering vibration (emotion echoing the outside world)  
     as grand as... , as humble as... (all inclusive, from very large to very small)
- c. anaphora

Parallelism is used in (3)(4)(5).

The sentence is parallel and balanced in (6)(7)(8)(9).

4. (1) A contrast of feeling is made in the sentence: "forever" as against "over too soon".
- (2) Paradox is used in the sentence. If it is incomprehensible, it cannot be comprehensible; if it is comprehensible, it cannot be called incomprehensible. Yet Einstein put the two together and the idea does not seem illogical.
- (3) Paradox is used in the sentence. The fact of not knowing everything and yet understanding a great deal seems paradoxical.

#### V. Explain the following in your own words, bringing out any implied meanings.

1. In wedding ceremony, time seems to go slowly so everybody, even a fool, could observe things clearly and see how wonderful they are.
2. My daughter may feel she has missed something when she was young. If so, I wish I could make compensation to her now, before she is married.
3. With the passing of time, you will feel a bit more detached from the happy event and then you can recall the things more clearly and they will stick in your mind.
4. The clothes made for the occasion of wedding, though kept in a box specially treated to repel moths, will have a moldy smell as time goes on; flowers will gradually lose their color and die and even the brightest day will grow dim.
5. I firmly believe that true beauty is not shallow and it exists not because we think it exists but because it actually exists outside of us.
6. An evolutionary response cannot adequately explain why there is this physical feeling of excitement. There must be another more important reason—beauty.
7. If you try to study the law of nature, very soon you will encounter beauty. The study of the law of nature will inevitably lead to the discovery of beauty.
8. Since the birth of the universe, everything in it has revealed its own wonder continuously. Unlike ordinary commodities which cost money and whose supply is limited, beauty is free and inexhaustible.
9. When God created us, He also created beauty.
10. This close relationship makes us see life is meaningful and worth living. Human beings are exactly and wonderfully made for life on Earth. We are powerful. We can appreciate beauty. We have a bright future.

#### VI. Translate the following into Chinese.

1. ……如果我们追溯宇宙的起源到原始大爆炸, 我们就会发现众多的事物逐渐合并成简单的事物, 而且越往前追溯, 事物就变得越简单, 最后到创世那一刻时, 就只剩下那一片浑然一体的能量了。
2. 我还认为这种原始的能源在继续给我们提供能量, 直接地是通过上帝创造的万物, 间接地是通过美的

感受。

3. 我研究类星体生成星系的图像,这些星系如同玩具风车一样旋转,超新星周围是一条条由星体遗骸组成的闪闪发光的带状物。我一直不断地探索宇宙的开始,一直追溯到你、我、我的女儿、她的新婚丈夫以及天空中大量闪闪发光的星星汇合成最初的原始大耀光。
4. 引发激情的也许来自倾泻在北美松针上的月光,或是蜻蜓尾部变幻不定的色彩……它可能来自小鸟的歌唱、巴赫的奏鸣曲或流水淌过石块的潺潺声。它可能来自一行诗……面包的香味、树枝或琴弓的摇摆。它可能来自高山日出的壮观场面,也可能仅仅起自不起眼的冰柱晶莹的柱尖,但不管是何种起因,每次我心中都会涌起同样的感激和惊叹。
5. 感官给我带来的激情是否让我对这个世界有所了解呢?是美揭示了小自我和大世界之间的紧密关系还是由于我追求事物的内在含义而主观地这么认为呢?
6. 如果美可以在画板上再现,就一定不会是肤浅的吗?如果美就像灯泡那样,可以开与关,就一定不会是一种错觉吗?
7. 如果我们坐车穿越郊区,观察一下占地好几英亩的起伏的草坪、点缀其间的树丛及偶尔出现的池塘,我们所看到的不就是人类最早居住的非洲热带大草原的忠实翻版吗?
8. 因此,我相信对美的感受是对宇宙中无处不在的秩序与能量的共鸣。

# Lesson Twelve

## The Hot Gates



### 一、课文导读

#### (一) 内容梗概

The Hot Gates 来自希腊语 Thermopylae, 中译为德摩比利隘口, 俗称温泉关。温泉关的西面是险峻陡峭、无路可攀的高山, 东面是一片直通海岸的沼泽地, 只在中间有一条可容一辆战车过往的通道。住在希腊中部的佛西斯人为了防止住在希腊北部的帖萨利亚人的入侵, 在路上修了一堵墙, 只允许行人从墙上开的门洞出入。由于有温泉从墙边流过, 故名温泉关。

温泉关之战(公元前 480 年), 是希波战争中的一场战役。波斯国王薛西斯一世率军 50 万、战舰千艘进攻希腊, 迅速占领北希腊, 南下逼近温泉关隘口。斯巴达国王利奥尼达斯率希腊联军约 7,000 人, 率先扼守地势险要的温泉关。薛西斯连续发动进攻, 但因地势狭窄, 大军无法展开阵势而收效甚微。但两天后, 靠当地向导的指引, 他以精锐部队偷袭关后。利奥尼达斯在腹背受敌的情况下, 命令联军主力撤退, 自己率领 300 名斯巴达人殿后, 最终全部战死。波斯军也以付出两万人的沉重代价才攻破温泉关。鲁迅先生曾发表《斯巴达之魂》一文, 称赞说: “巍巍乎温泉门之峡, 地球不灭, 则终存此斯巴达武士之魂”。

课文中, 英国作家威廉·戈尔丁以他独特的视角、敏锐的洞察力和栩栩如生的描述将我们带回 2,500 多年前的古战场, 共同追忆当年利奥尼达斯和他的部下英勇战斗的往事。

#### (二) 背景知识

##### 1. Temple of Apollo

The temple of Apollo was first built around the 7th century B. C. by the two legendary architects Trophonios and Agamedes. It was rebuilt after a fire in the 6th century B. C. and was named “Temple of Alcmeonidae” in tribute to the noble Athenian family that oversaw its construction with funds from all over Greece and foreign emperors. This temple was also of the Doric order and had 6 columns at the front, and 15 columns at the flanks.

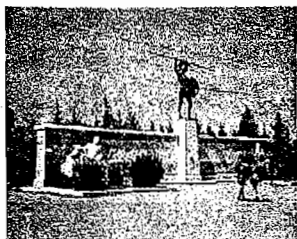


Temple of Apollo

##### 2. The Bronze Statue of Leonidas

This modern memorial to the men who died defending the pass at Thermopylae was erected in 1955. The Bronze Statue of Leonidas was modeled after a fifth-century marble statue presently housed in the

Sparta museum. The marble base of the memorial is composed of relieves showing scenes from the battle and bronze plaques bearing famous epigrams inspired by the conflict.



The Bronze Statue of Leonidas

## 二、词汇与短语

### (一) 词汇

① **athwart** /ə'θwɔ:t/ *adv. & prep.*

obliquely across (sth.), from one side to the other side 横跨着;横穿过;从一边到另一边

—The ship was anchored athwart the harbor mouth. 轮船横着停泊在港口里。

② **brassy** /'brɑ:si/ *adj.*

1) like a brass musical instrument in sound; blaring 刺耳的;嘹亮的 【同义】harsh

2) like brass in color 黄铜色的

③ **brutal** /'bru:tɪl/ *adj.*

1) harsh; rigorous 粗糙的;冷酷的

2) cruel; merciless 残忍的;野蛮的 【同义】savage

④ **clamber** /'klæmbə/ *v.*

to climb clumsily, esp. by using the hands as well as the feet 攀爬;攀登

—The children clambered over the rocks. 孩子们吃力地爬过了岩石。

⑤ **contour** /'kɒntʊə/ *n.*

outward curve of sb./sth. thought of as defining its shape 轮廓;外形

—the smooth contour of a sculpture 雕塑的平滑的轮廓线

⑥ **colossal** /kə'lɒsəl/ *adj.*

very large, huge 巨大的;庞大的 【同义】immense

—a colossal building 巨大的建筑物

⑦ **evocative** /i'vɒkətɪv/ *adj.*

that evokes or is able to evoke memories or feelings, etc. 引起回忆的;唤起情感的

—That smell is evocative of school. 这种气味使人回想起学校来。

⑧ **fracture** /'fræktʃə/ *v.*

(to cause sth.) to break or crack (使某物)折断;破碎

—Her leg fractured in two places. 她的腿有两处骨折。

⑨ **glossy** /'ɡlɒsi/ *adj.*

smooth and shiny 光滑的;光亮的

—glossy hair, photographs 有光泽的头发、照片

【派生】glossiness *n.* 光滑;光亮

⑩ **grandeur** /'grændʒə/ *n.*

greatness; impressiveness 伟大;壮丽;壮观 【同义】splendor; magnificence

—the grandeur of the Swiss alps 瑞士的山上草场的壮丽景色

⑪ **grandiose** /'grændiəʊs/ *adj.*

planned on a large scale; (intended to seem) imposing 庞大的;浮夸的

—grandiose building, style, etc. 华而不实的建筑、风格等

⑫ grope /grəʊp/ *v.*

to feel or search about as one does in the dark 摸索;探索

—to grope for the door-handle 摸索着找门把手

⑬ heath /hi:θ/ *n.*

area of uncultivated land 荒地;荒野 【同义】moorland

⑭ haunt /haunt/ *v.*

to be in (a place) often 常到(某处)

—This is one of the restaurants I used to haunt. 这是我以前常去的一家餐馆。

⑮ inarticulate /ˌɪnɑːˈtɪkjələt/ *adj.*

unexpressed or unable to express 未表达出的;非言语表达的 【反义】articulate

—Her actions were an inarticulate cry for help. 她的行动是无声的呼救。

⑯ levy /ˈlevi/ *v.*

to collect by authority or force; to impose sth. 征收;强加某事物

—a departure tax levied on all travelers 向所有旅客征收的离境税

⑰ patently /ˈpeɪntntli/ *adv.*

clearly, unmistakably 明显地;明白无误地 【同义】obviously

—It was patently obvious that he was lying. 显然他在撒谎。

⑱ peer /piə/ *v.*

to look closely or carefully, esp. as if unable to see well 仔细看

—to peer into the mist 向雾中张望

⑲ pierce /piəs/ *v.*

1) (of sharp pointed instruments) to go into or through (指尖物)刺入;刺透

—The arrow pierced his shoulder. 那支箭刺入他的肩膀。

2) to make a hole in or through 扎眼;穿孔

—She had her ears pierced. 她扎了耳朵眼。

⑳ pungent /ˈpʌndʒənt/ *adj.*

having a sharp or strong taste or smell 有刺激味的;辛辣的 【同义】stinging; tangy

—a pungent odor 刺鼻的气味

㉑ ribald /ˈrɪbld/ *adj.*

humorous in a vulgar, obscene, or disrespectful way (以粗俗、下流或无理的方式)幽默的

—ribald humor, talk 粗俗可笑的幽默、谈话

【派生】ribaldry *n.* 粗俗可笑的语言或行为

㉒ scruffy /ˈskrʌfi/ *adj.*

(*informal*) dirty and untidy 邋遢的 【同义】shabby 【反义】decent

—You can't go to a job interview looking so scruffy. 你去求职面试不能这样邋里邋遢的。

㉓ seep /si:p/ *v.*

to flow out slowly through small openings 渗出;渗漏

—Oil is seeping out through a crack in the tank. 油箱的裂缝漏出油来了。

㉔ sheepish /ˈʃi:pɪʃ/ *adj.*

(feeling) foolish and embarrassed through shame 羞怯的;局促不安的 【同义】meek; timid

—a sheepish look, expression, smile 腼腆的样子、表情、微笑

25 spit /spit/ *v.*

to put a spit through (a piece of meat, etc.) 用烤肉扦刺穿

—a spitted whole lamb 串在烤扦上的整只羔羊

26 spurt /spɜ:t/ *v.*

1) (of liquids, flame, etc.) to come out in a sudden burst (指液体、火焰等) 喷出; 涌出 【同义】 gush

—water spurting from a broken pipe 从破裂的管子中喷出的水

2) to increase one's speed, effort, etc. suddenly 突然加速、用力; 冲刺

—The runner spurted as he approached the line. 那赛跑选手在接近终点线时加速冲刺。

27 sullen /'sʌlən/ *adj.*

silent, bad-tempered and gloomy; dark and gloomy 闷闷不乐的; 坏脾气的; 阴沉的 【同义】 dismal

—All my attempts to amuse the children were met with sullen scowls. 我想尽办法哄这些孩子玩, 但是他们总是满脸不高兴。

【派生】 sullenness *n.* 阴沉

28 thump /θʌmp/ *v.*

to beat or strike or knock heavily 狠打; 重击 【同义】 punch; pound

—She thumped the cushion flat. 她把垫子捶平了。

29 vanguard /'væŋɡɑ:d/ *n.*

1) the vanguard: leading part of an advancing army or fleet 先头部队; 先头舰队; 先锋

2) (fig) leaders of a movement or fashion (运动或时尚的) 先驱; 先锋

—researchers in the vanguard of scientific progress 处于科学进步前沿的研究人员

30 wryly /'raɪli/ *adv.*

ironically 揶揄地

—She watched their fumbling efforts wryly. 她看着他们手忙脚乱地瞎使劲儿, 不觉莞尔。

## (二) 短语

### ① a pain in the neck

annoying or boring person or thing 令人厌烦的人或事物

—He's a real pain in the neck! 他真令人生厌!

### ② in any event/at all events

whatever happens; in any case 在任何情况下; 无论如何

—In any event, the worst that she can do is say "no". 不管怎样, 她大不了就是说个“不”字。

### ③ thick with sth./sb.

densely covered or filled with things or people 布满或充满某物; 挤满人

—The building was thick with reporters. 大楼里挤满了记者。

### ④ to strip sb. of sth.

to take away (property, honors, etc.) from sb. 剥夺某人的(财产、荣誉等)

—The general was stripped of his rank. 这位将军被免去了军阶。

### ⑤ to make of

to understand; to conclude to be the meaning or character of 理解...的意义或性质

—What do you make of it all? 你明白那都是什么意思吗?



**⑥to pore over**

to read or study carefully 钻研; 审视

—She spends hours poring over her books. 她用了几个小时阅读她的那些书。

**⑦to fuse with**

to join (sth.) or become joined by means of heat (加热) 连接某物; 熔合; 结合

—to fuse one piece of wire with another 熔合两根金属丝

**⑧to make a stand**

to be ready to resist, fight, argue, etc. 准备抵抗、格斗、争论等

—to make a stand against the enemy 摆开架势迎击敌人

**⑨in due course/form**

at the appropriate time, in proper form 在适当时机; 以适当的方式

—Your request will be dealt with in due course. 你的要求将在适当时机予以处理。

**⑩beyond all argument**

unmistakably 毫不含糊地

—The theory is beyond all argument. 这一理论无可争议。

**三、课文注释****①As Greek food goes, I was lucky. (Para 2)**

The statement implies that Greek food, especially Greek food in a provincial town, is generally not good or tasty. But he was lucky enough to get something much better than usual.

**②So I ordered Easter lamb in the certainty of knowing what I would get; and it was so. (Para 2)**

I knew that Easter lamb was tasty so I asked for a portion and the roast lamb was really good.

**③They say you cannot drink Greek water without getting typhus, but I did. (Para 3)**

People say that water in Greece is seriously contaminated and if you drink such water, you are most likely to get typhus. I drank Greek water but I did not get typhus.

**④Sitting beneath a tree, and drinking my Demestica, I thought about Athens and Persia... so that the Greeks call it the Hot Gates. I thought of myself too... (Para 5)**

I recalled two things when I sat beneath a tree, drinking Demestica: one was the battle at the Hot Gates about 2,500 years before, the second was his lengthy preparations for the visit and the task of reconstruction of the battle and of understanding the significance of the battle.

The author uses contrast as the method to present the past and the present, the historical event and the task he undertook.

**⑤... (she) had an odd knack of encouraging cities which ought to bow to the King of Kings to do the same. (Para 6)**

She had a clever and unusual way of persuading other city-states to follow her example and refuse to surrender to the advancing Persian army.

**knack**: ability to do sth. easily or cleverly 妙诀; 本领

**⑥... who watched one another as much as they watched the enemy. (Para 12)**

The troops were not united. They were suspicious of each other's willingness to fight and guarded against one another just as they guarded against the invading army.

**⑦The track that summer was thick with dusty messengers... (Para 12)**

People carrying all kinds of messages were busy traveling from one city-state to another.

**⑧In any event, with Xerxes only a few miles away... and small groups at that. (Para 12)**

The city-states of Greece only sent small groups to hold the pass because they did not trust each other, fearing that other city-states might betray them or let them bleed while reserving their own troops. at that; all things considered

**⑨Nature has not done her best here for the story of that battle. (Para 15)**

The physical feature of the place is not imposing. Such a setting does not match the significance of the battle.

**⑩If you go to the Hot Gates, take some historical knowledge and your imagination with you. (Para 15)**

When you visit the Hot Gates, the place does not appear imposing or dramatic and it does not seem to be a likely site for such a historic event. Therefore, in order to reconstruct the scene of 2,500 years ago, you need imagination and knowledge of history.

**⑪... who had to do as they were told but knew better than their leaders... (Para 18)**

These soldiers had to carry out orders of their leaders although they were wise enough to know that these orders should not be carried out.

It was typical of Greek democracies that citizens challenged the authority of their leaders.

**⑫Then there had come a flash and glitter from the flank of the mountain across the valley. (Para 18)**

Then suddenly the Persian army emerged.

The "flash and glitter" stands for the weapons in the hands of the invading army. This is metonymy.

**⑬Mark that Leonidas did not know how Athens needed thirty years to blossom... as he gazed across the plain. (Para 19)**

The author pointed out that the only possible reason that Leonidas decided to hold the pass was his strong love for honor as a soldier, the highest value in Sparta. It was not because he wanted Athens to flourish and shine.

**⑭Soon there was nothing to see but rising clouds of white dust, pierced and speckled with the flicker of steel. (Para 20)**

The clouds of white dust covered such a wide area that no other thing could be seen. But people could still detect the weapons carried by the soldiers because they could see the flicker of steel in the dust.

**⑮They were bathing in the sulphur springs and combing their hair. (Para 24)**

According to the Greek historian Herodotus, the Spartans always paid special attention to their hair in preparing for a difficult battle.

**⑯Xerxes waited four days—and nothing happened. (Para 25)**

Xerxes expected the Greek defenders to give in, to flee, in face of such a huge army.

**⑰The men in the pass would not recognize the obvious. (Para 25)**

The Greek soldiers holding the pass refused to admit defeat despite the vast numbers facing them.

**⑱If I could climb cliffs less easily now, it was possible that I could understand war better. (Para 29)**

I was no longer so young and energetic as I had been twenty years ago so I might not be able to climb cliffs easily. But I might have an advantage which I couldn't have had twenty years ago. That is, I took part in World War II and I knew what war was like and what war meant. My understanding of the war 2,500 years ago might be deeper.

19 The cliffs had a brutal grandeur. (Para 30)

The cliffs gave an impression of rough and coarse splendor.

20... sudden wafts of spice that took the back of the nostrils in a sneezy grip. (Para 30)

Waves of pungent smell were suddenly inhaled and made me sneeze continuously.

21 The column of dust diminished. (Para 36)

The fighting ended and the pass was taken.

"The column of dust" is used as a metaphor, standing for the fighting.

22 A little of Leonidas lies in the fact that I can go where I like and write what I like. (Para 37)

The freedom enjoyed in England and other Western countries might not have developed if the Persians had won, thereby subjecting Greece to the domination of a large despotic empire whose values were not those which led to the development of the West.



#### 四、课文译文

### 温泉关

威廉·戈尔丁

1. 我在拉米亚吃了午饭。那是色萨利的一个地方城市,向南去雅典要路经此地。大多数人途经拉米亚都不停留。我之所以停留是为了追寻波斯人入侵的路线,追寻 2,500 年前的那一次壮观的联合行动。

2. 我由北向南,途经奥林匹斯山和坦波山谷,我手中的古希腊地图并没有显示拉米亚;所以当正午意想不到地来到小城,我备感欣喜,食欲也随之而来。就希腊菜肴而言,我是幸运的。正值四月初的时候,家家户户的外面,人们都正围在火边烤复活节羔羊。他们将羔羊穿在铁签上,不停地在炭火上转动着这看着不大招人喜欢的、光溜溜的东西,这要好几个小时。我点了羔羊肉,知道味道肯定会不错,事实上的确不错。

3. 我要了茴香烈酒作开胃酒,我把酒滴进一个装有水的平底酒杯来喝。这酒品起来像甘草,看起来像牛奶。人们说在希腊喝水不可能不被感染斑疹伤寒,我喝了,却没有。喝茴香烈酒没有其他的方法。如果在希腊一个地方城市你不喝茴香烈酒作为开胃酒的话,那你就只好不喝。

4. 拉米亚的市中心广场炎热又满是灰尘。一家餐馆的桌子挤在人行道上几棵小树的树荫里。我没让侍者上当地的葡萄酒。那种叫瑞滋那的酒,有一股刺鼻的松脂味,味道像除漆剂,喝过一次就永远不想再喝。你必须坚持要岛上产的葡萄酒,比如柔多斯,那天我要的是德莫斯帝卡,很喜欢。

5. 公元前 480 年,波斯军队在进攻雅典途中,就是在这附近受阻数日。拉米亚城南,斯波西奥斯河穿过当年的入侵路线,又将山谷一分为二,使得路只能迂回地修在谷地另一侧拐角处的峭壁与大海之间。坐在树下,喝着德莫斯帝卡,我想起了雅典与波斯以及从峭壁间汩汩喷涌而出的温泉。温泉涌出之地,正是路最狭窄之处,因此希腊人称之为温泉关。我也想到自己——为圆 20 年前的梦想,揣着古希腊地图,按图索骥来到这里;现在我必须面对的使命是如何试着理解这一段历史。

6. 我进入拉米亚城时,就看到了斯波西奥斯河谷,也看到了河谷对面 5,000 英尺高的巍巍岩石,矗立于我与雅典之间。雅典是辉煌的雅典,雅典的历史闪耀着智慧的光芒。然而,当王者之王——波斯国王薛西斯率大军进攻雅典时,雅典还没有进入她的辉煌时期。当时雅典只是薛西斯身上的一根小

刺——一个坚持独立自主的小城,并神奇般地使本应向王者之王俯首称臣的其他城市也争相效仿。

7. 30年后,雅典进入了空前绝后的辉煌,并极大地推动了人文科学向前发展。可是当时,她却是薛西斯的心头之痒。王者之王率当时世界上最伟大的军队在她的最后关口做好了进攻的准备。

8. 我用一个很小的杯子喝着土耳其咖啡——一种令人愉快的  $\frac{1}{3}$  液体、 $\frac{2}{3}$  泥状物的混合物——我还喝了希腊“上等白兰地”。如果你是以前香烈酒开始的,就不要以希腊“上等白兰地”结束。即便中间隔着德莫斯帝卡,两者碰在一起就像干柴烈火,燃起的火焰一时间不会熄灭。

9. 正午的烈日下,希腊人都明智地午睡去了。喝过了“上等白兰地”,我(典型的疯狗与英国人)在烈日下出发了。我在山谷北侧的一棵橄榄树下坐下来,薛西斯或许也曾在此驻足,考虑进攻前要解决的小问题。我的问题和他的正相反:我需要重现他的问题。斯波西奥斯河沿山谷冲下来很多泥浆,致使农田已向海边推进了好几英里。原来这里只是一个狭窄的隘口,现在已宽到可以通公路和铁路,农田一直延伸到山的拐角处。

10. 我返回取车,接着开车进入小河谷,又穿过平原。一条新的汽车道横穿平原,转弯处正是悬崖和大海间温泉关的旧址。这是一条土路,没有铺路面。在后视镜中,我可以看到身后汽车扬起的白色灰尘飘在空中,最后落在庄稼上。

11. 温泉关很荒凉。我开车到一条大道上,看到树木掩映中的几栋挨在一起的简陋建筑。我开车进去,如我所料,空无一人。我猜想此处是一个温泉场,就我而言,在这样一个酷热的下午,任何一个想洗当地热硫磺温泉的人在这里都会受到欢迎。我坐在车里,感到历史没有在这块土地上留下任何创伤痕迹。

12. 在波斯人入侵时,海离峭壁还很近,这条狭窄的路上驻守着 7,000 名士兵——斯巴达人、底比斯人、洛克里斯人、塞斯比亚人、佛西斯人——他们像盯着敌人一样互相盯着。当波斯人向雅典进发时,南方的雅典正处于混乱中。应该怎么办? 应该信任谁? 应该相信什么? 那个夏天这条路上风尘仆仆的信使频繁地传递着消息——恳求帮助、指责、否认,或祈祷众神帮助。无论如何,薛西斯仅在几英里之遥,希腊最后还是集合起一支各阶层组成的联合部队来守关。从任何一个角度来看,各希腊城邦派来的军队都很小。每一个城邦都不愿削弱自身的武力。

13. 没有纪念碑留下吗? 我开车离开那条大道,终于发现一个没午睡的人。他是个牧羊人,手里拿着短棍和口哨。他的山羊群看起来像一堆杂乱、吵闹的角状物,身上是黑棕相间的毛,只在颈部和周边夹杂白色,黄色的眼睛凝视着,挑逗着。在希腊,你会经常看到这样的山羊群,就像你在英国的乡间常常会看到绵羊群一样。每头山羊身上都系着铃铛,汇成的乐声在山的另一边也可以依稀听到,这能令人想起希腊的声音。我向牧羊人询问温泉关,他一指路前方,然后就同羊群转向了另一边。山羊一只只向下奔去,散布在峭壁的一边。

14. 我继续驱车,很轻松地来到了温泉关。曾几何时这里狭窄到一次只容得下一辆马车。果然这儿有一个纪念碑,碑的位置与当年希腊联合部队坚守的隘口处于同一平面上。这是一个 19 世纪风格的纪念碑,很壮观,而且造价颇高。当年打仗时,碑所在的位置还淹在海水里。

15. 大自然并没有因为那场战争而给这个地方以特别的眷顾。坦波山谷是个更好的地方,另外在希腊还有百余个使人流连忘返的地方,有更引人注目的环境,有更鲜明的戏剧性。而在此地,带有一条汽车道痕迹的农田上布满了庄稼,安静地横在大海与峭壁间。山坡和峭壁干旱贫瘠,到处是露出地面的石头,只偶尔星星点点地点缀着灌木和花,阳光下散发着芳香。到处是尘土。通向悬崖的小河渠两边是一些低矮的石墙,看似古老,其实是农民和牧羊人近期所建。去温泉关,你需要带去的是你的历史知识和想象力。

16. 就在一条河渠的入口处,我见到一座小山丘。表面看起来它不会给人以深刻的印象。希腊人在上面种了些月桂树,但近期在希腊栽的月桂树长得都不是很好。不论是达芙尼温泉附近,马拉松田径场

上,还是在德尔斐神庙,那些月桂看起来都无精打采的。可是,就在这里,就在这山丘上,利奥尼达斯率领的联合部队和 300 名斯巴达士兵曾坚守隘口。

17. 四月的下午,在这片荒凉的土地上,耳畔唯一的声音是偶尔的一阵热风送来的月桂树叶的沙沙声;我置身于尘土飞扬的山丘旁,想着利奥尼达斯当时怎样看待这一切。像所有的斯巴达人一样,他是名忠诚的战士。但当时他会怎么想?当他举目北望,望向山谷那边现在拉米亚城所在的山头时,他一定听到了身后的争吵声。那是当时唯一一件确定的事——联合部队内部不和。

18. 你可以想象:昏暗沉闷的下午慢慢地过去,粗俗的语言、突然的喧闹、也许还有胳膊的碰撞声、那些不得不遵守命令却比自己上司更明智的士兵的牢骚、对任何事都没有信心的士兵的讥讽的笑声——之所以没有信心是因为隘口背后的希腊,包括雅典、斯巴达、底比斯及其他的城邦,与波斯作战的同时还在进行着内部的混战。很快,山谷那边山的侧翼显现出一片兵器的闪光。

19. 要知道利奥尼达斯并没有意识到 30 年后雅典会繁荣起来。斯巴达,那个沉闷残酷的城市,对他而言比雅典更为辉煌。可是,当波斯大军从多条小路源源不断地涌入谷地,他身后的联合部队也安静下来时,他很清楚是对自由的一种难以言表的悲壮热情使他坚守隘口。他凝视着平原的远处,就这样愤愤而又坚决地做出了决定。

20. 这样的一支军队是前所未有的。显然,它是势不可挡的。它从索普斯河两岸山间的小路,从山顶及阿罗珀和法拉若的海边小径向前推进。长长的人流一路压下,如洪水般淹没了平原(队伍中有穿鳞状护身甲的波斯人、带头巾的西斯人、披铜甲的亚述人、着裤装的西西里人、印度的弓箭手、穿艳丽服装的里海人和高跟皮靴的萨让几亚人)。很快,扬起的白色烟尘掩住了一切,只能见到星星点点兵器的闪光。如果 7,000 希腊士兵每人杀死 10 名敌人,波斯军队中还会剩下足够的人继续前进——而这仅仅是先遣部队。

21. 先遣部队身后,皮立翁山和奥萨山蜿蜒着的一队队人马,以及行进在佩奴斯河狭窄的峡谷和奥林匹斯山下宽阔的平原之间的,都是波斯战争机器的主体:穿长袍的阿拉伯人、穿豹皮的黑人;穿皮革的利比亚人、头上装饰狐狸皮的色雷斯人、手持牛皮盾牌的皮西底亚人、带木制头盔的哥西人;还有牛、马和骡子。共有 8 万弓箭骑兵、枪骑兵和挤在一起难以计数的战车。

22. 当来自各国的部队起步行进时,大地颤抖,声如擂鼓。当这支部队来到希腊一条湍急的河边,沿河岸排开几英里停下饮水时,河水骤减,变成了几池泥塘。这就是那支一整天都在源源不断地涌入并吞没了谷地的大军。终于,带着扬起的尘埃,他们在温泉关的狭窄隘口停下了。

23. 守关的人中没有人可以肯定其余的希腊人是否真的准备战斗。而且,如果关那边惊慌的城邦真的联合起来,他们能抵挡住这样一支军队吗?谁能相信那些可恶的底比斯人(塞斯比亚人,或洛克里斯人,这取决于说话人为何民族)真的准备战斗?只有 300 名斯巴达士兵冷静又欣喜。他们是战士,而且仅仅是战士,战斗是他们生命的意义所在。

24. 薛西斯扎下了帐篷,搭起了皇帝宝座。他派出了一名侦察兵。斯巴达人注意到了那名骑兵,却不予理会。他们正洗着硫磺温泉,梳着头。骑兵的马蹄声敲打着岸边的平地。他调转马头向斯巴达人,仅在一箭之遥勒住了缰绳。马后腿直立停在那里,他仔细地查看着握缰绳的双手下面隘口的两侧。随后,在尘埃与溅起的沙砾中转身离去。守关的人看到他回到一座闪着光亮的山头,下马汇报去了。

25. 薛西斯等了四天——什么也没发生。守关的人不肯承认看似明显的事情。第五天,他派出了一支军队,结果是希腊人轻松取胜。每一次波斯人将他们逼得后退时,希腊人却将关守得更紧。他派出了“仙人连”——他个人的保镖,也是他最精锐的部队。他们也被击败了。波斯人连续两天进攻,希腊人都成功阻击。

26. 据说薛西斯由于担心军心不稳,三次从皇帝宝座上跳了起来。现代历史学家们认为这不可信,我认为这没什么不可信的。他的几支部队间的信息交流方式很原始。谣言随时都可能让这些强征来的

野蛮人组成的军队作鸟兽散,匆忙逃进周围的高山。如果与希腊人直接交手的士兵逃跑了,恐慌就会像燎原之火一样蔓延开来。

27. 我从峭壁边走开,漫步到路边建在狭窄的底座上现代又宏伟的利奥尼达斯塑像旁。他头戴头盔,身披剑鞘,手持盾牌,在呼啸的风中挥动长矛,向群山发威。我想到他在那两天送出的消息。他需要增援——希腊人所能做到的尽可能多的增援。不过,当年夏天路上来来往往的尽是信使。

28. 然后,意料中不可避免的,叛徒从山翼出现了。

29. 我退后几步,抬头审视山崖。叛徒曾在一个夜晚带领一支波斯军队翻过那些山崖,这样,天亮时,他们就可以出现在7,000守关士兵的后翼。多年来,我一直向自己承诺要走一遍那条路线。20年前我就应该来到这里,不带钱,只带着背包和足够的呼吸。可是20年前,我正在另一场同样残酷的战争中作战。如果说我现在爬山没有20年前那么轻松,很可能我对战争的理解更深刻了。

30. 我开始攀登。峭壁悬崖使人感到一种粗犷的美。令我吃惊的是,峭壁显得十分无序,完全不是我在研究地图时所看到的那种平坦有序的地形。这儿的石头都是火成岩,石头的裂缝极不规则。我爬上一个小山坡,旁边都是叶片闪亮的带刺灌木,散发着奇怪的刺鼻味道。我突然发现我站在一堆石块上,石块下面的土层很薄。我抬头望了一下头顶上的黑洞,这些石头就是从那儿掉下来的。山羊的颈铃声从右边轻快地传来。灌木野草粗犷豪放,蜜蜂和娇美花朵伏在岩石上,小虫和白色、黄色、棕色的蝴蝶萦绕其间。突然,一阵刺鼻的味道直钻鼻孔,让我不停地打喷嚏。

31. 我伸手扶住岩石想让自己平稳一下,很快我就缩回了手,一条蜥蜴正躺在岩石上唯一的一片阳光里。我想从一边溜开,却踢到了一块石头。我的肩膀又惊动了另一条蜥蜴,它溜烟地从灌木丛中跑下去了。抬头望,我身后是闪亮的大海和尤比亚岛上皑皑的雪山,眼前是突兀的悬崖峭壁。我开始脚步不稳地摸索着下山。在草丛、花朵、灰尘和刺鼻的味道之间,我听到了一种声音,令我马上呆立不动。那是一种好像在花朵下面的枝叶间拉动绳子的声音。我看到一条柔软的躯体在光秃秃的岩石上滑过,股股爬动的身体上是绿、黑、棕色相间的斑纹。

32. 我自嘲地笑了笑。英国作家在灯光下仔细研究过的地图就算了吧。我并没有登到很高处,可是已经恍惚起来。我呆在那儿,双手紧紧抓住岩石,直到眼前岩石粗糙坚硬的表面变得清晰起来。

33. 突然间,岁月、书本和眼前的事物融会起来,使我领悟了希腊。朦胧中,我在某种程度上懂得了当利奥尼达斯在拂晓的晨光中抬头向那些山峰望去,看到稀疏的松林里露出兵器的闪动时,他是怎么想的。

34. 就在那一刻——以充分的想象力和紧握岩石的真实感,我可以肯定这一点——忧心忡忡、近乎绝望的利奥尼达斯心中有了明确的想法。最后的隘口已被叛徒出卖。如果隘口背后的希腊各地城邦不能联合起来进行抵抗,那么一切都完了。利奥尼达斯知道他还可以最后一次呼吁各城邦联合抵抗——一种绝望的呼吁,是沉闷而衷心的斯巴达人最适合做的一种呼吁。我汗水淋淋地翻过山崖的一侧,来到他做出这个决定的地点。他令部队中的大部分士兵撤退,却让斯巴达战士来到户外,他们会战斗到死,那是最适合他们的方式。波斯人如洪水般压了过来。斯巴达战士撤到一座小山丘上做最后的抵抗。

35. 波斯大军根本没把这放在眼里。对他们来说,那不过是山崖下平原一角可以轻松抹去的一小撮尘土。作为波斯人,你不会想到正是斯巴达战士做出的榜样,使得希腊各城邦在第二年的普拉地亚战役中并肩作战,一举击败并摧毁了波斯军队。波斯人、利奥尼达斯抑或是任何人都不会预见到,斯巴达战士的壮举为雅典赢得了30年的发展时间,从而赢得了雅典的辉煌、希腊的辉煌和人类文明的辉煌。

36. 尘埃几乎落定,战斗马上要结束了。王者之王下令大部队挥师向温泉关进发。最后的几名斯巴达战士还在竭尽全力战斗着。

37. 我从沉思中回过神来,发现自己正站在那座小山丘旁。那是利奥尼达斯的山丘,尘土飞扬,杂草丛生,有花朵、蜥蜴、石块,还有打蔫的月桂树和阵阵热风。现在我知道这里的确曾发生过什么。这不仅

仅是对于一个英勇牺牲的英雄事迹人们会在情感上做出直接的、毫不含糊的反应,就像酒杯一定会对小提琴的乐声做出回应一样。还因为,在那么久远的古代,那些斯巴达战士们站在了历史正确的一边。今天我可以随处走动,随心情写作,其中有利奥尼达斯一定的贡献。他为我们自由做出了贡献。

38. 沿蜿蜒不平的小路爬到小山顶,我见到新刻的石碑。石头是新的,碑文却是古代的。碑文以其文字的含蓄和简洁著称——虽已被译过上百次,但也只是传达大意而已:

39. “过客啊,

请带话给斯巴达人,

说我们没有辜负他们的期望,

战斗到死,

长眠在这里。”



## 五、练习答案及详解

### I. Vocabulary

A. Look up the following words and phrases. Select the meaning that best suits the sentence in which each appears.

1. to roast meat skewered in a slender rod over a fire
2. ability to do sth. easily and cleverly
3. all things considered
4. to visit often; to frequent
5. to understand
6. gloomy
7. to take a position for resistance
8. all chances for success are gone

### IV. Questions on Appreciation

1. The description of food and drink gives the reader an impression that it is a common tourist account. But the real purpose is already indicated in the first paragraph, i. e., “following the Persian invasion”. Throughout the essay, the reader will find a combination of the physical description of the place and the reconstruction of the battle at the Hot Gates. He sets up a contrast between the ordinary, everyday details of the town today with the heroic, larger-than-life events of 2,500 years ago.
2. Paras 15—17 serve as a transition from the description of the place to the description of the battle. The author first points out that the place is not striking, therefore people would not associate it with the great battle. He then mentions gullies and describes how at the mouth of one of these gullies he came across the mound next to which the Greek forces had held the pass. Then the author goes on to describe Leonidas and the battle.  
The author is very successful in switching between the present and the past. For example, in Para 33, he uses one word “clinging” to link the place up with the story. In the previous paragraph he writes, “I stayed there, clinging to the rock until...” In Para 33 he writes, “I was clinging to Greece herself.” In this way the scene and the story are fused.
3. He begins with a general statement: No man had ever seen anything like this army before. Then he

describes the routes of the advance of the army. This is followed by the metaphors: "lengthening rivers of men" and "in a flood". Then he uses mathematical calculation to bring out the vastness of the Persian army. Finally, he uses two analogies. One is related to sound, that is, when the army marched, the ground vibrated like the beating of a drum. The sound went on continuously and persistently. The other analogy is related to water. When the army stopped to drink, the swift flow of water was reduced to a few pools of mud.

4. The author describes the contrast between the soldiers from other Greek city-states and the 300 Spartans. The former were not sure whether they really meant to fight. Only the 300 Spartans were "calm and even cheerful" and knew what they would do. They were born and trained soldiers and they would fight and die like soldiers in defending a hopeless cause. The author also makes it clear that his visit to the Hot Gates is a kind of pilgrimage to honor the spirit of the dead Spartans.
5. The author ends his essay with a paragraph of the epitaph. The ending is very effective because it gives the reader the impression that the dying message of the Spartans echoes its laconic heroism down the centuries.
6. The author uses the combination of the present and the past, reality and imagination to make his recreation vivid. In this way, the actual current scene and his recreation are successfully fused into one.

**V. Explain the following in your own words, bringing out any implied meanings.**

1. I knew that Easter lamb was tasty so I asked for a portion and the roast lamb was really good.
2. People say that water in Greece is seriously contaminated and if you drink such water, you are most likely to get typhus. I drank Greek water but I did not get typhus.
3. She had a clever and unusual way of persuading other city-states to follow her example and refuse to surrender to the advancing Persian army.
4. The author is referring to the important role of Athens in history, the brilliant culture Athens stood for, and the great thinkers Athens produced.
5. The troops were not united. They were suspicious of each other's willingness to fight and guarded against one another just as they guarded against the invading army.
6. The physical feature of the place is not imposing. Such a setting does not match the significance of the battle.
7. When you visit the Hot Gates, the place does not appear imposing and it does not seem to be a likely site for such a historic event. In order to reconstruct the scene of 2,500 years ago, you need imagination and knowledge of history.
8. The Greek soldiers holding the pass refused to admit defeat despite the vast numbers facing them.
9. I was no longer so young and energetic as I had been twenty years ago so I might not be able to climb cliffs easily. But I might have an advantage which I couldn't have had twenty years ago. That is, I took part in World War II and I knew what war was like and what war meant. My understanding of the war 2,500 years ago might be deeper.
10. The freedoms enjoyed in England and other Western countries might not have developed if the Persians had won, thereby subjecting Greece to the domination of a large despotic empire whose values were not those which led to the development of the West.



V. Translate the following into Chinese.

A. Phrases

1. 有一股刺鼻的松脂味
2. 除漆剂
3. 讨厌的家伙
4. 这是一条土路,没有铺路面
5. 土地干旱贫瘠,到处是露出地面的石头
6. 昏暗沉闷的下午慢慢地过去
7. 像燎原之火一样蔓延开来
8. 尽是来来往往的信使
9. 毫不含糊地

B. Sentences

1. 就希腊菜肴而言,我是幸运的。
2. ……如果在希腊一个地方城市你不喝茴香烈酒作为开胃酒的话,那你就只好不喝。
3. 原来这里只是一个狭窄的隘口,现在已宽到可以通公路和铁路,农田一直延伸到山的拐角处。
4. 当来自各国的部队起步行进时,大地颤抖,声如擂鼓。
5. 据说薛西斯由于担心军心不稳,三次从皇帝宝座上跳了起来。
6. 谣言随时都可能让这些强征来的野蛮人组成的军队作鸟兽散,匆忙逃进周围的高山。
7. 朦胧中,我在某种程度上懂得了当利奥尼达斯在拂晓的晨光中抬头向那些山峰望去,看到稀疏的松林里露出兵器的闪光时,他是怎么想的。
8. 如果隘口背后的希腊各地城邦不能联合起来进行抵抗,那么一切都完了。
9. 碑文以其文字的含蓄和简洁著称——虽已被译过上百次,但也只是传达大意而已……

# Optional Reading

## Lesson One

### On Going Home



#### 一、课文译文

#### 回家

琼·迪迪翁

1. 我在家给女儿庆祝一岁生日。这个家并不是指我丈夫和我还有我们的宝贝在洛杉矶居住的房子,而是我自己的家庭所在地,位于加利福尼亚的中心山谷。那里尽管有令人烦恼的地方,却很重要。我丈夫喜欢我的家人,但在我父母家里我丈夫却感到焦虑不安,因为一旦到那儿我就会融入家人的乡音中,那是一种难以理解的、模糊不清的发音方式,不是我丈夫的那种方式。我们住在布满尘土的房间(“尘土”,他曾经用手指将这个词写在房子的各处,但是没有人注意到),这里装满了对他来说毫无意义的纪念品(广州出产的果盘对他有什么意义?他怎么会了解计量天平,即使知道,他何必非得关心这个?),我们总在谈论我们认识的那些被送到精神病院的人、被控告酒后驾车而被罚款的人,谈论过财产,尤其关于财产、土地、每英亩土地的价格、C-2 地区制、课税以及高速公路出口等。我的兄弟不理解我丈夫怎么会看不出“售后回租”这种相当寻常的房地产交易手段的好处。然而,在我父亲家,我丈夫听说有许多人最近不是被送进了精神病院,就是被控告酒后驾车而被罚款,对此他同样不能理解。他不明白为什么我们要谈论售后回租,为什么要讨论道路使用权的问题,也不理解我们用自己的语言谈论我们钟爱的东西,比如金黄的大地、白杨树、河流涨落、下大雪时山路关闭的事等等……边喝饮料边注视着火焰,我们误解着彼此的看法。当我丈夫在场时,我的兄弟称他为“琼的丈夫”,婚姻是典型的背叛。

2. 也许事情还不仅仅如此。有时我想我们这些出生在上一代、现在 30 多岁的人,肩上也担负着“家”的重担,想在过去的家庭生活中找到我们的生活压力和一连串曲折经历的根源。客观地说,我自己有一个“正常的”、“幸福的”家,然而直到 30 多岁我才学会在挂断与家人的电话之后不再哭泣。我们并不争吵,一切都很正常。然而,在我和老家之间就是有一种莫名的挂念和渴望。对于 50 年代离开家的人来说,是否还能再回到老家是一个特别敏感和巨大的精神负担。我想这种事情对于那些出生在二战后这个断层时代的年轻人是无关紧要的。几周前,我在旧金山的酒吧里看到一个“业余脱衣女郎”比赛,一个漂亮的女孩为赢得奖金而在水晶台上大跳脱衣舞。而我们这一代却为不受这样的时刻左右,不为这种堕落的行为影响,不为这种“夜生活”诱惑付出了多么辛苦的努力。这女孩对《长夜漫漫路迢迢》究竟做什么理解?谁偏离了主题?

3. 我总是陷入这种跑题的状态中。在家里这种感觉就更明显了。我会漫无目的地从一个房间走到另一个房间,藏在每一个衣橱、每一个拐角、每一个角落的过去使我的神经疲惫不堪。我决定面对过去,于是开始清理衣橱,把里面的东西铺在床上。一件 17 岁那年夏天穿的游泳衣,几封《国家》杂志的退稿信,一张从空中拍摄的照片,拍摄地是 1954 年父亲本想建却建成的购物中心,三个带有白菜花和祖母名字缩写 E·M 字样的手工绘制的茶杯。我不知如何处理《国家》杂志的退稿信和 1900 年手工绘制的白菜花的茶杯,还有 1910 年祖父在勘测东尼山口时的雪中快照。我抚平那张照片仔细看他的脸,似乎找到了自己的脸,又似乎没找到。我关上抽屉,和妈妈喝了一杯咖啡。我们相处融洽,他们是一场我们不理解的游击战的老兵。

4. 时间依旧过去,我没见任何人。我开始害怕晚上丈夫打来的电话。不光因为他向我讲述发生在洛杉矶的新闻、见到的人、需要注意的信件等等,还因为他会问我一直以来我在做什么,还焦虑地建议我出去走走,开车去旧金山或伯克利。而我却沿着大河去了家里的墓地。上次去时它已经遭到破坏,如今墓碑断了,倒在干草里。在这堆乱草里我还见过一条响尾蛇,当时我正在车里听乡村西部电台的节目。后来我和爸爸去了他山坡上的大牧场,牧场上赶牛的人邀请我们来放牛,从星期日开始一周。尽管要回洛杉矶,我还是用我家的方式客气地说我会去。一回到家,我就提到墓地里倒了的墓碑,妈妈耸了耸肩。

5. 我去看我那些上了岁数的姨妈们。她们中有几个把我当成了我的堂姐妹,或是她们过早去世的女儿。我们回忆起一位亲戚的趣事,上一次见他是在 1948 年。她们问我是否还住在纽约,可实际上我住在洛杉矶已经三年了。但我说是的,我喜欢住在纽约。她们给孩子一颗苦薄荷糖,给我塞了一美元,让我“买东西吃”。问题没那么严重;我也就不去考虑它们的答案;孩子玩弄着下午阳光射下的光柱里的灰尘。

6. 该到孩子的生日聚会了:一个白色的蛋糕、草莓糖稀冰淇淋、一瓶在别的晚上剩下的香槟酒。晚上,在她睡着以后,我跪在孩子床边,隔着床栅栏用我的脸贴着她的小脸儿。她是个活泼轻信的小家伙,还没准备好也不习惯家庭生活中的危机,这正是我不想给她的,我想要给她更多。我想向她承诺她会和堂兄弟姐妹一同长大,可以感受河流的美丽,也会使用老祖母的旧茶杯。我会带她在河边野餐,吃炸鸡,她可以不梳头,在过生日时绝对会感受到家的温暖,但现在我们的生活不一样了,我不能给她那样的承诺。我给了她一只木琴和一件太阳裙,答应给她讲一个有趣的故事。



## 二、同步测试

- What's the tone of the article?
  - Nostalgic.
  - Sarcastic.
  - Grief.
  - Cheerful.
- The word "home" in the first paragraph refers to \_\_\_\_\_.
  - house in Los Angeles
  - house in New York City
  - house in the Central Valley of California
  - house in San Francisco
- What can we know from the first paragraph?
  - My husband understands my brother.

- B. My brother understands my husband.  
 C. My husband and I have the same interests, way of living and focus.  
 D. My husband and I have different interests, way of living and focus.
4. Why does the author want to go back home?  
 A. She wants to stay with her parents.  
 B. She wants to live alone.  
 C. She wants to find and relive her past.  
 D. She wants to separate with her husband.
5. The phrase "trail off" in the fifth paragraph means to \_\_\_\_\_.  
 A. drag or allow to drag behind  
 B. follow the tracks  
 C. become gradually weaker  
 D. grow over or along the ground
6. What do you know about the Post World War II American society from the article?  
 A. It is a fragmentary society.  
 B. It's lack of traditional connections.  
 C. It's a romantic upgrade society.  
 D. Both A and B.
7. Which of the following is NOT true?  
 A. In this short essay, the author describes her experience of "going home".  
 B. Going home also brings up a series of conflicts.  
 C. The author wants to reflect the fragmentation of society.  
 D. The author seeks to render the moral complexity of past American experience.
8. What does the author offer her baby daughter?  
 A. Let her grow up with a sense of her cousins and of rivers and of her great-grandmother's teacups.  
 B. Have a picnic with her on the river with fried chickens and her hair uncombed.  
 C. Give her the ambushes of family life.  
 D. Give her a xylophone and a sundress from Madeira, and tell her a funny story.
9. How to understand "dark journey" in Para 2?  
 A. A trip in darkness.  
 B. An uninteresting journey.  
 C. The life in the evening.  
 D. The life in the old age.
10. Why doesn't the author want to see anyone?  
 A. She is too tired after a travel.  
 B. She feels lonely.  
 C. She is ill.  
 D. She finds she is out of this time.

Answers:

1. A 2. C 3. D 4. C 5. C 6. D 7. D 8. D 9. C 10. D

# • Lesson Two

## Stranger in the Village



### 一、课文译文

### 村里的陌生人

詹姆斯·鲍德温

1. 一切迹象都表明在我来到这个瑞士小村庄以前,从来没有黑人曾经踏足于此。到达前我被告知我将很有可能成为村里的“奇观”;我把这理解成在瑞士,像我这种肤色的人很罕见,并且城里的人在城市之外总会被当做某种“奇观”。可能因为我是个美国人,我从来不知道会有哪个地方的人竟会没有见过黑人。

2. 这却是一个事实,并且无法用这个村庄人迹罕至这个理由来解释。这个村子地势很高,但距离米兰仅有4小时的路程,到达洛桑也仅需3小时。它的确鲜为人知,很少人在制定度假计划时会选择来这里。另外,按理说,村民们能够自由来去——而事实上他们也确实如此,或是到山脚下的一个有着大约5000人口的小镇,那里是最近的看电影的地方,或者去那儿的银行。村里没有电影院、银行、图书馆或剧院;很少的几台收音机、一辆吉普车、一辆货客两用轿车;此刻,还有一台打字机(我的)——一项隔壁女人从未见过的发明。大约有600人住在这里,全是天主教徒——由于这儿的天主教堂长年开放,而坐落在离小村庄略远的小山丘上新教的礼拜堂则仅在夏天游客来时开放,我便得到这个结论。这里有四五家旅店,现在都关门了,有四五个小酒馆,却只有两个在冬天营业。这两家小酒馆生意并不多,因为村里的生活似乎在9点或10点钟就已经结束了。这里有一些商店、肉店、面包店、食杂店,一家五金商店,还有一个换零钱的人——他并不能兑现旅客们的支票,他得把支票送到银行,而这项业务需要2至3天。这里有一个所谓的芭蕾舞院,冬天不营业,而在夏天却没有芭蕾舞,恐怕只有上帝知道它有什么用处。这里似乎只有一所专为很小的孩子设立的学校,我猜想这意味着他们的哥哥姐姐们很可能为了教育从山上的某个地方下来到山下的镇里。这里的地貌十分险要,四周高山林立,目之所及寒冰森森,白雪皑皑。在这白色的旷野中,男人、女人和孩童整日走动,运送要洗的东西、柴火、牛奶桶或水桶,有时在周日下午滑雪。整整一周,常有男孩子和青年男子将雪从屋顶铲下,或者用雪橇从森林里拖运木头。

3. 村里仅有的真正引人注意之处,也是旅游旺季的原因,就是热泉水。令人忧虑的是,相当多的游客是残疾人或行动不便的人。年复一年,他们从瑞士的其他地方来到这儿取热泉水。这使得这个村子在旅游旺季的时刻会有种近乎恐怖的神圣气氛,俨然一个小型的卢尔德市。当人们失去了某种他从不曾置疑过的能力,并努力想要找回时,这种景象常常是美妙而严肃的。然而人仍旧是那些人,依旧拄着拐杖,或是实际上行将就木,我到这来的第一个夏天,不论是经过村民身边,还是那些残疾人身旁,总能感到一股冷风,夹杂着惊异、好奇、嘲笑抑和愤怒的情绪。第一个夏天我在这儿待了两周并决定再也不

会回来。但我却在冬天再次来到这里工作;这个村子使人觉得心安神定,并且物价很低。一年后的冬天,当冬天再次来临时,我又来到了这里。村里的每个人都知道我的名字,尽管很少有人用到它;人们都知道我来自美国,这虽然是十分自然的事,却没人真正相信它:在他们看来,黑人都是来自非洲的。每个人都知我是当地一个妇女的儿子的朋友,并住在他们的农舍中。可无论是在我刚到时还是在今天,我始终是个陌生人。当我走在街上时,孩子们朝我大喊:“黑人!黑人!”

4. 必须得承认,开始时我惊讶得不知该如何反应。至于怎样反应,我努力表现得受人喜欢——这是美国黑人教育中很重要的一部分,(早在他上学以前)他必须使得人们喜欢他。这种所谓“你微笑,整个世界同你一同微笑”的惯例跟在它被设定的场合效果一样,也就是说,它从未奏效。一个价值和肤色不能得到或从未得到认可的人是不会被人喜欢的。我的微笑仅仅是一种未曾见过的现象,他们看到的是我的牙,而不是我的微笑。我开始想,我是否该咒骂他们,反正没人会注意到它们的不同。在美国,黑人的一切生理特征在我身上引起的是一种特别的、几乎已忘记的痛苦,而这在村民眼中却不亚于是种神奇的,或是可怕的特征。有的人认为我的头发有着焦油的颜色、金属线的质地,或是棉花的质地。更滑稽的是他们建议我把头发留长,为自己做件冬装。如果我在阳光下待上超过5分钟,一些勇敢的人一定会过来,小心翼翼地把手指放在我的头发上,好像怕触电似的,或是把手放在我的手上并惊讶于那颜色居然没有褪去。对于这一切,我必须得承认,这是真正的奇观所产生的魔力。这里不含任何有蓄意的不敬的成分。可是这里也没有任何迹象提示我是一个人:我仅仅是一个活着的奇观。

5. 我知道他们并不是故意不敬,我现在也知道这一点;然而我却必须在每次走出房舍时,对自己重申这一点。对我大喊“黑人”的孩子们是不会知道这种喊声在我心中引起的回声的。他们带着善意的幽默感,当我同他们中的“勇士”说话时,他们无比骄傲。同样,有时当我无心同他们玩耍时,我也不会停下来对他们微笑;当我处在他们的年纪时,我也曾在他们未曾见过的城市的街道上,牢骚满腹地抱怨:你妈妈是黑人。乔伊斯是对的:历史是个噩梦——没人能从噩梦中醒来,人们深陷于历史,历史也受困于人。

6. 我得知和在许多村里一样,村子里有一种“购买”非洲土著人以使他们转信基督教的风俗,教堂里一年到头总有一个盒子,上面带有一个放钱的狭缝,并装饰着黑色的小雕像,村民们把钱放在里面。在四旬斋前举办的狂欢节庆会上,两个村里的男孩子把脸涂黑,嵌在黑色面底上的那双蓝眼睛,闪烁着冰冷的光,金色的脑袋上带着奇异的由马鬃制成的假发。如此打扮一番后,他们在村民中集款以完成他们在非洲的使命。在教堂里的盒子和涂黑脸的孩子们的共同作用下,村里去年“买”了6个或8个非洲土著。这是一个酒馆老板娘告诉我的,说这些时她一脸自豪,我小心翼翼地对此(村民们为黑人灵魂焦虑的事)表达了惊讶和喜悦之情。酒馆老板娘那股高兴劲远比我更真切,并且似乎觉得我现在可以为那6个亲戚的灵魂松口气了。

7. 我试着不去想那些近来被施洗礼的亲戚,不去想为他们所付的代价,也不去想他们自身所付的特殊代价,对于我的父亲,我只字未提。尽管他也在形式上完全转变了信仰,但在内心中却从未宽恕过白人的世界(他把它叫做异教徒)。因为他们把基督精神硬塞给他,而从他们对待他的方式来判断,他们自己却不再信仰这种精神。我想到了初次到达非洲村落的白人,他们是那里的陌生人,就如同我是这儿的陌生人。我试着想象充满惊讶的居民们摸着他们的头发,惊奇于他们的肤色。但是首次被非洲人看见的白人和首次被白人看见的黑人却有着天壤之别。白人把这种惊讶看做是尊敬,因为他们是来征服并转变土著人的信仰的。毫无疑问,比起他们来这些土著人是低劣的;而丝毫没有征服念头的我却发现自己置身于一个这样的民族,他们的文化控制着我,甚至从某种意义上来说,他们的文化创造了我,他们不知道他们带给我的痛苦和愤怒,他们甚至无视我的存在。假使他们在几百年前曾经踏足于我的非洲村庄,对于我所表现的惊讶,他们也许会感到心花怒放。然而他们在今天回馈给我的惊讶却只能玷污我的惊讶。

8. 事情就是这样,尽管我竭力想有不同的感受,尽管我与酒馆老板娘友好地交谈,尽管我最终与他们3岁的孩子成为了朋友,尽管散步时我向人们问好致敬,尽管我知道个人不能因历史而受到指责。我

说这些人的文化控制我,但是这不能归咎于欧洲的文化。美国源自欧洲,但是这些人从未见过美国,他们中的绝大多数对于欧洲的认识也仅限于山脚下的村庄,然而他们却带着权威来了,而我从没这样;他们不仅把我看做一个陌生人,还将我看成一个可疑的后来者,没有资格拥有他们所继承的一切。

9. 这个格外僻远又异常原始的村子就是西方,一个我被以奇特的方式“移植”到的地方。若论及权力,这些人无论在世界上的任何一个地方都不会是陌生人,实际上是他们创造了这个现代世界,即使他们不知道。他们之中最无知的人也与但丁、莎士比亚、米开朗琪罗、埃斯库罗斯、达·芬奇、伦勃朗、拉辛有关系;从某种意义上讲,我是与之无关的;沙特爾市的大教堂对他们所说的事决不会对我说,还有纽约的帝国大厦,假设这儿的人见过的话。在他们的圣歌和舞蹈中诞生了贝多芬和巴赫。追溯到几个世纪前,他们光辉灿烂——而我却在非洲,看着征服者的到来。

10. 每个传奇都含有现实的印迹,语言的基本功能就是通过描述世界来控制世界。虽然西方国家几个世纪以来一直在“购买”非洲土著,而实际上仍有大量的黑人未得到灵魂的拯救,这一点意义重大。我冒昧地说,有必要立即离开这个未被拯救的陌生人,在他的心中,人们很难猜到什么样的复仇之梦正在滋生;同时,世上没有什么事比让那些未获自由的人得到自由更加吸引人。在黑色的脸孔下的人开始觉得他无法逃避可怕的种族问题的困扰。一个人对别人的想象当然由他的个性决定,黑人与白人之间的一种讽刺的关系就是:通过白人看待黑人的方式,黑人能够知道白人是什么样的。

11. 我说过,我今天同刚来的第一个夏天一样是个陌生人,但并不完全是这样。村民们不像以前那样关心我头发的质地,他们更关心我个人,现在他们另一个层面的惊讶表现在他们的态度和他们的眼睛里。有些孩子以孩童那种高兴、欢闹有时又难以预料的方式表达了他们愉悦的友情;其他孩子由于被告知魔鬼是个黑人,当我靠近时便痛苦地尖叫。一些上年纪的女人每次见到我都会友好地向我打招呼,如果有机会同我说话,她们从来不会一言不发地从我身边走过;其他女人则向下看,向旁边看,或者干脆假笑。一些男人和我喝酒并建议我学滑雪——我猜一部分原因是因为他们难以想象我在雪橇上的样子——他们想知道我是否已经结婚了,并问关于我的职业的问题。有些人在我背后指责讨厌的黑人偷窃木材。在他们的眼中总有特殊的意图和多疑的恶意,而当美国人同女友外出看见黑人走近时,这些经常会出现他们的眼中。

12. 在这里的街道和我所出生的城市的街道之间、在今天朝着我喊“黑人”的孩子们和那些昔日曾叫我“黑人”的孩子们之间隔着的一道可怕的深渊,这道深渊就是经历——美国经历。这些甩在我身后的字眼表达了一种惊讶:我在这儿是一个陌生人,但在美国我不是一个陌生人。飘浮在美国上空的同样的字眼表达了我的存在与美国精神之间的冲突。

13. 这个村庄使我彻底了解到这样一个事实:曾经有一天,并不遥远的一天,那时美国人并不是美国人,他们只是不满意的欧洲人,面对着未被征服的大陆,漫步走进一个集市,第一次看到了黑人。这种令他们震惊的场景让他们果断地认为,这些黑人不是真正的人,而是牲畜。新世界的定居者有必要使他们的道德和假想达成一致,奴隶制的存在也很必要,这两种必要性确实更为他们的这种看法增添了魔力。而这种想法也以一种美国式的直率在各种程度上表达了奴隶主对于奴隶的态度。

14. 对于美国人来说,从前的奴隶和奴隶主的斗争与300年前发生在詹姆斯镇的事件之间至少有两点不同值得关注。第一是,与过去年代的奴隶所想所为相比,美国黑人奴隶从未设想他们能够从主人的手里夺取权力。现代社会扼杀了这种将导致目的和权力发生重大变化的假想。只是在以史无前例的姿态、蕴涵着惊人的启示的情况下,这样的设想才在现如今开始复苏。然而即使这设想以永不消减的力量坚持不懈,美国黑人奴隶也不会利用它谋求自身的尊严。因为这种设想是基于另一个设想之上,那就是:流落他乡却又与过去有着千丝万缕的联系的奴隶有办法崇尚并保留过去的生活方式——尽管只是在记忆里,简言之,即他能够维系自己的身份。

15. 对于美国黑人奴隶来说情况并非如此。他与世界上的其他黑人不同,几乎是一下子他就脱离了

他的过去,人们想知道第一个黑奴对他所生的第一个孩子说了什么。人们告诉我海地人能够追溯他们的祖先到非洲的国王,而任何想追溯过去的美国黑人都会发现,他们跨越时间的旅程被买卖契约上的签字所隔断,那恰恰是他的祖先的通行证。在那时,更不用说那些被奴役、后来成为美国黑人的情况了,从主人的手中夺权是毫无可能的。没有理由认为他的处境会发生变化,更没有任何事情预示他的处境曾有什么不同。用E·富兰克林·弗雷泽的话来说,他必须找到一种“活在美国文化背景下的动力,否则就会死去”。美国黑人的身份就是来自于这样一种极端的环境之中,而这种身份的演化在他的主人的心里以及生活中成了最难以忍受的焦虑的来源。

16. 美国黑人问题的实质是美国白人必须找到一种与黑人共存的生活方式,这样才能生存。为了能逐渐接受这种必要性,或找到避开问题的途径,或是最常见的马上找到两者并行的方法,此问题的历史被美国人简化成如下方式:私刑和法律、隔离和法律承认、恐吓和让步。其结果是这愚蠢而可怕的情景让人们准确地做出了如下判断:黑人存在于美国这种疯狂的行为降临到白人身上了。

17. 这是一场无法结束的漫长的战斗,将来的子孙后代将会感受到这场战斗那不可预知的影响:在这场战斗中,白人的动机是保护自己的身份,而黑人的动机则是建立自己的身份。尽管美国黑人在过去和现在一直忍受着恐吓;尽管在他的国家里有他无法逃避的、残忍的、界定其地位的双重标准,他仍然在许久前赢得了这场身份之战。他不是一个到西方的游客,而是那儿的公民,一个美国人;和那些轻视他、惧怕他、爱他的美国人一样的美国人;一个和那些因不可避免的挑战而变得渺小或伟大的人一样的美国人。比起那些痛苦的奴隶和不确定的主人之间的关系,他可能是世界上与白人关系更可怕、更微妙,也更有意义的人。他的生存与发展依赖于他如何在西方世界中确定对自己有利的地位,这可能在很大程度上有利于那个世界。他仍需要获取使他得以生存并说话的经验。

18. 然而,如果美国黑人通过彻底与他的过去分离而获得自身的身份,如果美国白人仍旧沉浸于恢复到没有黑人时纯净的欧洲的幻想之中,那么这将是美国人所犯下的最大的错误之一。他们努力奋战而捍卫的身份由于战争而发生了改变:美国人不同于世界上其他地方的白人。我认为说美国人的世界观在很大程度上导致美国人发动这场导致白人与黑人间不可弥补的分裂的战争是不过分的。概括说,正是这种世界观不允许黑人面对现实;正是这种世界观至今仍企图在愤怒的黑人与白人问题上涂上一层道德的色彩。我们现在才开始逐渐了解,尽管不情愿但我们必须承认这种世界观既危险、又错误又毫无用处。它使我们放弃现实这个可怕的代价来维护我们的高尚道德。无视现实的人只是在自寻死路,任何企图在失去天真后仍坚持维持天真状态的人只会使他自己成为怪物。

19. 现在应该认识到在美国大陆上演的这一幕不同种族的情景不仅创造了新的黑人,也创造了新的白人。再也没有道路能把美国人带回到过去欧洲的小村庄那样单纯的状态,在那里白人们仍有特权把我这样的黑人看成陌生人。对于任何一个活着的美国人来说,我不再是一个陌生人。美国人和其他民族不同的一点,就是其他民族不像美国那样黑人的生活与白人的生活交织在一起。面对这样的事实,人们能够看到有关美国黑人问题的历史不光是耻辱的,还是一种成就。即使最坏的方面已经被说出,有一点还需要说明:这一问题所带来的挑战永远存在。这种黑人与白人的经历对于我们今天面对的世界也许会具有绝对必要的价值。这个世界已不再只是白人的世界,它将永远不再只是白人的世界。



## 二、同步测试

- The author is regarded as a "sight" in the village, because \_\_\_\_\_.
  - he has strong legs and arms
  - he is a distinguished guest
  - he is a black man
  - he wears weird clothes



2. All the villagers are probably Catholics. The conclusion is based on the fact that \_\_\_\_\_.
  - A. the Catholic church is open all year round
  - B. they behave just like Catholics
  - C. they have the typical appearance of Catholics
  - D. they speak with a special accent
3. The sole real attraction of the village for the tourists is \_\_\_\_\_.
  - A. the beautiful landscape
  - B. the heavy snow
  - C. the hot spring water
  - D. the high mountains
4. There is a custom of "buying" African natives for the purpose of \_\_\_\_\_ in the village.
  - A. forcing them to work
  - B. converting them to Christianity
  - C. making them know more about Swiss
  - D. making friends with them
5. "Reconcile" in Para 13 means to \_\_\_\_\_.
  - A. enhance
  - B. harmonize
  - C. confuse
  - D. connect
6. Which paragraph marks the transition of the contents?
  - A. Para 10.
  - B. Para 11.
  - C. Para 12.
  - D. Para 13.
7. "Hilarious" in Para 11 means \_\_\_\_\_.
  - A. ecstatic
  - B. nervous
  - C. slight
  - D. upset
8. The basic tone of the article is \_\_\_\_\_.
  - A. angry
  - B. relaxed
  - C. critical
  - D. ironical
9. In this article, the author \_\_\_\_\_.
  - A. criticizes American white men for denying the identity of black men
  - B. strengthens that black men have equal human value as white men
  - C. suggests that white men should face the reality and get rid of the illusion of recovering European innocence
  - D. all of the above
10. Which of the statements is NOT true according to the article?
  - A. There exists in some American white men an illusion of going back to a time without black men.
  - B. American white men and black men are different from those other parts of the world in that they have run through the American experience.
  - C. People in the village regard me as an exotic rarity with the same intension as the American white men.
  - D. The American vision of the world is harmful to the relation between American white men and American black men.

Answers:



# Lesson Three

## A Visit to Camelot



### 一、课文译文

#### 卡米洛特之行

戴安娜·特里林

1. 这就是我所见到的并向朋友描述的卡米洛特。1962年4月的一个早上,吃早餐时我从《时代》杂志上获悉将要为诺贝尔奖获得者举行一次晚宴。我对丈夫莱昂内尔说:“伦尼·伯恩斯坦又来了。”这件事暗示着除了诺贝尔奖获得者外还会有其他客人出席。我猜想,伦尼·伯恩斯坦和朱莉·哈里斯都可以参加。当然,我很羡慕他们,因为他们将会被邀请,而我们不会。但是,即使我这样说,一种奇妙的思想还是一闪而过,也许我们也将被邀请。我没有向莱昂内尔透露想被邀请的愿望。如果他也同样饱受羡慕之苦,他也向我隐瞒了。一天早晨,信件被送来后,莱昂内尔让我来到客厅,从他的声音中我就能分辨出信件里是什么:一个正方形的大信封,下角写着“白宫”。

2. 事实上,我很担心开支,但毫无疑问我们将会接受邀请。对于这次邀请我有一种既强烈又一般的感觉,这一点我与莱昂内尔产生了共鸣。我父亲在他18岁那年从波兰来到美国,身无分文,又不懂英语。他学语言期间,在斯迪顿岛渡口叫卖蛋白杏仁饼。而现在他的女儿被邀请去白宫。那么,我有义务为他接受此次邀请。

3. 宴会是在4月29日的一个星期日的晚上,据说我应该穿黑色晚礼服的。很明显这已规定了莱昂内尔的穿着,但我该穿什么呢?根据我们老式的想法,我们决定穿最朴素的长短适宜的,不暴露的黑色礼服——如果我能找到这样一件的话。我试着去寻找,但全纽约都没有一件这样的短的黑色晚礼服。然后我打电话给一个熟识的哈蒂卡内基的店员,向她询问。她十分高兴并告诉我她认识一个叫马克·韦斯的人,在他的店里也许会有我要的衣服。我去了那儿,找到的根本不是一件短黑色晚礼服,而是一件黑色粗面紧身套裙,两只袖子又长又紧。这是一件全长裙,但他们告诉我裙摆可以被剪掉,它要以改成一件短裙子,这样我就可以配短的白色小山羊皮手套穿了。

4. 这是一条线条优美的紧身裙子,非常夸张,直觉告诉我,我得咨询一下莱昂内尔才能购买。所以我告诉他们先保留这条裙子,第二天我带着莱昂内尔来看它。他完全没想到是这样一件衣服。这使韦斯先生很着急,他说:“我想你还有一件衣服没看见。”他拿出一件黑色绉纱裙子,还配有一条披肩,如果我想遮住胳膊,可以把披肩披上。这条裙子使我看起来如此苗条——它简直是一件极品。韦斯先生不停地对我说它是多么绝对完美。莱昂内尔也露出笑容。这就是整个过程,我想我已经准备好了,现在我所要担心的就是饰品了。

5. 那天晚上我拿起《时代》杂志,由于忙着购物,一直没机会看,我一眼瞥见了肯尼迪夫妇的社交日

程表,他们在前往棕榈海滩的路上。我很生气,我要去参加他们的宴会,而他们要去棕榈海滩,他们甚至不出席。这促使我读完了整个报道,上面说他们将去 10 天,然后回来参加 29 日的诺贝尔奖获得者晚宴。在这篇新闻报道中有这样两句话太不可思议了,我读到:白宫社交办公室发布指令说,那天的晚宴,虽然男士穿黑色晚礼服,但女士要穿白色晚礼服。也就是说,女宾客要穿长裙戴白色的长手套。可我早就从盒子里拿出我的新裙子,剪掉了价签,把它挂到了我的衣橱里,让它为我所有了。但我完全买错了。

6. 离晚宴仅剩一周了,我当时的嫂子埃德娜将我拖到 48 大街的一家商店。一个又讨厌又粗俗的店员来到我面前问我需要什么。我说我想要一件长晚礼服,她说商店里的所有的衣服都需要订做。我几乎没有力气说谢谢,只听埃德娜说道:“是的,当然,但我们想此时你们也许会有一些样品服想要出售。”店员评估似地打量着她,“是的,我们有,”她说道。她离开了几分钟,然后带来了一件正是我想要的晚礼服——四季皆宜,香槟酒色,有波纹的塔夫绸料子,还印有柔和的橙色和绿色的花朵。在试穿之前,我强迫自己问了价格。店员说 395 美元,但由于这是样品服,价格可能会有些优惠。同时,埃德娜在她身后向我打手势,我知道她想说什么。所以我使劲咽了一下,低声说,“我希望你能给我特惠点,因为我要穿着它去白宫。”店员眼都没眨一下,说道:“嗯,我保证会更优惠,就先试试吧。”我试穿了一下,只有几处小地方需要改动。她离开了几分钟,回来时很爱国地对我说,包括改动在内总共 250 美元。

7. 当莱昂内尔最初接到邀请时,我们本想整个周末都呆在华盛顿,住在旅馆或汽车旅馆里。但我们的朋友特尔玛·安德森提醒我们她有一个妹妹住在华盛顿郊外,她很愿意让我们用她的房间来穿衣打扮。我们高兴地接受了这个省钱的建议。

8. 最后 29 号终于到来了,我们乘坐 11 点的火车来到华盛顿。宴会预定在晚上 8 点钟,我们认为我们将有充足的时间去特尔玛的妹妹家里穿衣打扮,不必匆匆忙忙。

9. 我从一位熟人那儿得知,外交礼节要求我们得提前 10 分钟到达白宫。在特尔玛的妹妹玛丽莲的家里,莱昂内尔问她在哪可以租到汽车。但玛丽莲和她丈夫让我们别想着去租车了,他们坚持要亲自送我们去白宫。所以 7 点 10 分我们上了他们的小客车,我们的主人穿着衬衫,玛丽莲穿着家居服,孩子穿着她玩耍时一直穿着的脏衣服;他们 3 个人坐在前面,而莱昂内尔和我优雅地坐在后面。我看看莱昂内尔,莱昂内尔看看我,很明显我们在想同一件事:像这样去,人家不会允许我们进入大门。我们的司机为什么不能至少穿件夹克衫呢?

10. 尽管这样,我们仍坐在后面,很放松。正值黄昏之时,喷泉在喷水,还有灯光交相辉映。华盛顿这周温暖宜人,白宫地面上鲜花怒放,因此低低的灯光下你可以看见各种各样的颜色。

11. 我们到了大门,那有一排海陆军人。莱昂内尔将通行证递给士兵,他毫无表情地接了过去。仅仅检查了一下我们的名字,他转过身对玛丽莲的丈夫说,“就开到前门吧。”我们说,“非常感谢您为我们所做的一切,”然后玛丽莲夫妇便离开了。

12. 我挽着莱昂内尔的胳膊。很明显我们应该这样做,无需人告诉我们,我们慢慢地走过门廊。官员们列队在入口两旁。参加的还有许多军人,他们穿着漂亮的制服,一群摄影师在为入场的宾客照相。

13. 当我们走进的时候,一位副官走上前来,说,“男士请进那个房间,女士请去化妆室,在右边。”在化妆室里,有几位女士和满衣架的衣服,女士的披肩,还有带镜子的化妆室,它不同于纽约广场饭店中层楼的化妆室,这要更大些。我进去的那一刻,就知道这将是一个极好的晚宴。有两三个年龄稍大的女士在镜子前梳理头发,她们微笑着看着我。其中一个问:“你从远方来吗?”我答道:“从纽约来。你呢?”她回答说,她是从巴尔的摩冒雨赶来的。我猜想那可能是约翰斯·霍普金森。这一小群女士穿着极为古朴的晚礼服。她们是晚宴最好的“开场白”。他们不年轻也不聪慧——她们只是可爱而已。

14. 我从化妆室出来,莱昂内尔正在那儿等我。一位侍者立刻走上前来介绍自己,并问道,“请问怎么称呼?”当莱昂内尔回答“莱昂内尔·特里林夫妇”时,他立刻说,“当然,莱昂内尔·特里林夫妇。”很明显,他已经记下了整个来宾的名单——我想我们总共得有 180 人——他事先不会知道将为谁服务。然

后他对我说,“挽着我的胳膊,好吗?”,并伸出了胳膊,而莱昂内尔向后退了两三步,跟在我们后面。当我们向前走时,他问我,“作介绍时,你的丈夫喜欢被称为先生、博士还是教授?”“他喜欢被称为特里林先生”,我回答。“好的,”他说,并补充道,“今晚的前半场我将是您的侍者。我会告诉您必须做的每件事,所以您根本不必感到拘束。”

15. 当他对我讲话时,我看见在我们前方大约5码处,另一对夫妇也被以相同安慰的方式服侍着。一定有18或20个这样的侍者,每个人负责8到10个人。但没有任何的窘迫,情形恰恰相反。

16. 他领我到一张桌子旁,一个侍者核对了名单并递给他一个小信封,说道,“特里林先生入座2号桌,您,特里林夫人入座6号桌。二位都在主餐厅,今晚,我们有两个餐厅,国家宴会厅和蓝厅。肯尼迪总统将入座国家宴会厅,也就是你们入座的餐厅。肯尼迪夫人入座蓝厅。”餐前招待会在东厅举行。门旁站着另一位侍者,拿着一个麦克风。我们的侍者走近说:“莱昂内尔·特里林夫妇。”门旁的这位侍者用麦克风重复道“莱昂内尔·特里林夫妇”。从那时开始,我一直听着那些被宣读的来宾的名字。我宁愿自己静静地站在那儿,听着这些名字,并尽力将名字与各人的面孔联系在一起,但那是不可能的。我的侍者回来了,将我和莱昂内尔带到我们应在的地方,或近于我们应在的地方以便容易更正。他将我带到弗雷德里克·马奇面前,并为我们做了介绍。像许多有才艺的演员一样,马奇举止沉着。他亲切地向我问好。然后在这个招待室里一种连锁反应开始了。人们纷纷把交谈的对象介绍给刚才交谈过的朋友。一切似乎自动发生:我们从侍者手中接过程序并自觉地履行。这是最迷人的表演,每个人都以最美好的方式将一个人介绍给另一个人。

17. 不一会儿,侍者们端着托盘出现在房间里,上面有大家可能想要喝的各种饮品:曼哈顿酒、马丁尼酒、混有汽水的威士忌酒、雪利酒、番茄汁、橙汁。只有饮品,没有烤面包。

18. 现在房间里尽是熟悉的名字但不熟悉的面孔。不久我听到侍者喊道,“亚瑟·施莱辛格夫妇。”亚瑟看见了我,挥着手走了过来。他向我问好并介绍了他的妻子,但他看起来像其他每个人一样,既不放松也不亲切。他表现得不自然,好像是受制于白宫。

19. 同时,我瞥见了科洛内尔·约翰·格伦。在所有人当中,他正在和罗伯特·弗洛斯特谈话。他们周围差不多有6个人挤成一团,想尽力倾听他们的谈话。

20. 吉米·鲍德温穿着他的晚礼服,看起来十分高雅,我们只是隔着互相挥手致意。在招待室,我瞥见过约翰·多斯·帕索斯,但接下来整晚我却没再见到过他。有了带洛斯特的出席,差不多够组成一个文学代表团了。我注意到莱昂内尔喝了太多的马丁尼,但很显然他玩得很开心。在我们列队欢迎以及总统出现之前很长一段时间内,大家都互相感慨,“这难道不是一场精彩的晚宴吗?”

21. 现在一定已经8点半了。我们的侍者解释说肯尼迪总统及夫人马上就要到了,只要他们一进来,欢迎队伍就开始前移。按姓名的字母顺序排列,诺贝尔奖获得者在前,然后是其他宾客,“请站好排,不要出列,”他提醒道,“那很重要。欢迎队伍中男士们在前,女士们在后。”

22. 这时,小号奏起了欢迎乐曲,准确地说,是乐队在演奏“向首领致敬”。然后,护旗队列队走了进来,我听到有人喊“肯尼迪总统和夫人”,他们来了,周围突然静了下来。他们没有慢慢地,庄严地走进来,而是行色匆匆,好像他们不想被特别注意到似的。入场确实很隆重,但作为个人来讲,他们更喜欢谦逊朴实。

23. 他们刚刚从棕榈海滩度假回来,所以皮肤黝黑。杰姬肤色红棕,穿着海绿色雪纺绸晚礼服,一直拖到地板,除了一侧裸露的肩膀,裁剪十分简单。她穿着绿色便鞋来配晚礼服,除了漂亮的深绿色的耳环外,没佩戴任何首饰。她比以往任何一张照片都要漂亮100倍。

24. 总统很帅气而且精力充沛——以我那么远的距离都能感觉得到。我刚刚注意到一件事:在诺贝尔奖获得者中,他明显地改变了姓氏字母顺序,所以这个欢迎队伍以乔治·马歇尔夫人,她是推行马歇尔计划的马歇尔将军的遗孀。后面是欧内斯特·海明威夫人,我认为她的晚礼服是晚宴上最漂亮、最得体的。毕竟,海明威逝世距今不到一年。她知道她在公众眼中会很受瞩目。这是一件黑色紧身连

衣女装,膝盖以下呈喇叭式,并贴有大朵的鲜红玫瑰花——她确实一袭黑色但不是丧服。

25. 现在队伍开始相当迅速地向移动,但人们没有停止喝酒直到离总统只有几英尺时。然后他们放下饮品——这个房间每侧都有许多橱柜和小桌子。当莱昂内尔和我来到总统面前时,当然房间几乎要空了。莱昂内尔挪到我前面。当他的名字被宣读时,他已经伸出了手,结果他握住了总统的手,当时总统说道,“很高兴见到你,先生。”

26. “啊,是你,”总统惊叫道。“见到您太高兴了,”莱昂内尔微笑着说,“谢谢。”这时,总统夫人伸出了手,莱昂内尔与她握手。她说,“你知道我有一个同父异母的妹妹,除非你告诉她这样想是对的,否则她不会接受这样的观点。除非你告诉她可以这么说,否则她什么也不说。”

27. 莱昂内尔询问她这位妹妹是谁。

28. “尼娜·奥金克洛斯,”总统夫人回答,“她是你的学生。”

29. 莱昂内尔想不起来尼娜·奥金克洛斯是谁了,但他说,“她非常好。”他并没有就此停住。我看得出他不像平常那样害羞——他已经喝了6杯马丁尼,我已经数过了。我想:噢,天哪,接下来会发生什么?他仍然握着总统夫人的手。微笑着对她说,“等会儿我告诉你在瓦萨他们是怎样谈论你的。”

30. 她开始大笑,“什么?”

31. “没关系,”莱昂内尔说,“过一会儿,我过一会儿告诉你。”

32. 就在这时,总统放下了我的手,问莱昂内尔,“在瓦萨他们说些什么了?”

33. “过一会儿,”莱昂内尔重复着。我开始走向总统夫人,但我看见总统和总统夫人都在笑,他们被莱昂内尔逗笑了。

34. 在餐厅,我们分开了。我来到我的6号桌,莱昂内尔去了他的2号桌。餐桌是圆形的,彼此离得很近。总统那一桌位于中间,他右边坐着马歇尔夫人,左边坐着海明威夫人。同座的还有弗洛斯特和总统的姐姐史密斯夫人。当人们走进餐厅的时候,我已经可以看到我们餐桌上的身份卡。我的右边是皮埃尔·塞林格,左边是斯坦利博士。斯坦利博士的那边是一个在招待室与我交谈过的女士。她迷人、漂亮且举止稳重。她是斯特拉顿夫人,我想她是麻省理工大学的校长夫人。我问她是否认识斯坦利博士,她告诉我他在病毒方面有很重要的贡献。她补充说和我们同桌的克尔夫人能告诉我他的所有情况。克尔夫人的丈夫是加利福尼亚大学的校长。我看了看卡片,发现克尔夫人的另一边是詹姆斯·鲍德温。那对我来说是一种安慰,很明显对他也是,因为当他来到餐桌前,看见我在那儿时,他说,“噢,你在这儿。谢天谢地,有一张熟悉的面孔。”

35. 晚宴很令人愉快。晚餐被延迟很久,然而牛肉绝对完美。酒来自法国,想喝多少就喝多少。你还没来得及放下杯子就又被倒满了。香槟酒和甜品被端上来了。

36. 当享用香槟酒时,总统站了起来,敲了一下杯子。餐厅立刻静了下来,他做了一次最简短的演讲。“这是白宫举行过的最特别的一次人才及人类知识集会,除了托马斯·杰斐逊独自进餐时。”

37. 他立刻指着托马斯·杰斐逊曾坐过的地方,每个人都十分崇拜。他又补充了几句话就坐下来。接着又上了咖啡。

38. 总统站了起来,其他每个人也都站了起来。他走出了房间,不时地停下来与遇到的朋友握手。然后那种友好和谐的气氛又开始了。我们得知晚餐后会有一小段休息时间,之后将由弗雷德里克·马奇宣读获奖情况。但现在我们还有半个小时的时间,其间总统和总统夫人离席了——总统需要休息一下,我猜总统夫人也需要一些自己的时间。宴会还在自动继续着。

39. 在那儿,我目光所及都是巨大的花瓶。白宫宛若仙境——所有的一切都是如此的高贵、从容、欢快、色彩柔和且变化多端。只要有桌子、书架或壁炉,就会有精心布置的漂亮的鲜花。

40. 我的侍者示意我挽着他,说:“现在您不想去东厅占个位置吗?将会有个公众宣读会。我希望你有个好座位,所以我们现在就进去吧。”他将我领到第三排的中间座位。总统和总统夫人已经进来了,正

好就坐在我们前面。我们能看见他们。鲍比·肯尼迪和他妻子以及总统的姐姐史密斯夫人也坐在我们前面。我注意到鲍比·肯尼迪有一张俊俏的脸。他比总统要好看得多,但没有流露出任何他哥哥的那种霸气。他外表处处都很精致,看起来很年轻,像个大男生。相反,总统的脸上坚毅无比,放射出无限的力量,以至于你感觉它马上要爆炸。

41. 弗雷德里克·马奇从三个已逝的诺贝尔奖获得者开始,先介绍了辛克莱·刘易斯的《大街》。接下来摘录了马歇尔实现伟大计划的大纲,技巧熟练,措辞传统。最后一位是海明威。马奇说,“我本想宣读欧内斯特·海明威的《杀手》,但他的夫人说我们所有人对它太熟悉了,也许你们想听听未被出版的内容,所以她浏览了一下她丈夫未出版的著作,从一篇未出版的小说中挑选了这样一个章节。”

42. 当马奇宣读完的时候,总统站了起来走向海明威夫人。事实上他是把她从座位上扶起来并搀着她向观众鞠了一躬。她那时过得很糟糕,可怜的女人,我看见总统做事体贴优雅。他安慰性地轻扶着她的胳膊。然后他回到座位,又坐了下来。

43. 现在大家都站起来了。事实上没有人冲向出口,但每个人都开始朝着那个方向移动。莱昂内尔过去和罗伯特·弗洛斯特谈话,但林登·约翰逊走在他前面,所以莱昂内尔等待着。我站在他的旁边,和他一起等到约翰逊谈完。莱昂内尔和弗洛斯特交谈了一会儿后,我们向门口移动。但就在那时,我看见我们的侍者来了,“总统非常想让您和特里林先生与他上楼一叙。”他说。到这时,我感觉好像什么事都可能发生,我几乎不怎么惊讶。莱昂内尔不是说过会儿告诉他关于杰姬在瓦萨的事吗?现在仅仅 11 点钟——我们为什么要回家?宴会才刚刚开始。

44. 事实上,在我们共同的社交生活中,我并不比他逊色。但今天我只是以莱昂内尔妻子的身份出席这种场合。很明显,总统和总统夫人认识莱昂内尔。大多数知识分子都熟悉莱昂内尔的名字,就像他们知道凯瑟琳·安妮·波特和詹姆斯·鲍德温的名字一样。这些都是文化名人。但他们是否读严肃的知识期刊,并且知道我也是个作者呢?我没必要去考虑答案。答案一定是否定的。斯蒂伦斯一家知道我的作品,吉米·鲍德温也知道。但肯尼迪夫妇没有听说过我,这一点我敢肯定。但我没有整晚都将自己困在这件事上。我为莱昂内尔感到高兴,我自己也非常开心。不一会儿,我们被领进一个大空房间,侍者说,“这是椭圆大厅。艾森豪威尔总统在这儿工作。肯尼迪总统却不,他将它作为非正式接待的场所。”房子中间有一张沙发,它的右斜方还有一张,许多备用椅子被漂亮地摆放在沙发周围。还有一些小桌子和台灯,到处都有鲜花。领我进来的那个侍者为我挑了一把椅子。他说我应该坐在那把椅子上,因为它的颜色和我的晚礼服很相配。

45. 一位侍者托着餐盘好像从地里冒出来一样突然出现在我们面前,餐盘里是许多装满香槟的杯子。我拿起一杯,我的侍者说,“请自便,总统在楼下一应酬完就来这儿。祝您过得愉快。”现在只剩下莱昂内尔和我,坐在白宫的椭圆大厅里。我们仅是彼此看着,似乎都要说,“我们究竟在这儿做什么?”我们几乎不能说话,感觉似乎像是在做白日梦。

46. 就在那时,一位侍者领着罗丝·斯蒂伦进来了,比尔跟在他们后面几步远。他们和我们一样,表情既高兴又困惑。罗丝和比尔是远比莱昂内尔和我放松得多的人,但是他们也不知道该说什么。整个情形就是这样的特别。

47. 突然几个人被领了进来。有罗伯特·弗洛斯特和史密斯夫人、鲍比·肯尼迪和他的妻子埃塞尔。然后总统夫人说笑着进来了。她左手拿着一杯香槟,说道,“嗨,你好!”莱昂内尔坐在一把沙发上,我正坐在他旁边的一把天鹅绒椅子上。总统夫人完全忽略了肯尼迪一家人,穿过房间径直朝莱昂内尔走来。在她的生活中他们不是重心,她不介意谁会知道。当然她进来时男士都起立,罗丝·斯蒂伦和我也站了起来,在沙发后面有一把木制椅子,她将它拉了出来,这是一把木制摇椅,她说,“每次林登·约翰逊坐在这把椅子上时,都会把它弄坏。到目前为止,他已经损坏 3 次了。看我的,我要坐上去,你看着我坐它就不会坏,他不知道该怎么坐。”她已经把椅子正好放在莱昂内尔旁边,现在她坐在椅子上,挨着他。

48. “现在,”当莱昂内尔再次坐下,她说道,“在瓦萨他们谈论我什么了?”

49. 莱昂内尔大笑着回答,“他们说你是一个严肃的学生、专心致志的学生,而且非常腼腆。”

50. 杰姬重复着,“腼腆,是的,我很腼腆。”

51. 莱昂内尔说,“我也很腼腆。”她看着他,两人都爆发一阵大笑。她知道他在开她的玩笑,但她喜欢。之后我听见她说,“你知道今晚谁在这儿吗?”他们开始交谈,他们的谈话在晚会接下来的时间里一直继续着。杰姬严格遵循着基本的礼貌,她小心地引导她与莱昂内尔的谈话带上我,直到一位男士特地过来与我交谈。一旦我有了自己的谈话对象,她便完全投入到与莱昂内尔的谈话,再也没有对其他任何人感兴趣。

52. 在杰姬进来不久,总统也来了,携同国防部副部长及国内事务助理秘书代表。我们一共十四五个人。我可以体会到在椭圆大厅举办这样的聚会实际上是杰姬的私人宴会,虽然包括总统的家人和一些政府官员。她履行了女主人的职责,经历了整个正式场合,现在是轮到她娱乐的时候了。事实上,由于某种原因,我感觉这种楼上小型聚会已经成为大型正式晚宴之后的常规,是总统夫人在公共场合尽职尽责表现的报酬。

53. 我感觉肯尼迪一家必须接受杰姬的条件,因为他们意识到,她操办着一切,例如,我们现在的晚宴、白宫的布置以及运行,公众对她的反响就更不用说了,这就是她的魅力。她是他们莫大的财富,他们十分聪明,不会意识不到这一点。

54. 当杰姬最初走进房间时,她指着一把木制摇椅说,“这儿每个房间都有一把。它们很碍眼,不是吗?”她指的是那把总统的女医生因他的背痛而为他订做的摇椅。杰姬称它为总统健康摇椅,她说,“你知道从中能挣多少钱吗?你知道有几千把这样的椅子被出售吗?”

55. 总统走近莱昂内尔,将椅子放得如此近,以至于他们真的是促膝交谈。

56. “嗯,在瓦萨他们说她什么了?”他问莱昂内尔。

57. 莱昂内尔一点也不畏惧地轻声回答,“他们说她是一个严肃、用功的好学生,还很腼腆。”杰姬就坐在那儿,望着莱昂内尔的脸。

58. “腼腆,嗯,”总统说。没有人大笑,他们都在轻声地谈话。我感觉总统根本没在考虑杰姬或她在瓦萨是否腼腆。他的确在严厉地望着莱昂内尔。开总统夫人的玩笑,他是在对总统无礼吗?事实上,他是那样自信,但如果是这样,为什么呢?他所说的话是他听过的关于杰姬的真实说法吗?通过这些问题的答案,总统将知道如何对待莱昂内尔。

59. 然后他从摇椅中站起来,他已经同特里林一家交谈过了;现在他又转向了别人。他加入了弗洛斯特一伙人的谈话,周围坐着他的家人,然后,当然他又走向角落的鲍比和国内事务助理。很明显他们在谈论自己的工作。对于总统来说,聚会已经结束了。然而对于杰姬来说,她还在享受着这次聚会。

60. 无论如何我们知道聚会结束了。你可以看出总统夫人还想继续。她和莱昂内尔相处得如此融洽——莱昂内尔确实喜欢她,她也真的欣赏他。现在是12点半了。

61. 总统站在那儿,我们全都起立准备离开。我们都走向总统同他握手,就像对任何一位普通的主人一样,我对他说这是一次多么好的宴会以及感谢的话。我已经向总统夫人道过晚安,并告诉她这真是一次魅力无限的晚宴。我听见莱昂内尔对她说,“我觉得今晚你值得嘉奖,每个人都如此开心。”她说,“你想想,当杰克是参议员而艾森豪威尔任总统时,我们曾来过白宫。那简直无法忍受。玛米坐在一把椅子上,艾克坐在另一把椅子上。玛米的右边是一位男贵宾,艾克的右边是位女贵宾,每个人都站着,没有饮品可以喝。在他任职期间,从来不提供饮品,那时我们下定决心,当我们入住白宫时,不会让任何人觉得那样烦闷。我们确实尽力来举办一次出色的晚宴。”

62. 我们在门口互道晚安。当我们告诉总统这是一次多么精彩的晚宴时,他回答说因为我们有宴会才会如此美好。他说这话时很热情,但事实上他正望着门外。杰姬整场宴会都在现场,至少楼上聚会时

在场,她很想宴会能继续。但总统厌倦了,想要去工作或休息了。

63. 我不晓得我们是怎样到达火车站的——我料想有一辆车等着我们。我们一路上摇摇晃晃。莱昂内尔和我都如此眩晕。事实上,我们是跳着晃着进了车站的——我记得。我高举左胳膊,他高举右胳膊,他握着我的手,我的貂皮披肩从我们交叉的手指上滑落。在联邦车站,我们一路跳着小步舞曲,上了火车,进了我们的车厢。



## 二、同步测试

1. About the coming dinner, Mr. and Mrs. Trilling \_\_\_\_\_  
A. expected to be invited there  
B. did not like to go there  
C. thought it worthless  
D. regarded it unnecessary
2. What kind of clothes should the ladies wear for the dinner?  
A. The simplest possible short evening dress.  
B. Black matte jersey dress with long tight sleeves.  
C. Long gowns with long white gloves.  
D. Casual wear.
3. "Protocol" in Para 9 means \_\_\_\_\_  
A. law                      B. official etiquette                      C. invitation                      D. contract
4. The pre-dinner reception was held in \_\_\_\_\_.  
A. the East Room                      B. the State Dining Room  
C. the Blue Room                      D. the Oval Room
5. The receiving line was headed by \_\_\_\_\_.  
A. Mrs. George Marshall                      B. Mrs. Ernest Hemingway  
C. Sinclair Lewis                      D. Robert Frost
6. When Lionel and the author were led to the Oval Room, which of the following feeling is NOT true?  
A. They felt they were in a daydream.  
B. They looked pleasant and bewildered.  
C. They were so relaxed that they made themselves at home.  
D. They could not believe it was true.
7. What does "impertinent" mean?  
A. Patient.                      B. Impolite.                      C. Respectful.                      D. Delighted.
8. What does the sentence "We did dance into the train station" mean?  
A. They were good at dancing.  
B. They liked to show their skillful dance.  
C. They were drunken.  
D. They were practicing dancing.

Answer:



# Lesson Four

## The Pharmageddon Riddle: Did Monsanto just want more profits, or did it want to save the world?



### 一、课文译文

#### 药业大决战之迷：蒙桑托欲获更多利润，还是拯救地球？

迈克尔·斯佩克特

1. 每年，环境小组——绿色和平组织——都要召开一次会议，努力使公司的管理人员和投资者以及250万员工同样了解该组织的优先性。作为世界上最坚定于环境保护的组织之一，这是一次提醒怀疑派们该组织的目标，并且让人们知道为了实现这些目标应该做些什么的极好机会。最新的一件大事，就是组织者使两大主要对手浮出水面，讨论关于我们这个时代最令人不安的话题——转基因食品的生产和使用。

2. 核动力、地球变暖，甚至是克隆人的可能性，这些争议在对科学、社会价值以及商业冲突的竞技场上不可能再占据更大的空间了。洛德·彼得·梅尔切特是一位有机农作物种植者，也是前劳动部长，他领导绿色和平组织阻止生物技术在农业中的应用。洛德应邀与罗伯特·B·夏皮罗进行辩论。夏皮罗是蒙桑托国际企业集团的董事长兼首席执行官，也是这项技术的主要推行者。在这个时候进行这样一个对话简直就是一个完美的时刻：在现代农业历史上，转基因食品已经成为被最广泛采纳的产品。10年前，世界上没有任何转基因农作物可以通过商业手段获得；直到1995年，400万英亩用于耕种；到1999年，产量已增加到1亿。在美国，一半的大豆以及1/3的玉米是生物技术产品。

3. 夏皮罗相信改良大豆、甜菜和棉花的种子以使其具有抗除草剂性。他和许多人士认为这是农业、食品以及人类健康方面的革命的最基本开始。“现在存在着一个创造一门真正的史无前例的营养科学的良机，”他说，正是这种新科学成为现存这种良机的主要原因。但是，蒙桑托看到的是无限希望，而绿色和平组织看到的是利益动机和冒险。在欧洲，尤其是在英国，反对农业生物技术几乎已经成为许多人的追求——这曾被查尔斯王子积极认可。“我相信这种转基因将人类带到了只属于上帝的王国。”就他来说，洛德·梅尔切特本周将在离他家乡不远的诺福克出庭，扫灭这批由实验支配的转基因玉米。

4. 就在会议召开前几天，夏皮罗宣称他不能出席。相反，他的形象出现在美国电视屏幕上。夏皮罗严厉、善辩，却被打败了。经过一年多的反抗，欧洲将蒙桑托驱逐出了市场。更彻底的是巴西。蒙桑托两个最大的竞争对手分别是瑞士制药巨头诺瓦蒂斯和英国药商阿斯特泽那克。他们即将把他们的农业部门合并为一家企业并出卖，基本上放弃参与农作物生物技术。日本公司业已决定停止使用转基因产品。墨西哥最大的玉米粉圆饼制造商已经不再依赖于转基因玉米。迫于绿色和平组织的压力，诺瓦蒂斯在它的格伯牌婴儿食品中心已经不再使用转基因黄豆和玉米。海因茨宣称它也将这样做。

5. 到去年秋天,这种紧张状态已经由欧洲蔓延到美国。在康奈尔,一位研究者在一篇高度公开性的报道中指出,黑脉金斑蝶的卵可能不会幸免于转基因玉米的花粉。美国农民开始担心欧洲港口会将他们装满谷物的油轮打发回来。11月,食品药物委员会首次开始着手实施关于转基因食品的使用及完全性的一系列听证会。

6. 然而,夏皮罗仍然绝对相信这种生物技术。他告诉绿色和平组织的成员们,如果没有生物技术,农民将永远满足不了日益增长的世界人口对食品的需求。而洛德·梅尔切特表示绿色和平组织已做好准备与蒙桑托共同奋斗,只要蒙桑托放弃使用农业生物技术并且接受将有机农业作为解决世界粮食需求的主要办法。这有点像只要通用汽车制造者放弃内燃机的使用而推广自行车,就会得到道义上的支持一样。

7. 蒙桑托公司,1901成立于年圣·路易斯,是世界上最成功的化学公司之一,开始时打算生产糖精、阿斯匹林、丙烯酸树脂及化肥。1995年当罗伯特·夏皮罗接手公司时,公司已拥有遍布各个国家的两万多名员工。夏皮罗很快做出决定打算重新开始。三年之内,公司将削弱化学经营而致力于生物技术,创造更加清洁的世界。它正式宣称的新目标就是使人们“生活得更长久、更健康,以他们和他们的国家能支付得起且不产生环境退化为前提”。

8. 25年以来,蒙桑托的除草剂 Roundup 一直是最畅销的产品之一。1996年,公司引进了 Roundup Ready 种子,它具有抗除草剂性,在销售市场独占鳌头。在夏皮罗的指导下,蒙桑托公司与一些强大的竞争对手在种子生产上达成一致;其他情况下,它只是买断公司。蒙桑托也与一些公司建立合作关系,例如强大的谷物公司卡吉尔以及专攻基因组和基因排序技术的盛世制药厂。直到去年,该公司大赚了80亿美元后,蒙桑托决定先于世界上任何一个组织去生产转基因农作物。这似乎是一次明智的投资。蒙桑托不但引领新基因工程食品潮流,而且还使其股票价格翻番儿。华尔街更多的分析者们预测股票将继续攀升。

9. 夏皮罗希望不仅仅要卖种子给农民。当他接手公司时,他已经审查了公司的四股力量——农业、制药业、食品业及化学。他决定要放弃化学而将其他三股合而为一。他比他的竞争者更清楚地知道,普通食品能降低胆固醇;水果能被变成挽救生命的疫苗;基因能够改善千百万人的主要日常生活资料。夏皮罗是一位律师,也曾是城市事务教授,成了转基因界不太可能的约翰尼·阿普尔西德。他认为世界不应是单纯的食品和药物世界,而是可以代替药物的食品世界。“这是人类历史上一个重要的时刻,”在芝加哥蒙桑托办公室,我们第一次与夏皮罗会面,他告诉我,“人们想要生活得更好,就得利用他们拥有的工具来完成。而生物学就是我们最好的工具。”

10. 在有些方面,转变并非那样深刻。几个世纪以来,农民一直在储存种子并世代培育它们以便培育出更好的植物。我们吃的所有植物(玉米、小麦、土豆、大米)以及许多我们不吃的(兰花、玫瑰、圣诞树)都在被努力改进,以便使它们持续时间更长,开花更晚,看起来更好,尝起来更甜,或在贫瘠的土地上生长得更强壮。

11. 但是,直到1953年,詹姆斯·沃森和弗朗西斯·克里克发现了DNA分子结构,了解到细胞需要蛋白质来生存,现代农业、现代医药、信息社会本身才真正开始。今天,世界上有一半的实验室里的科学家们把时间花在从一个细胞上切下一点DNA再接到其他细胞上。自然也许是随意的,但转基因使植物繁殖变成特定的。

12. 在医学上这种基因处理很早就被接受了,主要是因为似乎冒险存在的同时受益更显而易见。例如,1983年生产的胰岛素就是以人造基因为根据的。人造基因即人体内基因的复制品。然而对于许多人来说,对事物供给的分子基础的处理就像是克隆羊的等同物。这超越了一些不可接受的界限。将土豆的不同品种混合是一回事,但现在研究者们已将基因发展到另一个程度。他们将一只可以在冰冷的大西洋中自由自在游泳的鱼的特殊基因移植到不能做到这点的鱼的细胞中。甚至在实验中,还将它移

植到草莓中,以便帮助它抗霜冻。对一些人来说,这偏离科学太远了。

13. 转基因农业的支持者们喜欢强调科技对饥饿和疾病的潜在力量,但是欧洲人并不饥饿。他们最先得到的就是他们不想要的除草剂以及不需要的保鲜期很长的西红柿。在1998年,蒙桑托尽力将产品引进大陆,科学却没有提供多大帮助。此时大陆正在从疯牛病的冲击中慢慢恢复,到处都反对新食品,反对科学本身。

14. 对于那些对手来说,蒙桑托已经成为邪恶的发源地——一个设法将自然创造成怪异的“转基因食品”的地方。“整个世界认为存在转基因食品,所以我们别无选择地去使用,这种想法实在太可怕了。”洛德·梅尔切特对我说,“这是错误的想法。这里有一个基本的问题:发展真的就是在向前推进吗?我们说不是。我们要说是时候去阻止那种认为发现只会推动进步的想法了。反对自然的战争必须停止。我们要去阻止它。”

15. 从80年代早期转基因植物开始活跃。从一开始就有反对者,但直到1998年3月3日,反对活动达到高潮。在这一天,一项专利被颁发给美国农业部和三角松林公司。这个公司位于密西西比,是美国最大的棉花种子生产商。专利的标题是“控制植物基因表现”。这个题目太不具有特征而没能吸引太多的注意。但是蒙桑托注意到了。国际农村振兴基金会也注意到了。这是一个加拿大的环境组织机构,监管基因种类消失。这项专利充分说明了农业生物技术能利用和改善生活的基本要素。它也指出了这样的危险,并使由这种强大的新工具联想到的深刻情感因素具体化。

16. 这项专利指的是一系列分子“开关”,它们能控制基因繁殖的精髓。最后一步尤其特别:植物被迫生产出一种有毒的蛋白质,这种蛋白质在植物完全成熟后将使其种子绝育。在大众关系影响下,国际农村振兴基金会根据阿诺德·施瓦辛格扮演的机器人杀手,将这种新基因命名为终结者,种子绝育技术迅速有力地证明了转基因农作物是怎样破坏自然的。更糟糕的是,这些种子威胁到发展中国家10亿多穷苦农民,对他们来说,储存能生产的种子是最重要的。

17. 相比之下,欧美的商业农民依赖于杂交种子。它的生命力在每一代繁殖后减弱,因此为了使农作物长得尽可能好,农民们必须每年购买新种子。对于像蒙桑托这样的公司,利益显而易见。年末时停止供应种子就限制了它的使用,也使得公司像保护知识产权一样保护它。正像电脑软件中难处理的注册密码使他人不能变换微软文字信息或莲花群件一样,这就意味着杂交种子只能被使用一次。

18. 另外,此技术允许生产者赋予种子很多特性。例如,玉米可以具有抗干旱、防霜冻或杀虫的性能。受农作物、季节及地理环境的影响,此技术可帮助种子免于日晒,或吸收光线。农民能够决定他想要花多少钱来购买种子,就像旅游者可以决定花多少钱来买飞机票一样。

19. 这样处理基因基本上将自然的東西变成了智能的东西,夏皮罗认为当今世界就应该这样。一天,在他的办公室里,他告诉我说,“目前我们生活的历史模式、工业革命模式诉说了我们的生活质量与我们所拥有的东西密切相关。但事实证明信息没占多大空间却能创造巨大的价值。”他边说边兴奋地挥着胳膊。“生物技术是信息技术的一个分支。它是一种将信息加密译成核酸的方式而不是加密译成充电极的方式。它创造价值的同时,不会产生更高的原料。我将一个基因,即信息,放入一粒棉花种子里,就不必给农作物喷洒其他东西来控制昆虫了。这个策略使我觉得农业就应如此,正如后工业社会就该那样一样。”

20. 1997年,在Roundup Ready牌种子开始被广泛种植不久,加拿大的一位农民报告说一些种子与田边的其他野草异花传粉。DNA测试证明他是对的。转基因作物与田间其他作物杂交的可能性引起了很多关于品种间移动DNA的危险性的讨论。大多数品种如人类和莴苣的基本基因结构相似点远远多于不同点。然而,当你将DNA从一个品种移到另一个时,新的组合总是有可能表现得不可预料。

21. 丽贝卡·J·戈德伯格是环境保护方面的一位资深科学家。他对我说,“我并不是想告诉你我们无法解决这个问题。但是,我们确实不知道问题是什么。有了这么多的基因和这么多的产品,我们正在

迅速向前推进。由于我们没有正确的信息,我确实担心如何能准确地平衡这种风险。”

22. 转基因种子大量涌入市场——去年销售额大约 20 亿美元——许多生物学家担心转基因农作物还没有被充分了解。玉米、西红柿、大豆及南瓜的多个品种被批准可以无限使用。一些人估计现在有 3 万多种产品来源于转基因农作物。这些蘸酱油吃寿司、面包、意大利面食、冰淇淋、糖果及加工肉的人几乎都是在消费转基因食品。这些产品进入我们生活的速度使令多人关心。抗病毒玉米的所有细胞都含有病毒。但这些病毒能把遗传物质引入到主细胞中,这在理论上就意味着农作物能创造新病毒而不是抵抗它们。

23. 一些科学家提出种子遗传工程忽略了生物进化的基本事实:基因的行为依赖于它所存在的物种。最鲜明的一个例子就是 1995 年先锋高育种子公司的一项研究。科学家们将巴西坚果的基因移植到大豆里,以使用来喂养动物的大豆更有营养。这个计划奏效了,但当 DNA 的几个分子被改变后,食物链会发生不可预料的变化。许多人对巴西坚果过敏。如果这些人中有一个吃了用巴西坚果蛋白质的大豆做的蛋糕,那后果将不堪设想。

24. 在环境运动中,许多人提出“预防原则”应被积极运用到转基因食品上,还指出相对于可能的利益,应给予潜在的危險更多的重视。不管这危險有多么遥远,也不管利益有多么丰厚。“这是唯一安全的方法。”近来,在伦敦绿色和平组织总部,洛德·梅尔切特告诉我,“因为你经营的是投机中的投机。希望源于突发奇想。他们谈论着这些伟大的发现。但我们真正拥有的是什么呢?”以这种方式来解释时,预防原则很难回答这个问题,因为它禁止调查,除非能事先预知结果。

25. 因为科学与政治紧密相连,所以很难通过事实进行理智的选择。6 月份,即绿色和平组织会议召开的前几个月,作为一位农业生态学家和洛克菲勒基金会的带头人,戈登·康韦公开迫使蒙桑托放弃转基因食品。康韦是农业生物技术的坚定拥护者,但他已认识到基因带来了太多危險的社会负担。

26. 夏皮罗认为一个统一的“生命科学”公司依赖生物技术来生产食品和药物,他这种想法开始淡出。农业和制药业的联合已成为常规。在一年多的投机经营后,公司开始支离破碎。经过竞争者们的多次合并讨论,蒙桑托宣告它将加入厄普约翰制药公司。1999 年,公司财产不到 250 亿美元。据许多分析家说,这几乎和公司于 1985 年收购的制药子公司——瑟尔的财产差不多。

27. 反对蒙桑托的多个组织之一称这次合并为蒙桑托的药业大决战。“争议的原因与生物技术毫无关系,”去年秋天夏皮罗对我说,“这是权力的问题。也是说如果你想改变人民的生活或引进新技术,你必须通过我们的同意。如果我们不赞成,我们就将打倒你。”

28. 如果转基因农作物想要实现它们的诺言,那就不得不在第三世界。欧洲人不屑一顾的发展在那儿可是意义重大。推迟西红柿成熟期便是一个很好的例子。对于那些产品极大丰富、冷藏便宜及路途平坦的国家来说,取得控制水果成熟的基因使其放慢成熟速度不算什么大事。但在非洲和亚洲,多达 40% 的蔬菜烂在田地里或被虫疫破坏。

29. 供给世界需要的新方案是双方达成统一的唯一议题。在过去的 40 年中,农业上的新方法,尤其是化学肥料和除草剂的使用,使得世界食物产量翻了一番儿多。尽管人口在大量增加,饥饿人口数量已急剧减少。但这成功的获得是以可耕地的大量腐蚀和消失为代价的。另外,迅速的城市化给水资源带来了很大压力。自从 80 年代起,亚非大部分地区的产量增长值就呈下降趋势。然而,据国际食品政策研究协会于去年 10 月发布的预测说,到 2020 年世界对大米、小麦及玉米的需求将增长 40 个百分点。

30. 如果转基因食品的政治策略不是如此令人苦闷,科学的前景似乎不会更有希望。例如,康奈尔的博伊斯·汤普森植物研究协会的查尔斯·阿恩岑和他的同事们迫不及待地研制可以组合到香蕉细胞中的乙肝疫苗和腹泻疫苗。尤其是在那些冷藏设备、无菌针头和保健品都极度短缺的地方收益是巨大的。香蕉可以种在需要的国家。它们价格便宜,容易分发,老少皆宜。阿恩岑告诉我仅仅 4 英亩的一小块地就能生产出足够使一个中型非洲国家预防乙肝的香蕉来。

31. 近来最重要的发展涉及世界上最重要的农作物:水稻。至少 1/3 的世界人口依赖于大米,但大米缺少维他命。根据联合国儿童基金会的资料,1 亿多儿童缺少维他命 A。结果上百万儿童失明,每年至少 200 万儿童死于相关传染病。但一月份时,一组科学家报道说他们已将三种基因引进到水稻中,这些基因能完成生产  $\beta$ -胡萝卜素所需的基因途径,而  $\beta$ -胡萝卜素可以被分解成维他命 A。因为大米的颜色和它所取得的成就,它被称之为黄金大米。阿恩森告诉我,“当你吃含维他命 A 的米饭时,基因工程的这项成就比历史上任何一种药物都更能减少人类的痛苦和疾病。”

32. 过去 50 年中,科学家和人文学家之间的差异逐渐减少,但若假装它完全消失,那是很愚蠢的。当我告诉洛德、梅尔切特说我确实想为转基因科学写作时,他十分惊奇。“如果你写一些东西,那不应该是关于科学的,”他说,“你没有切中要点。人们做事是源于各种各样理智的原因而不是科学或技术的原因。”

33. 我理解他的恐惧。在 20 世纪 20 年代引进冷冻食品时,人们担心在冰箱里将食品保存几周甚至更长时间的后果而尽力禁止它。转基因产品同样是新生事物,相似的恐惧是可以理解的。绿色和平组织和许多其他对手喜欢将它与核能做比较。当谈及希望与潜在危险时,制药厂本身提供了一个更好的类比:上个世纪抗生素和疫苗的发展使大多数国家人口寿命增加了一倍。仅盘尼西林(青霉素)就挽救了上百万条性命。但每项技术都是既有冒险又有收益的,食品和药物也是。每天都有人因吃花生和贝类而死亡的。在美国每年仍有一些人死于盘尼西林过敏,阿斯匹林也引起了大范围的严重的疾病,甚至很多死亡。

34. 3 月末,阴云密布的一天,蒙桑托的股东们聚集在伊利诺斯州的斯哥其市,就与厄普约翰制药公司的合并进行投票。投票结束了蒙桑托作为一个独立公司的时代,并获得了一致同意。蒙桑托的名字现在仅仅附属于最后可能会被出售的公司的农业部门,以便新公司能集中精力于制药业。夏皮罗放弃了他在新公司行政主管的头衔,留任未来 18 个月的非行政主席,其工作主要是扫除与董事会合并的障碍。当处理完这些琐事时,夏皮罗在蒙桑托的事业也将结束。

35. “你知道,鲍勃·夏皮罗很可能是我们美国农业界最大的预言家,”查尔斯·阿恩岑说,“但在众人面前并非易事。我在德克萨斯度过了人生的大部分时光,那儿有一个词用来描述这样孤立无援的家伙,他们称之为脊梁骑士。鲍勃·夏皮罗骑在山脊上已经相当长时间了。有时这些人去他们要去的地方,但通常都没有。他们经常被踢出局。”

36. 在我们最后谈话之后,我意识到,作为曼哈顿后期西部的本地人,惯于城市生活的夏皮罗说不定都不知该用铁锹的哪一头来挖地。我猜想,对于他来说,种子和化学这个伟大行业仅仅是想象出的概念。所以我发给他一封信,问了这样一个问题,作为美国最大的种子公司领导,他是否在花园里栽种过。这是晚冬的一个星期日,但他立刻就回复我了。

37. “太奇怪了,当查收我的电子邮件时,我就被一大堆价格表所包围,它们来自白花农场、路边花园、牧羊人种子和约翰尼精选种子。”他说,“我一收发完电子邮件,就上网进行春天的预定。我父亲是一个热心的园艺师,我也是。我们在密歇根有一块地,在那儿,我大多种些多年生开花植物,也有蔬菜和坚果。我喜欢堆肥——这对我来说似乎很神奇。这也是生活中重要的隐喻的丰富来源。”



## 二、同步测试

- Green peace would join arms with Monsanto if only \_\_\_\_\_.  
A. the corporation would limit the use of agricultural biotechnology  
B. the corporation would adopt organic farming

C. it would abandon the internal-combustion engine

D. it would support General Motors

2. The Monsanto Company was founded \_\_\_\_\_.

A. in St. Louis

B. in Chicago

C. in Los Angeles

D. in Michigan

3. When Shapiro took over the company, there were four main strands of its business EXCEPT \_\_\_\_\_.

A. agriculture

B. food

C. chemicals

D. clothing

4. Which of the following is NOT Shapiro's opinion?

A. Foods can take the place of drugs.

B. Biology is the best tool for the people to live better.

C. Monsanto should commit itself to biotechnology and a cleaner world.

D. Monsanto has become a cauldron of evil.

5. "Franken foods" refers to \_\_\_\_\_.

A. junk foods

B. nourishing foods

C. genetically modified foods

D. tasty foods

6. About the patent issued on March 3, 1998, which one is NOT correct?

A. Its title was "Control of Plant Gene Expression".

B. It drew much attention.

C. It proved that agricultural biotechnology could harness and change the basic elements of life.

D. It was issued to the United States Department of Agriculture and to Delta & Pine Land Company.

7. Who publicly urged Monsanto to abandon the gene a few months before the Greenpeace conference?

A. Gordon Conway.

B. Lord Melchett.

C. Charles Arntzen.

D. Rebecca J. Goldberg.

8. The author adopts the development of antibiotics and vaccines to indicate that \_\_\_\_\_.

A. every technology has risks and benefits

B. people refuse to accept the new productions

C. new productions contribute a lot to life

D. people suffer from these productions a lot

9. "Visionary" means \_\_\_\_\_.

A. biologist

B. prophet

C. businessman

D. scientist

10. This article is \_\_\_\_\_.

A. a feature article

B. a hard news story

C. a description

D. an exposition

Answers: